



## LESSON A

### Learning to read Bulgarian

Bulgarian is written in the Cyrillic alphabet, the same alphabet in which Russian is written. The correspondence between letters and sounds in Bulgarian is very close to that of Russian, but not identical. Once students who know Russian have adjusted to the minor differences, they will find Bulgarian very easy to read.

Students who are encountering the Cyrillic alphabet for the first time should not despair -- it is not as hard as it looks. Indeed, it will be considerably easier to learn to read Bulgarian than it was to learn to read English. One of the reasons for this is that, with very few exceptions, every Bulgarian letter always stands for the same sound. Furthermore, every sound is always rendered by the same Bulgarian letter. Once the correspondence between letter and sound is learned, therefore, one is able to read (and to write) Bulgarian. The few exceptions to the "one letter = one sound" rule will be detailed in Lesson C.

The letters of the Bulgarian alphabet are presented below in four different groups. The full Bulgarian alphabet is given at the end of Lesson A.

#### Letter and sound found in English, letter-sound correspondence as in English

<i>Letter</i>	<i>sound</i>	<i>as in</i>
a	a	father
e	e	bet
к	k	skin, score
м	m	mall, mix
т	t	stiff

Note that -т- and -к- are pronounced *without* the puff of breath that normally accompanies them in English. Pronounce "kin" holding your hand in front of your mouth; now pronounce "skin". You will note that the "k" in "skin" lacks the puff of breath that is present when you say "kin". All instances of -к- (and of -т-) in Bulgarian should be pronounced in this second way, without the puff of breath.

**Letter and sound found in English,  
letter-sound correspondence not as in English**

<i>Letter</i>	<i>sound</i>	<i>as in</i>
В	v	video, evidence
Н	n	noise, instance
О	o	or
Р	r	[trilled -r-] *
С	s	sister, center
У	u	boot
Х	ch	[velar -ch-] **

\* found in many European languages  
\*\* as in Scottish *loch* or German *Bach*

The sounds represented by -p- and -x- exist in English only as an imitation of the native pronunciation of certain European speakers. These sounds are quite common, however, especially in certain intellectual environments.

The sounds represented by -o- and -y- are very close to those of English -o- and -u-. The difference is that the Bulgarian vowel sounds are pronounced without the offglide (the slight "w" sound at the end) that accompanies them in English. Pronounce "boat" and "boot" very slowly and listen for the point at which each vowel glides down into a hint of "w". To pronounce the Bulgarian sound correctly, stop *before* the English -o- or -oo- sound moves to the "w" stage.

**Sound found in English,  
letter not found in English**

<i>Letter</i>	<i>sound</i>	<i>as in</i>
б	b	boy, abide
г	g	girl, again
д	d	doll, add
ж	zh	pleasure
з	z	zebra, to use
и	ee	feet
й	y	yard, bayou
л	l	less, alive
п	p	spin
ф	f	feature, tough
ц	ts	cats, tsetse
ч	ch	church
ш	sh	shift, sugar
щ	sht	ashtray
ъ	[a] *	sofa

\* English unstressed [a]

Bulgarian -п- is pronounced like English -p- in "spin" (that is, without the puff of breath that accompanies the English -p- in "pin"; see the note above for -т- and -к-). Bulgarian -и- is pronounced without the final glide into "y" (see the note above for -о- and -у-).

The other sound-letter correspondences may seem strange, but will be acquired with practice. Pronounce the English words given above and listen for the sound. Take care to differentiate between the sounds -п- and -с-, and between -и- and -й-. Students who know Russian should take additional care to note that -щ- signifies both the sounds -sh- and -t- together, and that -ъ- represents a fully stressable vowel.

### Neither sound nor letter found in English

The letters in the final group function to distinguish hard from soft consonants. To learn the hard/soft distinction, compare the pronunciation of the middle consonant in the following pairs of English words:

<i>hard</i>	<i>soft</i>
canon	canyon
willow	William

Most consonants in Bulgarian are hard. Soft consonants are possible only before the vowels -о-, -у-, -а- and -ъ-, and are signaled by *vowel* letters, as follows:

<i>Letter</i>	<i>meaning</i>
ь	found only in the sequence -ьо-, signifies that the preceding consonant is soft
ю	signifies sequence of soft consonant + -у-
я	signifies sequence of soft consonant + -а-, or soft consonant + -ъ

Here are examples of soft consonants in Bulgarian, and of their expression in writing:

<i>hard</i>	<i>meaning</i>	<i>soft</i>	<i>meaning</i>	<i>contrast</i>
синове́	sons	си́ньо	blue	[hard vs. soft -н-]
бала́да	ballad	ба́ла	white	[hard vs. soft -б-]
лу́да	crazy	любо́в	love	[hard vs. soft -л-]

The letter -я- is also written for the sounds [-а-] and [-ъ-] when they occur after the letter -и-. Both the sequences и + а and и + ъ are written -ия. When the

letters -ю- and -я- occur in initial position or after a vowel, they represent a complex of sounds, as follows:

letter	meaning	written example	meaning	pronounced as
ю	й + у	уко́тен	comfortable	[уйу́тен]
я	й + а	я́бълка	apple	[йя́бълка]

Remember that the letters -ю- and -я- always signify a vowel sound *plus* something else: either the softening of a preceding consonant, or the presence of a preceding “y” glide.

### The Bulgarian alphabet

The names of the Cyrillic vowel letters are as they are pronounced, while the names of the consonant letters are pronounced with a following -ъ ( а, бъ, вь, гъ, дъ, etc.). The name of the letter -й- is и кратко, the name of the letter -ъ- is ер голям, and the name of the letter -ь- is ер малък.

Students learning Cyrillic for the first time must devote some attention to learning the alphabet sequence, as one cannot use a dictionary effectively without knowing alphabetical order. The order of letters in the Bulgarian alphabet is as in English in certain sequences, but quite different in others. For instance:

#### Similar to English

a-b	d-e	i-j-k-l-m-n-o-p	r-s-t-u
а-б	д-е	и-й-к-л-м-н-о-п	р-с-т-у

#### Different from English

b-d-e-f-g-h-i	f .. u-v-w-x	(end of alphabet)
б-в-г-д-ж-з-и	у-ф-х	ц-ч-ш-щ-ъ-ь-ю-я

The full Bulgarian alphabet is given on the following pages. Both upper and lower case letters are given, alongside with the Latin letters which are usually used when Bulgarian words are transliterated (rendered in the Latin alphabet).

Two different transliteration possibilities are given, the so-called “academic” transliteration, and the several transliterations used in more popular writings.

In this book, Bulgarian is transliterated as little as possible. In the few cases where it is necessary, a mixed system has been used: the “academic” version of the last four letters and the “popular” version of the others.

## THE BULGARIAN ALPHABET

CYRILLIC		TRANSLITERATED	
<i>upper case</i>	<i>lower case</i>	<i>academic</i>	<i>popular</i>
А	а	a	a
Б	б	b	b
В	в	v	v
Г	г	g	g
Д	д	d	d
Е	е	e	e
Ж	ж	ž	zh
З	з	z	z
И	и	i	i
Й	й	j	i
К	к	k	k
Л	л	l	l
М	м	m	m
Н	н	n	n
О	о	o	o
П	п	p	p
Р	р	r	r
С	с	s	s (ss)
Т	т	t	t
У	у	u	u (ou)
Ф	ф	f	f
Х	х	x	h (kh)
Ц	ц	c	ts
Ч	ч	č	ch
Ш	ш	š	sh
Щ	щ	št	sht
Ъ	ъ	ǎ	u
	ь	,	
Ю	ю	ju	iu (yu)
Я	я	ja	ia (ya)

## **LESSON B**

### **Learning to write Bulgarian**

It is best to learn to write Cyrillic by practicing on lined paper. Write the letters double height at the beginning, so as to learn which ones extend above (or below) the line and which ones remain the same height. The handwritten words on the following pages illustrate the formation of capital and lower case letters at the beginning of a word, and of lower case letters in the middle of a word. The student should be able to guess the meanings of most of these words.

It is advisable to learn to write Bulgarian letters correctly at the outset. It is much harder to unlearn mistakes once they have become set into habit.

#### **Height of the letters**

All capital letters extend to the full height. Of the lower case letters, only б, в and ф are written as high as capital letters (in the scheme as given below, only they extend above the line). All others are written at the same height (the height of the space between the two middle lines). Pay particular attention to this in the case of к and л: they do not reach the same height as their English counterparts.

#### **Depth of the letters**

The letters д, р, у, ц and щ extend below the line. This will seem natural for д and у, but it must be learned especially for the others. For ц and щ, the portion that extends below the line is the loop at the lower right corner.

#### **Diacritics and other distinguishing marks**

The breve mark *must* be written over the letter ѝ, in order to distinguish it from the letter и. Indeed, there are two words which consist only of the letter и. The one which means "her" is written with a grave accent mark (ї) in order to distinguish it from the one which means "and" (и).

The letters л, м and я are written with a small hook at the beginning, which *must* be there in order to distinguish them from other letters.

### Examples of Bulgarian handwriting

А, а	Америка	аспирин	пират
<i>Аа</i>	<i>Америка</i>	<i>аспирин</i>	<i>пират</i>
Б, б	България	бар	орбита
<i>Бб</i>	<i>България</i>	<i>бар</i>	<i>орбита</i>
В, в	Виетнам	виза	овал
<i>Вв</i>	<i>Виетнам</i>	<i>виза</i>	<i>овал</i>
Г, г	Гренландия	гангстер	диалог
<i>Гг</i>	<i>Гренландия</i>	<i>гангстер</i>	<i>диалог</i>
Д, д	Дания	дилър	шоколад
<i>Дд</i>	<i>Дания</i>	<i>дилър</i>	<i>шоколад</i>
Е, е	Европа	екватор	диета
<i>Ее</i>	<i>Европа</i>	<i>екватор</i>	<i>диета</i>
Ж, ж	Дон Жуан	жокей	имидж
<i>Жж</i>	<i>Дон Жуан</i>	<i>жокей</i>	<i>имидж</i>



Lesson B

З, з      Нова Зеландия      зона      дизайн

*Зз      Нова Зеландия      зона      дизайн*

И, и      Италия      иллюстрация      стил

*Ии      Италия      иллюстрация      стил*

Й, й      Йордания      йерархия      май

*Йй      Йордания      йерархия      май*

К, к      Канада      кабина      рефлекс

*Кк      Канада      кабина      рефлекс*

Л, л      Лондон      лазер      култ

*Лл      Лондон      лазер      култ*

М, м      Мексико      мемоар      компютър

*Мм      Мексико      мемоар      компютър*

Н, н      Норвегия      номер      секунда

*Нн      Норвегия      номер      секунда*

Lesson B

O, o      Осло      орбита      марафон

Оо      Осло      орбита      марафон

П, п      Пловдив      пакт      апатия

Пп      Пловдив      пакт      апатия

Р, р      Русия      ромб      метър

Рр      Русия      ромб      метър

С, с      София      саксофон      маска

Сс      София      саксофон      маска

Т, т      Турция      трилър      рекет

Тт      Турция      трилър      рекет

У, у      Унгария      утопия      стимул

Уу      Унгария      утопия      стимул

Ф, ф      Франция      фарс      графика

Фф      Франция      фарс      графика

Х, х      Хелзинки      хаос      щрих

Хх      Хелзинки      хаос      щрих

Lesson B

Ц, ц

Цейлон

церемония

танц

Цу цу Цейлон церемония танц

Ч, ч

Чикаго

чинчила

сандвич

Ч.ч Чикаго чинчила сандвич

Ш, ш

Шотландия

шанс

туш

Ш.ш Шотландия шанс туш

Щ, щ

Щраус

щат

машаб

Щу щу Щраус щат машаб

Ъ, ъ

ъперкът

спектакъл

сьр

Ъъ ъперкът спектакъл сьр

Ь

Кьолн

шофьор

импортьор

Ь Кьолн шофьор импортьор

Ю, ю

Югославия

юни

илюзия

Юю Югославия юни илюзия

Я, я

Япония

яхта

батерия

Яя Япония яхта батерия

## LESSON C

### Learning to pronounce Bulgarian

The best way to learn to pronounce Bulgarian correctly is, of course, to listen regularly and carefully to native speakers of Bulgarian (or to tapes of them) and to imitate them. The following comments are only a guide: the way to success is constant and consistent practice.

#### Word accent

Word accent in Bulgarian is similar to that of English in a number of ways. First, the syllable of the word which is accented is pronounced louder and with more emphasis than the other syllables of the word. Second, one cannot predict which syllable of the word is accented but must learn it for each word. Third, the syllable which is accented is pronounced clearly as it is written, but the syllables which are unaccented are often pronounced with less enunciation. As an example, divide the English words "initiation" and "stationary" into their separate syllables:

i - ni - ti - á - tion      stá - tio - na - ry

In "initiation", the fourth syllable is accented, and in "stationary", the first syllable is accented. In each case the accented "a" sound is clearer, stronger, and somewhat longer than the other sounds. To pronounce these words correctly, one must know precisely which syllable to accent in each word. Unfortunately, the spelling of English does not provide this information.

Bulgarian is similar: one must know the place of accent in order to pronounce the word correctly, and Bulgarian spelling does not provide this information. As a guide to learning, therefore, all Bulgarian words in this textbook will be accented. The student should memorize the place of accent when learning each word, and read and speak aloud as much as possible so that the place of accent will begin to sound right to the ear.

Another similarity between Bulgarian and English concerns unaccented words and particles. Take as an example the English sentence "I'll see you." Although it is composed of four meaningful chunks, only two bear clear stress (and in fast speech, only one does). These four chunks are

I    'll    see    you  
+    -    ++    -

The words marked with a hyphen are written as separate components and have separate meaning. In terms of accent, however, they must lean on the neighboring word in order for the sentence to be pronounced correctly.

Bulgarian has a number of small words of this sort, called "clitics". They have no accent of their own, and obey strict word order rules. Learning to produce them in the proper order while still not accenting them takes considerable practice. Once achieved, however, it is a major step towards the acquisition of a real Bulgarian "accent".

One accentual property of Bulgarian which is not shared by English is the fact that Bulgarian can shift accent between certain forms of the same word (such as singular vs. plural). Such changes of accent must also be learned with each word.

### Unstressed vowels

Syllables which are not accented are pronounced with less enunciation than those which are; this phenomenon is sometimes called "vowel reduction". The degree and manner of this reduction vary in different areas of Bulgaria, but the following description is characteristic of most speakers in the capital area, Sofia. (Throughout this textbook, letters written within brackets represent the *sound* of a word and not its spelling.)

<i>letter</i>	<i>sound when accented</i>	<i>sound when unaccented</i>
о	[o]	[y] *
а	[a]	[ъ]
я	[я]	[йъ]

\* or sometimes like a mix between [o] and [y].

Unstressed -и-, -у- and -е- usually do not change their pronunciation. To illustrate vowel reduction, here is the spelling, and the most frequent pronunciation by Bulgarians, of three sample words:

<i>spelling</i>	<i>pronunciation</i>	<i>(meaning)</i>
ня̀ко̀л̀ко̀	[ня̀ку̀л̀ку̀]	several
по̀щ̀а̀та̀	[по̀щ̀ъ̀тъ̀]	post office
ю̀тѝя̀	[й̀у̀тѝй̀ъ̀]	iron [for clothing]

This incomplete correspondence of sound and letter can give the student some difficulty at the beginning. With attention, it is relatively easy to get used to.

## Voicing assimilation

Most Bulgarian consonants exist in pairs, according to a phenomenon called "voicing". The terms ("voiced" vs. "unvoiced") are not important to learn, but the relationship is. This is because when certain consonants are pronounced together, the first will adjust its degree of voicing to the second, in a process called voicing assimilation.

"Voicing" refers to a relatively stronger vibration of the vocal cords. To hear voicing in English, hold your hand on your throat and say first "bin", then "pin". The vibration which distinguishes the sound -b- from the sound -p- is called voicing.

The Bulgarian consonants for which this distinction is important are the following:

<i>(voiced)</i>	б	д	г	з	ж	дж	в
<i>(unvoiced)</i>	п	т	к	с	ш	ч	ф

When a voiced consonant occurs immediately before an unvoiced one, it is pronounced as its unvoiced partner (the one immediately below it in the chart); and when an unvoiced consonant occurs immediately before a voiced one, it is pronounced as its voiced partner (the one immediately above it in the chart). When voiced consonants occur at the end of the word, they are pronounced like their unvoiced partners. Here are examples of voicing assimilation in Bulgarian:

*written form*    *spoken form*    *assimilation process*

изпúскам	[испúскам]	voiced > unvoiced before unvoiced (-з- > -с- before -п-) unvoiced > voiced before voiced (-т- > -д- before -б-) voiced > unvoiced at end of word
отбúвам	[одбúвам]	
гúрад	[гúрат]	

## \* "Grammatical" pronunciation \*

There is a striking non-correspondence between letter and sound in the case of three different grammatical categories. In these instances, sounds that are *written* as -а or -я are always *pronounced* as [-ъ] or [-йъ]. When the vowel is unstressed, the difference is minimal, as unstressed -а and -я are usually pronounced as [-ъ] / [-йъ] anyway. When the vowel is stressed, however, the difference is very noticeable.

This phenomenon occurs in the 1<sup>st</sup> singular and 3<sup>rd</sup> plural present of verbs, and the definite form of masculine nouns. In the following examples, the apostrophe indicates that the preceding consonant is soft.

	<i>spelling</i>	<i>pronunciation</i>	<i>meaning</i>
<i>1<sup>st</sup> singular</i>	четá вървѝя	[четњ́] [върв'њ́]	I read I walk
<i>3<sup>d</sup> plural</i>	четáт вървѝят	[четњ́т] [върв'њ́т]	they read they walk
<i>masculine definite</i>	в градá денѝят през денѝя	[в градњ́] [ден'њ́т] [през ден'њ́]	in the city the day during the day



Holiday sign in downtown Sofia, late December 1990

## LESSON 1

### **DIALOGUE**

#### От Варна за Сѳия

// Милѳна, Димитър, Ангел, Дѳйвид и Джули пътуват за Сѳия от Варна. //

Милена: Тръгваме! Най-после!

Ангел: Вие за къде пътувате?

Димитър: За Сѳия. А вие?

Ангел: И аз пътувам за Сѳия. Как се казвате?

Димитър: Аз се казвам Димитър Стойков. А тя...

Милена: Казвам се Милена! Милена Стойкова!

Ангел: Откъде сте? От Варна ли сте?

Димитър: Да. Ние сме от Варна.

Ангел: А вие, госпожице?

Джули: Аз се казвам Джули Бейкър. Студентка съм, от Америка.

Дейвид: И аз съм студент, също от Америка. Казвам се Дейвид Бойд.

Ангел: От Америка ли сте? Студенти? Много интересно!

Милена: Ёй! Откъде духа? Става течение!

Джули: Какво е "течение"?



## BASIC GRAMMAR

### 1.1. Gender of nouns

Nouns in Bulgarian are either masculine, feminine or neuter. Practically all masculine nouns end in a consonant, and most feminine nouns end in -a. This includes most personal names. Here are some examples of masculine and feminine nouns:

<i>masculine</i>	<i>feminine</i>
Димитър	Милена
Стойков	Стойкова
Ангел	госпожица
студент	студентка

Nouns referring to profession or role are usually masculine. They can refer either to a male person, or to the category in general. The same noun with -ка added refers only to a female person.

### 1.2. Vocative form of nouns

When a person or object is being addressed, a special form, called the vocative, is used. The endings are -e for masculine nouns and -o (or -e) for feminine nouns. Here are examples of the most frequently used vocative forms, those for the nouns meaning "Mr.", "Mrs." and "Miss". Note that the accent changes place in the vocative of госпожа́ (Госпо́жо!).

<i>neutral form</i>	<i>vocative form</i>	<i>(meaning)</i>
господи́н	господи́н-е	Mr.
госпожа́	госпо́ж-о	Mrs.
госпо́жица	госпо́жиц-е	Miss

### 1.3. Plural of nouns

Most masculine nouns, and practically all feminine nouns, form the plural by adding -и. Masculine nouns add this ending directly to the singular form, while feminine nouns replace the singular ending -a by the ending -и. For example:

	<i>singular</i>	<i>plural</i>
<i>masculine</i>	студѐнт	студѐнт-и
<i>feminine</i>	студѐнтк-а	студѐнтк-и

The noun *госпож́а* shifts stress in the plural (*госпо́жи*). Such stress shifts are very exceptional.

#### 1.4. Personal pronouns: the verb "be"

Following is the conjugation of the verb "be" in the present tense. It is given together with the personal pronouns.

	<i>singular</i>		<i>plural</i>	
<i>1<sup>st</sup> person</i>	а́з съ́м	I am	ни́е сме́	we are
<i>2<sup>nd</sup> person</i>	ти́ си	you are *	ви́е сте́	you are **
<i>3<sup>rd</sup> person</i>	то́й е	he is	те́ са	they are
	тя́ е	she is		

\* (single person / familiar)

\*\* (single person / formal, or more than one person)

The 3<sup>rd</sup> plural form *са* is pronounced [сѝ].

#### 1.5. Present tense of verbs

All verbs have six forms in the present tense. The subject of the verb determines which form is to be used. Here is the present tense conjugation of the verb *пѣту́вам* "go, travel". Many other Bulgarian verbs are conjugated according to this same pattern.

*пѣтувам*

		<i>singular</i>	<i>plural</i>	
<i>пѣтувам</i>	<i>1<sup>st</sup> person</i>	пѣту́в-ам	пѣту́в-аме	<i>пѣтуваме</i>
<i>пѣтува́ш</i>	<i>2<sup>nd</sup> person</i>	пѣту́в-аш	пѣту́в-ате	<i>пѣтувате</i>
<i>пѣтува</i>	<i>3<sup>rd</sup> person</i>	пѣту́в-а	пѣту́в-ат	<i>пѣтуват</i>

Because the ending of the verb always specifies the verb's subject, personal pronouns are optional in Bulgarian. The phrases "I am a student" and "I am traveling to Sofia" can be expressed both with and without the pronoun "I". For example:

Първи урок / Lesson 1

Пътувам за Сѳфия.	I am traveling to Sofia.
Аз пътувам за Сѳфия.	[same]
Студѣнт съм.	I am a student.
Аз съм студѣнт.	[same]

**1.6. Questions**

Questions in Bulgarian, as in English, are of two types. One type includes a word such as “why?”, “who?”, and “where?”. This type of question requests specific information. The other kind simply asks whether a particular statement is true or not, and expects yes or no as an answer. In Bulgarian, as in English, each type of question has specific word-order rules associated with it.

If a question word such as “where?” is present, it always comes right before the verb. Thus, if a subject is present, the word order will be different from that of English. For example:

	За къде	пътувате?	Where are you going?
Вие	за къде	пътувате?	[same]

The word order in a yes-no question changes only if the verb is **съм**. In these sentences the verb is placed at the end. Otherwise the word order stays the same. All yes-no questions, however, must contain the particle **ли**. This particle is placed right *before* a form of the verb **съм**, and right *after* all other verb forms. For example:

Вие	пътувате	днѣс.	You are traveling today.
Вие	пътувате	ли днѣс?	Are you traveling today?
Вие	сте	студѣнт.	You are a student.
Вие	студѣнт	ли сте?	Are you a student?

**1.7. Prepositions**

The usage of prepositions in Bulgarian (as in English) is highly idiomatic. Most prepositions have a basic meaning, but all have numerous additional meanings which are not directly predictable from the basic meaning.

(a) The basic meaning of the preposition **от** is that of English “from”. This meaning is also present in the compound question word **откъдѣ**.

Аз съм от Върна.	I am from Varna.
Откъдѣ дѹха?	Where is it blowing from?

(b) The basic meaning of the preposition **за** is that of English “for”. When referring to a travel goal, it is usually translated “to”. The English expressions “Where are you headed for?” or “I’m leaving for Europe” may help the student to remember this usage of **за**.

Пътуваме за Сѳия.  
За къде пътувате?

We are traveling to Sofia.  
Where are you traveling to?

### 1.8. Clitics and word order

Bulgarian includes a number of small, unaccented words called clitics. Among the most frequent clitics are the forms of the verb **съм**, and the particle **се**. Clitics must obey special word order rules, the most important of which is that they cannot begin a sentence or phrase. In addition, the particle **се** must always occur next to the verb it accompanies (and directly before it if possible). Likewise, a form of **съм** must always occur next to a predicate noun or adjective (and directly before it if possible). Here are examples:

Аз се казвам Дейвид Бойд.  
Казвам се Дейвид Бойд.

My name is David Boyd.  
[same]

Аз съм студент.  
Студент съм.

I am a student.  
[same]

### 1.9. The conjunction “and”

There are two different ways to express the idea “and” in Bulgarian. If the two things joined are considered to be equivalent, the conjunction **и** is used; but if there is some sort of contrast, Bulgarians use the conjunction **а**. For example:

Милена и Димитър пътуват за Сѳия.      Milena and Dimitri are traveling to Sofia.

Милена пътува за Сѳия, а Веселин пътува за Габрово.      Milena is traveling to Sofia, and Veselin is traveling to Gabrovo.

## EXERCISES

I. Write the questions to which the following are answers:

1. Ние пътуваме за Варна. *Nie pãtuvame za Varna.*
2. Да, те са студенти.
3. Да, той е лекар.
4. От Сѳфия съм.
5. Той е от Сѳфия, а тя е от Варна.
6. Казвам се Милена. *Kazvam se Milena.*
7. Той се казва Максим. *Toj se kazva Maksim.*

II. Fill in the blanks with the correct verb form.

1. Ангел \_\_\_\_\_ от Сѳфия.
2. Милена и Димитър \_\_\_\_\_ от Варна.
3. Аз откъде \_\_\_\_\_?
4. Вие от Америка ли \_\_\_\_\_?
5. Ти студент ли \_\_\_\_\_?
6. Ние \_\_\_\_\_ студентки.
7. Те от Сѳфия ли \_\_\_\_\_?

III. Choose the correct conjunction.

1. Аз се казвам Иван \_\_\_\_\_ вие как се казвате?
2. Ние сме от Варна \_\_\_\_\_ те са от Габрово.
3. Джули \_\_\_\_\_ Дейвид са студенти от Америка. \_\_\_\_\_ Ангел не е студент.
4. Иван \_\_\_\_\_ Коста са лекари.
5. Иван е лекар \_\_\_\_\_ Коста е лекар.
6. Иван е лекар \_\_\_\_\_ Димитър не е.
7. Аз се казвам Мария, \_\_\_\_\_ тя се казва Мария.

## ADDITIONAL GRAMMAR NOTES

### 1.1a. Gender of nouns

Both first and last names in Bulgarian usually mark gender. Thus, male members of a family will have surnames ending in a consonant (Стóйков), while female members will have surnames ending in -а (Стóйкова).

Foreign names are spelled as they are pronounced:

Джу́ли Бейкър  
Де́йвид Бóйд

Julie Baker  
David Boyd

Masculine nouns referring to a profession or role cover a broad range of meaning: they can mean the category in general, a specific male person who is a member of that category, or (in the plural) a mixed group at least one of which is male. The same noun with the suffix -ка refers exclusively to a specific female person who belongs to that category. Compare the following possible translations:

Тé са студéнти. They are students.

- a) "they" = a group of male students
- b) "they" = a group of male and female students
- c) "they" = general (gender not important)

Тé са студéнтки. They are students.

"they" = a group of female students

When Bulgarians choose to focus more on the fact of a profession than on the sex of its practitioner, they may also use the masculine form to refer to a woman representative of that profession:

Тя́ е ле́кар. She is a doctor.

For many nouns such as студéнт and ле́кар, there also exist the suffixed nouns студéнтка and ле́карка. In all cases the non-suffixed noun refers either to males specifically or to the category in general, and the suffixed noun refers exclusively to females. Glossary lists in this textbook will designate nouns of this sort as follows:

Glossary listing: студéнт (ка) student

### 1.3a. Vocative form of nouns

The title **господѝн** is used in the vocative when it stands alone, but when it appears with a surname, the neutral form is used.

Господѝне!	Sir!
Господѝн Атанасов!	Mr. Atanasov!

Certain masculine nouns add **-ю** in the vocative. Among these are **другар** "comrade" and **приятел** "friend". The vocative forms of **другар** and **другарка** are **другарю** (both with and without a surname) and **другарко**. The vocative forms of personal names will be learned in Lesson 2.

### 1.4a. Personal pronouns; the verb "be"

As in most European languages (other than English), Bulgarian has two different words meaning "you". The singular form **ти** is used to address children, animals, God, and close friends. The plural form **вие** is used to address people one does not know well and wishes to treat with courtesy, or those who are elders or people of higher rank. In this meaning, the pronoun **вие** refers to a single person. When it is written in a letter, it is usually capitalized. The pronoun **Вие** (non-capitalized) is also the only form one can use to address a group of people.

In English, one must always use a subject pronoun. One cannot, for instance, say \* "Am a student", but must rather say "I am a student". (The asterisk means that a phrase or sentence is ungrammatical.) In Bulgarian, however, subject pronouns are optional. They are used when the person is identified for the first time, or when one wishes to emphasize the identity of the subject. Otherwise, they are omitted.

Third person singular pronouns are **той** (masculine), **тя** (feminine) and **то** (neuter). Although most nouns designating human beings are either masculine or feminine, there are a few neuter nouns which also refer to humans (such as **детѝ** "child", **момчѝ** "boy" and **момѝче** "girl"). The neuter pronoun is used to refer to these nouns.

### 1.6a. Questions

Both Bulgarian and English have specific word order rules for the formation of questions. Furthermore, both languages have different rules for yes-no questions and for Q-word questions (those containing a question word such as "who", "what", or the like).

## Първи урок / Lesson 1

Q-word questions in English must reverse the order of subject and auxiliary verb. In the following, for example, the subject, "you", and the auxiliary verb, "are", switch places:

<i>(statement)</i>		You	are		going.
<i>(question)</i>	Where		are	you	going?

To form correct Q-word questions in Bulgarian, one must remember both that the word order does *not* shift, and that the Q-word itself must always precede the verb directly. Thus:

<i>(statement)</i>	Вие		пътувате.
<i>(question)</i>	Вие	за къде	пътувате?
		За къде	пътувате?

Yes-no questions in English are formed by changing the order of subject and verb and adding rising intonation. Note the difference between the statement and the question in the following:

### *Statement*

You are a student.

*word order*  
[subject - verb]

*sentence intonation*  
*falling*

### *Question*

Are you a student?

*word order*  
[verb - subject]

*sentence intonation*  
*rising*

In Bulgarian, the word order changes only if the verb is **СЪМ**; otherwise it remains the same. The particle **ЛИ** is always added, however. It carries no stress of its own, but causes a strong high-pitched stress on the immediately preceding word. Study the following contrasts between statement and question:

### *Statement*

Вие пътувате днес.  
Вие сте студент.

#### *meaning*

You are traveling today.  
You are a student.

#### *intonation*

*sentence: falling*  
*sentence: falling*

### *Question*

Вие пътувате ли днес?  
Вие студент ли сте?

#### *meaning*

Are you traveling today?  
Are you a student?

#### *intonation*

*verb: high*  
*sentence: falling*  
*predicate: high*  
*sentence: falling*



### 1.7a. Prepositions

Monosyllabic prepositions are pronounced together with their objects as one word. Each of the following phrases, therefore, has only one accent:

от Вáрна	from Varna
за Сóфия	to Sofia

Students who know other Slavic languages must pay especial attention to the usage of prepositional phrases in Bulgarian. This is because nouns in Bulgarian, unlike those in other Slavic languages, do not have case endings. Relationships between nouns are expressed exclusively by prepositional phrases, and the same preposition can have a number of different meanings depending on the context. One example is the preposition **на**, which has at least three basic meanings:

<i>Meaning</i>	<i>Corresponding case form in other Slavic languages</i>
on	Locative (sometimes called prepositional)
to	Dative
of	Genitive

### 1.8a. Clitics: the particle **се**

The particle **се** occurs together with a number of verbs. This particle has several meanings, the most general of which is to make a verb intransitive. When **се** accompanies a verb, it is an integral part of that verb and must appear with every instance of the verb. Although some verbs do not even exist without **се**, most verbs exist in two variants -- with and without **се**. For these verbs, it is important to note that the presence or absence of **се** changes the meaning. For instance, **ка́звам** (without **се**) means "say", but **ка́звам се** means "to be called":

Ка́звам се Джу́ли Бейкър.	My name is Julie Baker.
---------------------------	-------------------------

### 1.9a. The conjunction "and"

The contrast in meaning between the conjunctions **а** and **и** is much greater when they are used at the beginning of a sentence. In these cases, **и** is usually translated as "also", while **а** continues to be translated as "and". For example:

И а́з пъту́вам за Сóфия.	I'm also traveling to Sofia.
А вие, госпо́жице?	And you, miss?

## SAMPLE SENTENCES

1. -- Лѐкар ли сте?  
-- Дá, а вѝе?  
-- И áз.
2. -- За кѝдѝ пътѝвате днѝс?  
-- За Вáрна. И вѝе ли?  
-- И áз.
3. -- Елѝна и Лилѝна са студѝнтки. А Мари́я и Ёскра?  
-- И Мари́я е студѝнтка. А Ёскра не ѝ студѝнтка. Тя е преподаватѝлка.
4. Áз ка́звам: "Кáк се ка́звате?"  
Тóй ка́зва: "Кáзвам се А́нгел. А вѝе?"  
Áз ка́звам: "И áз се ка́звам А́нгел."
5. -- Каквó ка́зваш?  
-- Кáзвам и́стината.  
  
-- Как се ка́зваш?  
-- Кáзвам се Ивáн.

## SENTENCES FOR TRANSLATION

1. Are you a teacher, Miss?
2. Are you from Varna? We are going to Varna soon.
3. His name is Angel. He is a physician. He is from Plovdiv.
4. Does he know Mrs. Antonova? She is also from Plovdiv.
5. The Stoykovs are traveling to Sofia today. They are teachers.
6. Where are you from, sir? And where are you going?
7. Lilyana and Milena are friends. David and Julie are also friends.

## READING SELECTION

### Кореспонденция - (1)

Бойко Атанасов е лекар. Калина Атанасова е учителка. Те са от Сѳфия.  
И Бѳб Мичел е лекар. Той е от Сѳн Франциско, а сегѳ пътува за Сѳфия.

15 мѳрт, Сѳн Франциско

Господѳн Атанасов,

ѳз се кѳзвам Роберт Мичел. Лекар съм. Приятел съм на Джон Грийн. Той е учител в Сѳфия. Познѳва госпожѳ Атанасова.

Скѳро пътувам за Сѳфия. Вѳе сегѳ в Сѳфия ли сте? И вѳе, кѳзва Джон, сте лекар. Знѳчи, нѳе сме лекари. Мнѳго интереснѳ! За съжалѳние ѳз разбѳрам сѳмо мѳлко бѳлгарски.

Роберт Мичел



Alexander Nevsky Cathedral, Sofia (detail of dome)

**GLOSSARY**

а	and	как се казваш?	what is your name? (familiar)
а вие, госпожице?	and you, miss?	какво	what
аз	I	какво е "течение"?	what's a "течение"? / what does течение mean?
аз се казвам	my name is		
бай	uncle, old man * (term of address)	кър	sir (archaic term * of address)
български	Bulgarian (language)	кира	ma'am (archaic term * of address)
в	in	къде	where
вие	you (pl.)		
вие	you (sg., polite)	лекар (ка)	doctor, physician *
господин	Sir, Mr. *	ли	(question particle)
госпожа (pl. госпожи)	Ma'am, Mrs. *	малко	a little
госпожица	Miss	март	March *
да	yes	много	very
детё	child *	много интересно	that's very interesting
днес	today *	момиче	girl *
другар (ка)	comrade *	момче	boy *
духа	it's blowing	на	of
е	is (3sg.)	най-после	finally
ей!	hey!	не	not
ефенди	effendi, sir (archaic * term of address)	ние	we
за	for, to	от	from
за къде пътувате?	where are you going?	от Америка	are you from America?
за съжаление	unfortunately	ли сте?	
значи	that means, so, thus	откъде	whence, from where
и	and, also	откъде сте?	where are you from?
и аз	me too	познава	s/he knows, is acquainted with
и вие ли?	and you as well?	преподавател (ка)	teacher (university level)
интересно	interesting *	приятел (ка)	friend *
истина	truth *	пътувам	travel, am traveling (1sg.)
истината	the truth	пътуват	travel, are traveling (3pl.)
казва	s/he says	пътувате	travel, are traveling (2pl.)
казва се	his/her name is	разбирам	understand (1sg) *
казвам	I say, I tell *	са	are (3pl)
казвам се	my name is	САЩ	USA
казваш	you say (familiar)	= Съединените	(United
как	how	американски щати	States of America)
как се казвате?	what is your name? (polite)	само	only
		се	verbal particle

## Първи урок / Lesson 1

сегá	now *	течéние	current, draft
секретáр (ка)	secretary *	ти	you (sg., familiar)
си	are (2sg.)	то	it (rarely: he, she)
скóро	soon	то́й	he, it
сме	are (1pl.)	трѣгваме	[we're] leaving
ста́ва	there's getting to be	тя́	she, it
ста́ва течéние	there's a draft	тя́ се ка́зва	her name is
сте	are (2pl.)		
студéнт (ка)	university student *	учител (ка)	teacher (up to 12th grade) *
съжалéние	pity *		
съм	am (1sg.)		
същó	also	щáт	state *
		Щáтите	the States
тé	they		

### CULTURAL COMMENTARY

#### Reference to the U.S.

As do many elsewhere in the world, Bulgarians use the term *Амэрика* colloquially to refer to the U.S. The official term for the U.S. is *САЩ* (*Съединените америкáнски щáти*), pronounced as one word [cáщ]. Some also refer to the U.S. colloquially as *Щáтите* ("the States").

#### Traveling: air currents

As in certain other countries, Bulgarians are very sensitive to currents of air, especially when traveling. The belief is that exposure to such currents will cause illness, especially in children.

#### Forms of address: Mr., Ms., etc.; professional titles

The term *госпожá* is used in the manner of English "Ms.", when one can not (or does not wish to) specify the marital status of the woman concerned. If the woman is known to be single but is middle-aged or older, it is also considered more polite to refer to her as *госпожá*.

The terms *господи́н*, *госпожá* and *госпо́жица* are now the neutral forms of address. They were introduced into Bulgaria in the late 19th century to replace the old terms of address *ефéнди*, *ки́р* (*ки́ра*) and *ба́й* (the latter used only for older men). During the socialist regime (1944-1989) they were used only to address foreigners from the west; in Bulgaria at that time one used *другáр* and *другáрка*. The term *ба́й* is still used familiarly to refer to older people.

For certain high-prestige professions, it is considered derogatory to use the form ending in *-ка* to refer to a woman practitioner of that profession. For instance, one would not refer to a woman Secretary-General of the U.N. as *секретáрка* unless one wanted to imply disrespect.

#### Letter writing

When Bulgarians write dates, they put the date first and then the month (similar to English "the fifteenth of March"). A letter is headed with the date and the place of its writing.

#### School systems

As in other countries, there is one system of schooling that takes the student from the elementary grades through graduation from high school, and another that is concerned with university education. Bulgarian extends this difference even to the words for "teacher": *учител* refers exclusively to a teacher in elementary or high school, and *преподавател* exclusively to a teacher at university level. Similarly, the term *студéнт* refers only to university students.

There is an English language high school in Sofia, which for many years has employed British and American teachers. Although the students are Bulgarian, all instruction is in English. Admission to the school is highly competitive. There are similar schools with instruction in French, German, Spanish, and Russian. An American university (also with English language instruction) was opened in Bulgaria in 1991. It is located in the southwestern Bulgarian city of Blagoevgrad.

## LESSON 2

### **DIALOGUE**

#### Пътуват с влак

// Димитър, Милена, Ангел, Джули, Дейвид (и други) пътуват с влак от Варна за София. Влакът е много дълъг. Те са в купе № 7 (номер седем). Купето е тясно. Коридорът също е тесен. Вратата на купето е затворена. Тяна отваря вратата. //

Таня: Извинете, къде е място № 1 (номер едно)?

Ангел: То е до вратата. Мястото е свободно.

Камен: А ние, мамо?

Таня: Вие сте тук. Камене, ти си на № 2 (номер две), а Надка е на № 3 (номер три).

Ангел: Ето, госпожо, място № 2 е също до вратата, а място № 3 е в средата. Имате ли багаж?

Таня: Благодаря, много сте любезен. Ето, чантата и куфар. Чантата е малка, но тежка. Куфарът е голям, но не е тежък.

Камен: Мамо, какво има в чантата? Гладен съм. И жаден. И Надка е жадна! Ние сме жадни!

Таня: После, Камене.

Камен: Какво има в чантата? Това не е ли шише?

Таня: Да, това е шише, но...

Камен: Какво има в шишето?

Таня: Ракія. От село.

Ангел: Ракія ли? Това е чудесно! Добре дошли, госпожо!

## BASIC GRAMMAR

### 2.1. Gender of nouns

Every noun in Bulgarian belongs to one of three genders: masculine, feminine or neuter. Because pronouns, adjectives and articles all have different forms depending on the gender of the noun they refer to, it is extremely important to know the gender of every noun.

The gender of a noun can usually be inferred from its ending. Since endings by definition contain a vowel, masculine nouns (which end in a consonant) are said to have a "zero" ending. Neuter nouns end in -o or -e, and feminine nouns usually end in the sound [a], which can be written either -a or -я. For example:

<i>masculine</i>	<i>feminine</i>	<i>neuter</i>
багаж	врат-а	куп-е
влак	госпож-а	мяст-о
коридор	раки-я	течени-е

### 2.2. Pronoun agreement

Every pronoun which refers to a singular noun must agree with that noun in gender. There is only one plural pronoun. Here are the forms, followed by examples of usage in sentences:

<i>masculine</i>	<i>feminine</i>	<i>neuter</i>	<i>plural</i>
той	тя	то	те

<i>masculine:</i>	Това е влак. Той е дълъг.	That's a train. It is long.
<i>feminine:</i>	Това е ракия. Тя е силна.	This is rakia. It is strong.
<i>neuter:</i>	Ето село. То е малко.	Here's a village. It is small.
<i>plural:</i>	Дейвид и Джули са студенти. Те са от Америка.	David and Julie are students. They are from America.
	Ето, чанта и кюфар. Те са тежки.	Here, a bag and a suitcase. They are heavy.

### 2.3. Definite articles

Bulgarian has a definite article, similar in usage to English "the". The Bulgarian definite article is added after the ending of the noun, and must agree with it in gender. Here are the forms of the article, followed by examples of usage in sentences.

<i>masculine</i>	<i>feminine</i>	<i>neuter</i>	<i>plural</i>
-ЪТ	-ТА	-ТО	-ТЕ

<i>masculine:</i>	Това е влак. Влакът е дълъг.	That's a train. The train is long.
<i>feminine:</i>	Това е ракия. Ракията е силна.	This is rakia. The rakia is strong.
<i>neuter:</i>	Ето село. Селото е малко.	Here's a village. The village is small.
<i>plural:</i>	Това са студенти. Студентите са от Америка.	These are students. The students are from America.
	Ето чанти и кюфари. Чантите са тежки, а кюфарите не са тежки.	Here are bags and suitcases. The bags are heavy, but the suitcases are not heavy.

The masculine definite article is always pronounced as [-ЪТ]. After nouns ending in -тел, -ар, and -й, it is written -ят. Nouns ending in -й drop the -й before adding the definite article. For example:

<i>indefinite form</i>	студент	лeкар	приятел	трамвай
<i>definite form</i>	студент-ът	лeкар-ят	приятел-ят	трамвай-ят

### 2.4. Adjective agreement

Adjectives in Bulgarian must also agree with the nouns they modify. There are three endings in the singular, corresponding to the three genders, and one in the plural. Here are the endings, followed by examples of usage.

<i>masculine</i>	<i>feminine</i>	<i>neuter</i>	<i>plural</i>
(zero)	-а	-о	-и

<i>masculine</i>	Кюфарът е тежък.	The suitcase is heavy.
<i>feminine</i>	Чантата е тежка.	The bag is heavy.
<i>neuter</i>	Мястото е свободно.	The seat is empty.
<i>plural</i>	Студентите са свободни.	The students are free. [= not busy]



## Втори урок / Lesson 2

These agreement patterns follow a "rhyming principle", whereby nouns, definite articles and adjectives often repeat the same sound. This principle is especially clear in feminine and neuter nouns:

Чантата е голяма и тежка. The bag is big and heavy.

Селото е малко и хубаво. The village is small and pretty.

### 2.5. Fleeting vowels in adjectives

Feminine, neuter and plural nouns and adjectives end in a vowel. Masculine nouns and adjectives usually end in a consonant. Frequently, this consonant is preceded by the vowel -ъ- or -е-, which drops out in other forms of the adjectives (and is therefore called "fleeting"). For example:

<i>masculine</i>	<i>feminine</i>	<i>neuter</i>	<i>plural</i>
доб-ъ-р	доб-ра	доб-ро	доб-ри
теж-ъ-к	теж-ка	теж-ко	теж-ки
глад-е-н	глад-на	глад-но	глад-ни
свобод-е-н	свобод-на	свобод-но	свобод-ни

### 2.6. Alternating vowels in adjectives

A number of adjectives occur with -я- in the singular and -е- in the plural. Certain of these adjectives have -е- in the masculine form as well. For example:

<i>masculine</i>	<i>feminine</i>	<i>neuter</i>		<i>plural</i>
голям	голяма	голямо	vs.	големи
бял	бяла	бяло	vs.	бели
тесен	vs. тясна	тясно	vs.	тесни

### 2.7. Vocative of personal names

The vocative of masculine names ends in -е. If the neutral form of the name ends in -ър, this -ъ- is lost before the vocative ending.

<i>masculine</i>	<i>neutral form</i>	<i>vocative form</i>
	Камен	Камене
	Димитър	Димитре
	Петър	Петре
	господин	господине

The vocative of feminine names ends in -o or -e. If the neutral form of the name ends in -ца, -га or -ка, the ending -e is added. In other nouns, the ending -o is used.

	<i>neutral form</i>	<i>vocative form</i>
<i>feminine</i>	ма́ма	ма́мо
	госпожа́	госпо́жо
	На́дка	На́дке
	О́лга	О́лге
	Роси́ца	Роси́це

### 2.8. Имам vs. има

The verb **има́м** means “have”, and corresponds in usage to English “have”.

И́мате ли бага́ж?

Do you have [any] baggage?

The 3<sup>rd</sup> singular form **има́** is also used in the general meaning “there is” or “there are”. This form of the verb is unchanging regardless of whether the subject is singular or plural. For example:

И́ма ли ту́ка свобóдно мя́сто?  
Какво́ има́ в ча́нтата?

Is there an empty seat here?  
What is [there] in the bag?

В ча́нтата има́ интере́сни  
кни́ги.

There are [some] interesting books in  
the bag.

### 2.9. Negation

Verbs are negated by placing the particle **не** immediately before the verb. Although this particle is not accented, it causes the following word to receive a strong accent, *even if this word is a clitic*. For example:

Ни́е не пъту́ваме днес.  
Не сѝм учите́л.  
Не е́ студѝнтка.

We are not traveling today.  
I am not a teacher.  
She is not a student.

Negation of the verb **има́м** is an exception. Here, one must use a different verb, **ня́мам**. For example:

-- И́маш ли един мо́лив?  
-- Ня́мам мо́лив.

“Do you have a pencil?”  
“I don’t have a pencil.”

### 2.10. Position of ли

The question particle **ли** usually occurs right after the verb. Exceptions are the verb **съм**, and a conscious intent to focus one's question on something other than the verb. In the case of **съм**, the particle **ли** occurs immediately before the verb, unless the verb is negated, in which case **ли** occurs immediately after the verb.

Той студент ли е?	Is he a student?
Той не е ли студент?	Isn't he a student?

In the case of special focus, the particle **ли** is placed after the word in question. When question focus changes, word order often changes as well. For example:

Ракия ли?	Is it rakia [you've got there]?
Камен ли пътува днес?	Is it Kamen who's traveling today?
Камен днес ли пътува?	Is it today that Kamen is traveling?
Днес ли пътува Камен?	[same]

### 2.11. Prepositions

(a) The basic meaning of the preposition **в** is "in" (or "into", depending on the context). The sense "within a closed or defined space" is usually implied. Thus:

Те са в купе № 7.	They are in compartment No. 7.
Тй си в средата.	You are in the middle [of the row].

It can also mean "within the confines of" in a less literal sense, as in the idiomatic expression **в отпуската** "on leave, on a break, on vacation"; one could think of this as "within the time frame allowed to one to be absent from work".

(b) The basic meaning of the preposition **до** is "next to", "by" (or "up to"). The general idea is that of approaching a limit.

Мястото е до вратата.	The seat is next to the door.
Коридорът е до купето.	The corridor is by the compartment.

(c) The preposition **на** has a number of different meanings. The first (seen already in Lesson 1) is that of possession. For example:

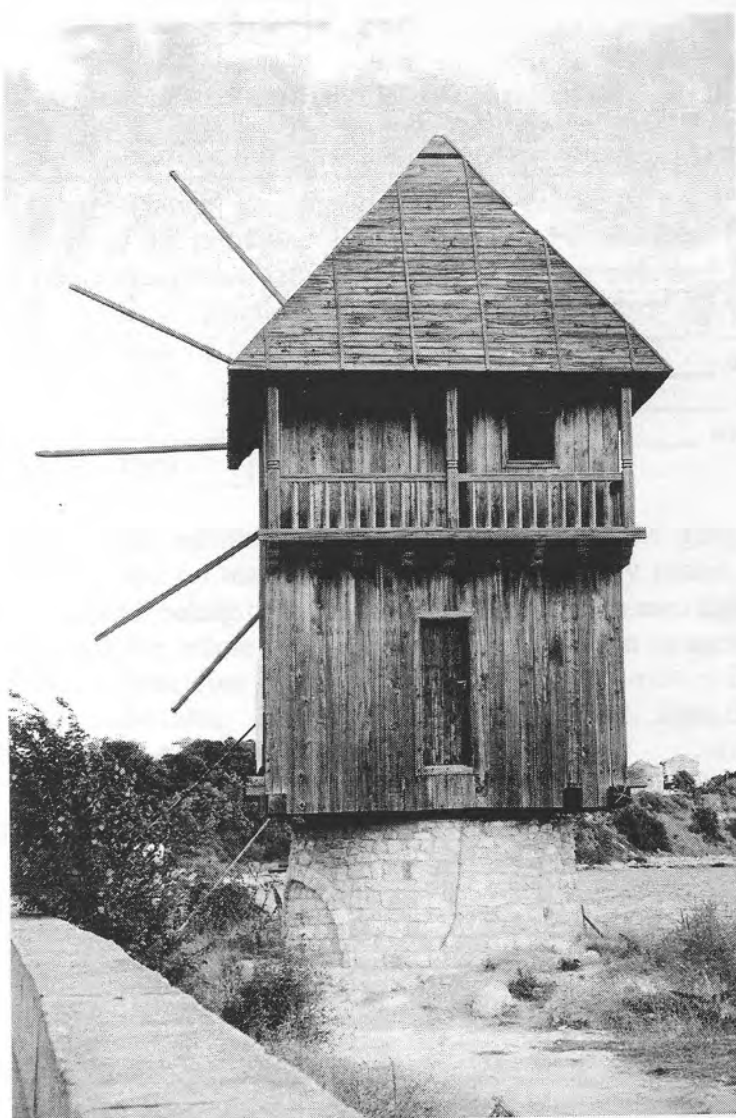
Вратата на купето е затворена.	The door of the compartment is closed.
Приятел съм на Джон Грийн.	I am a friend of John Green's.
Книгата е на Надка.	The book is Nadka's.

In another meaning, **на** is closely related to **в**, and is often translated “on”, “at” or “in”. In the following example, for instance, the reference is not to being physically *in* the seat, but to having the ticket for that seat:

Тѝ си **на** нóмер двé, а тя е **на** нóмер трѝ.      You're in seat no. 2, and she's in no. 3.

(d) The basic meaning of the preposition **с** is “with”. When referring to means of conveyance, it is translated idiomatically as “by”. For example:

Тé пѣтúват **с** влáк, а тя пѣтúва **с** автобúс.      They are traveling by train and she is traveling by bus.



Windmill at the entrance to Nesebăr, near Burgas

## EXERCISES

I. Fill in the blanks with the appropriate pronoun.

1. Откъде е ракията? \_\_\_\_\_ е от село.
2. За къде пътува влакът? \_\_\_\_\_ пътува за Сѳфия.
3. Къде е селото? \_\_\_\_\_ е до Сѳфия.
4. Откъде са Димитър и Милѳна? \_\_\_\_\_ са от Върна.
5. Къде са кѳфарите? \_\_\_\_\_ са в купѳто.
6. Вратата отворѳна ли е? Нѳ, \_\_\_\_\_ е затворѳна.
7. Къде е Димитър? \_\_\_\_\_ е в ѳтпуска.

II. Complete each sentence with the article and the appropriate form one of the following adjectives: домашен, чудѳсен, мѳлѳк, голям, дѳлѳг, тѳжѳк, затворѳн.

1. Кѳща \_\_\_\_\_ е \_\_\_\_\_.
2. Вратѳ \_\_\_\_\_ е \_\_\_\_\_.
3. Кѳфари \_\_\_\_\_ са \_\_\_\_\_.
4. Автобѳс \_\_\_\_\_ е \_\_\_\_\_.
5. Ракиѳ \_\_\_\_\_ е \_\_\_\_\_.
6. Вѳно \_\_\_\_\_ е \_\_\_\_\_.
7. Чѳнти \_\_\_\_\_ са \_\_\_\_\_.

III. How many different questions can you make out of the following sentences by using the particle *ли* in different positions?

1. Тѳй пътува с влак.
2. Купѳто е тѳсно.
3. Мѳстото е свѳбѳдно.
4. Камен е глѳден и жѳден.
5. В шишѳто ѳма ракиѳ.
6. Тѳня отвѳря вратѳта.
7. Мѳсто нѳмер двѳ е до вратѳта.

## ADDITIONAL GRAMMAR NOTES

### 2.1a. Gender of nouns

The great majority of masculine nouns end in a consonant; that is, their ending is the "zero" ending. Certain masculine nouns referring to persons, however, end in a vowel. Most feminine nouns end in the vowel -a, but there are a sizable number of feminine nouns with a zero ending. The forms of these irregular nouns will be learned later.

### 2.2a. Pronoun agreement

Pronoun agreement in Bulgarian differs considerably from that of English. With certain idiomatic exceptions, the English pronouns "he" and "she" refer only to male and female persons. Otherwise the pronoun "it" is used.

In Bulgarian, however, it is the grammatical gender of a noun which determines the form of the pronoun. English speakers would refer to a train or a door as "it", but Bulgarian must refer to a train (в<sup>л</sup>а<sup>к</sup>) as то<sup>й</sup>, and a door (в<sup>р</sup>а<sup>т</sup>а) as т<sup>я</sup>. In the plural, however, English and Bulgarian are similar: the pronouns "they" and те are used regardless of the meaning of the noun.

### 2.3a. Definite articles

The forms of the definite article in Bulgarian are unchanging. Every feminine noun takes the article -та no matter what its form, and every neuter noun takes the article -то. Most plural nouns take the article -те, and the great majority of masculine nouns take the article -ът / -ят. The spelling -ят occurs in a number of masculine nouns. In masculine nouns which end in -а<sup>р</sup> or -те<sup>л</sup> or in the consonant -й, this spelling is predictable. In others, it must be learned. The definite forms of the latter type of nouns will be noted in vocabulary lists.

The usage of definite articles in Bulgarian is generally similar to that of English: when a noun has been specified or "defined" in a conversation, subsequent mentions of that noun are usually accompanied by the definite article. There are differences, however. One of these concerns reference to family members. When the relationship is a direct one and is clear from the context, Bulgarian uses the article where English would use "my", "your" or the like. For example:

Пра<sup>ц</sup>ам с бра<sup>т</sup>овче<sup>д</sup>ката  
Кръ<sup>с</sup>ти<sup>н</sup>а едно ши<sup>ш</sup>е  
дом<sup>а</sup>шна ра<sup>к</sup>ия.

I am sending with my cousin Krăstina  
a bottle of homemade rakia.

### 2.5a. Fleeting vowels in adjectives

The stem of an adjective is found by dropping the vowel ending from the feminine or neuter form. Thus the stem of the adjective **тежка** is **тежк-**, the stem of the adjective **добра́** is **добр-**, and the stem of the adjective **гладна** is **гладн-**. When the stem of an adjective ends in two consonants, the masculine form usually inserts a vowel between these two consonants. This vowel is called "fleeting" because it disappears in all other forms of the adjectives. Fleeting vowels can be either **-ъ-** or **-е-**. That in stems whose final consonant is **-н-** will often be **-е-**; and for stems whose final consonant is **-к**, it will often be **-ъ-**.

Adjectives are listed in dictionaries in the masculine singular form. While it is not possible to predict with certainty which vowels will "fleet" and which will remain, the general rule is that **-ъ-** and *unstressed -е-* will disappear. Thus, one should assume that the feminine forms of **болен** and **дълъг** are **болна** and **дълга**, respectively. Exceptions to this rule will be noted in vocabulary lists. If you encounter an adjective in a non-masculine form and have trouble finding it in the dictionary, try predicting a masculine form with an inserted vowel.

### 2.6a. Alternating root vowels

A number of Bulgarian words occur with **-я-** in some forms of the word, and **-е-** in others. The rule governing the alternation is as follows: If the vowel is stressed, **-е-** occurs if there is **-е-** or **-и-** in the following syllable; otherwise **-я-** occurs. If the vowel is unstressed, it is always **-е-**. Adjectives learned in this lesson exemplify the first half of this rule. Examples of the second half will be seen later.

### 2.7a. Vocative of personal names

The regular vocative ending for masculine personal names, and for feminine personal names in **-ка**, **-га** or **-ца**, is **-е**. The ending **-о**, however, is used regularly only with those feminine nouns which refer to relationships (e.g. **госпожа́**, **ма́ма**). In personal names, this vocative ending is used more and more rarely (and, for some speakers, carries a tinge of unfriendliness). Students are advised to avoid it.

The ending **-о** in **друга́рко** is an anomaly: since the neutral form of the noun ends in **-ка**, one would expect the ending **-е**.

### 2.8a. Има́м vs. има

The impersonal meaning of **има́** is largely the same as that of French *il y a*, and Russian *есть*. (and is similar to that of German *es gibt*). Similarly, the impersonal meaning of **ня́ма** is like that of French *il n'y a pas de* and Russian *нет* (and is similar to that of German *es gibt kein*).

**2.12. "Presentative" това**

The word **това** is used in connection with the verb **съм** to introduce persons or topics. Although it can be translated with English "this", "that", "these" or "those", its form in Bulgarian is unchanging. Its order in the sentence is likewise unchanging: it always comes at the beginning. Students must pay attention to this word order rule when **това** occurs in a question. Thus:

Това е книга.	This/that is a book.
Това са книги.	These/those are books.
Това книги ли са?	Are these/those books?
Това не е ли шише?	Isn't that a bottle?

**2.13. Agreement with вие**

When the plural pronoun **вие** refers to a single person, the verb continues to be plural. Adjectives, however, are usually in the singular. For instance:

Вие сте много любезен.	You are very kind.
------------------------	--------------------

**2.14. The conjunction "but"**

The conjunction **но** implies strong contrast and is always translated "but". There is a gradation between the three conjunctions **и**, **а** and **но** which is schematized in the chart below and illustrated by the examples following.

<i>conjunction</i>	<i>translation</i>	<i>meaning</i>
<b>и</b>	and	<i>equivalence</i>
<b>а</b>	and	<i>comparison</i>
<b>но</b>	but	<i>contrast</i>

Чантата е голяма и тежка.	The bag is big and heavy.
Чантата е малка, а куфарът е голям.	The bag is small and the suitcase is big.
Чантата е малка, но е тежка.	The bag is small, but it is heavy.



### **SAMPLE SENTENCES**

1. Ма́йка пъту́ва ли?
2. Ма́йка ли пъту́ва?
3. Ка́мен е гла́ден.
4. Ка́мен гла́ден ли е?
5. Ка́мен ли е гла́ден?
6. Раки́ята е от се́ло.
7. Раки́ята от се́ло ли е?
8. Това́ раки́я от се́ло ли е?
9. Еле́на и Лиля́на са прия́телки.
10. Еле́на и Лиля́на прия́телки ли са?
11. Еле́на и Лиля́на ли са прия́телки?
12. Ка́мен и На́дка са гла́дни. А А́нгел е жа́ден, но не е́ гла́ден.
13. Ча́нтата е голя́ма и те́жка. А ку́фарът е голя́м, но не е́ те́жък.

### **SENTENCES FOR TRANSLATION**

1. Rositsa, is there a good lawyer here in Sofia?
2. Mladen, do you have a manual for the TOEFL test?
3. The corridors are very narrow, and the compartment is also cramped.
4. There are hungry students in the compartment. They are also thirsty.
5. Where are there houses with large doors and entryways? In Plovdiv, Mladen's house is small, but it has a large entryway. In Sofia, Stoyan's house is large, but it has a small entryway.
6. The wind is very strong. Where is it blowing from?
7. Is the suitcase heavy? No, it isn't heavy. But the bag is very heavy.

**READING SELECTION**

Кореспонденция - (2)

Сегá Бóйко и Бóб са приятели. Бóб отнóво е в Сán Францiско. Бóйко е в Сóфия. Калина изучáва английски.

1 юли, Сóфия

Драги Бóб,

Сърдечни поздравии от Сóфия! Пращам с братовчедката Кръстина едно шише домашна ракия за здраве. Гроздова е, от село.

Ние сме здрави. Времето е топло, но има силен вятър. Аз съм в отпускаи ремонтирам къщата. Имам още много работа, а малко време. Вие как сте? Здрави ли сте?

Всичко хубаво,

Бóйко

Патриша Мичел е адвокатка. Женá е на Роберт Мичел.

4 юли, Сán Францiско

Драги Бóйко и Калина,

Благодаря за ракията. Тя е много силна! Ние в Калифорния обикновено не обичаме много силен алкохол. Но обичаме ракията. Тя найстина е много хубава.

Ние не сме много добре. Бóб е малко болен. Има простуда. Какво ремонтира Бóйко в къщата?

Поздравии,

Патриша

P.S. Отделно пращам за Калина учебник за TOEFL.

**GLOSSARY**

* автобус	bus	има силен вятър	it's very windy
адвокат (ка)	lawyer	има	s/he has
алкохол	alcohol	имате	you have ( <i>polite</i> )
английски	English (language)	имате ли багаж?	do you have [any] luggage?
багаж	baggage, luggage	имаш	you have ( <i>familiar</i> )
благодаря	thank you	интересен	interesting
болен	sick		
братовчед (ка)	cousin	какво има	what is there in the bag?
бял (pl. бели)	white	в чантата?	
		книга	book
в отпуската	on a break, vacation	коридор	corridor, entryway
вино	wine	коридорът е тесен	the passageway is narrow
влак	train	купе	compartment
вратата	door	купе № 7	compartment No. 7
време	time; weather	купето е тясно	the compartment is cramped
всичко	all, everything	куфар	suitcase
всичко хубаво	all the best	къща	house
вятър	wind		
		любезен	kind
гладен	hungry		
голям (pl. големи)	large, big	майка	mother
гроздов	[made] of grapes	малко	a little, [very] little
		малко време	not much time
две	two (in counting)	малко болен е	he's under the weather
до	by, near, next to	малък	small
добре	well, fine	мама	Mom
добре дошли!	welcome!	мамо	Mom! ( <i>vocative</i> )
добър	good	много	much
домашен	homemade	много работа	a lot of work
драги	dear ( <i>masc. plural</i> )	молив	pencil
друг	other, another	място	place, seat
дълъг	long	мястото е свободно	the seat is not taken
		на	in, on, at
един	one, a ( <i>masculine</i> )	на № 2 си	you've got No. 2
едно	one (in counting)	наистина	really, truly
ето	here ( <i>pointing</i> )	но	but
		номер	number
жаден	thirsty	нужда	need
женá	woman, wife	няма	there isn't/aren't any
		няма нужда	there's no need, it's not necessary
затворен, -ена	closed	нямáм	I don't have
здрав	healthy	нямáме	we don't have
здраве	health		
		обикновено	usually
има	there is, there are	обичаме	we like
има още много	there's still a lot of		
работа	work [to do]		
има малко време	there's not much time		

## Втори урок / Lesson 2

отв́аря	s/he opens	се́дем	seven
отво́рен, -ена	open	се́ло	village
отде́лно	separately, under separate cover	си́лен	strong
	again, once more	среда́	middle
отно́во	break, time off,	сърд́ечен	heartly
отпу́ска	vacation		
о́ще	still, yet	те́жък	heavy
о́ще мно́го	a lot more yet	те́сен, тя́сна	tight, cramped, narrow
		то́ е до вратáта	it's by the door
		това́	that, this
		това́ не е ли	isn't that a bottle?
		шише́?	
по́здрав	greeting	TOEFL	Test Of English as a Foreign Language
по́сле	later, afterwards		
пра́щам	I am sending, I send	то́пъл	warm
просту́да	cold (illness)	трамва́й	tram
пъту́ва	s/he travels, is traveling	три́	three
	we travel, are traveling	ту́ка	here ( <i>location</i> ); also ту́к
пъту́ваме	travel by train		
пъту́вам с вла́к		уче́бник	textbook, manual
ра́бота	work	хубав	fine, nice, beautiful, pretty
ракия́	rakia (strong fruit brandy)		
ремонтíрам	I redo, make repairs	ча́нта	bag, briefcase
ремонтíра	s/he redoes, makes repairs	чудесе́н	marvelous, wonderful
с	with	шише́	bottle
свобо́ден	free, not occupied	ю́ли	July
свобо́ден съм сегá	I'm not busy now		



Rotunda "St. George", downtown Sofia

## **CULTURAL COMMENTARY**

### **Traveling: trains**

Trains are a very common means of travel in Bulgaria. Each car of the train is divided into a number of compartments. After climbing up into the train, one walks along the narrow corridor which runs the length of the car, and enters a compartment by sliding a door aside. Within the compartment are two rows of seats facing each other, stretching from the single large window to the compartment door. Second-class compartments have four seats on each side.

### **Food and drink: rakia**

Rakia (ракия), which is a strong, double-distilled brandy, is in a sense the national drink. It is normally made from grapes, but can be made from any fruit; plums or apricots can also serve as the base. The best is that which is home-made, outside the city. The drinking of rakia in moderate quantities is considered to be good for one's health, both physical and emotional. Indeed, for many Bulgarians, drinking rakia together is an important friendship ritual.

### **City and country**

A very large part of Bulgarian society is still rural, focused on the village (село); and practically everyone who lives in the city still has some sort of connection with a village, usually through family.

### **Gifts**

Bulgarians consider that the most appropriate (and the most certain) way to send someone a gift over a long distance is to send it with a person. The person to whom the gift is entrusted is under a strong obligation to deliver it, even if s/he does not know the recipient. The recipient, in turn, is usually obliged to entertain the person acting as go-between, at least briefly; and (naturally) to send a gift in return.

### **Vacation**

"Vacation" is a complex concept in Bulgaria. The majority of time off from work is spent not on holiday but in taking care of the business of daily life. One often hears Bulgarians say, only partly in jest, that they need to go back to work in order to get some rest.

### **Learning English**

Learning English is extremely popular among Bulgarians now. Some learn English because it has become the fashionable second language, but most learn it in order to have a salable skill. Passing the standardized TOEFL test certifies that one possesses this skill. One sees in Sofia now countless small agencies that offer crash courses in English that claim to prepare one for the TOEFL (pronounced тоѝфъл).

### **Body language**

The head movements accompanying the Bulgarian words for "yes" and "no" are the *opposite* of those used in English (and most other Western languages). To signify "yes", Bulgarians move their heads from side to side, with a slight rocking movement. To signify "no", they move their heads up and down; this gesture always begins with a sharp upward movement.

## LESSON 3

### **DIALOGUE**

#### Какво правиш?

Надка: Мамо, какво прави лелята?

Таня: Нали виждаш? Четё. Четё книга.

Надка: И аз четá! Аз правя като лелята!

Камен: Не, ти не четёш, ти само отваряш и затваряш книгите.

Таня: Камене! Няма нýжда! Ти си голям, а Надка е още малка. Тя още не четё, но рисува много добре. Надке, ёто един хубав молив. Добре ли си сегá?

Джули: Какво рисуваш? Къща ли?

Надка: Да, това е къща.

Джули: Каква хубава къща!

Надка: Разбира се, че е хубава.

Джули: Какво е това, тука в средата на къщата?

Надка: Това е вратата на къщата. Тази къща има много прозорци, но само една врата. Аз много обичам прозорци. От прозорците виждам градината.

Дейвид: И тука в купето има един прозорец. Той е голям, нали?

Надка: Да, но няма градина. Не обичам този прозорец!

Милена: И аз не обичам този прозорец, защото е отворен. Става течение!  
Това е много лошо!

Ангел: Стига с този прозорец! Госпóжо, нали имате едно шише? Къде е това шише? Хáйде по една глътка!

**BASIC GRAMMAR****3.1. Present tense**

There are three present-tense conjugations in Bulgarian. They are named after the vowel of the 3<sup>rd</sup> singular ending: the a-conjugation, the и-conjugation, and the e-conjugation. Here are examples of the three conjugations:

**a-conjugation**

	<i>singular</i>	<i>plural</i>	<i>singular</i>	<i>plural</i>
1 <sup>st</sup> person	пѣтув-ам	пѣтув-аме	затвѣр-ям	затвѣр-яме
2 <sup>nd</sup> person	пѣтув-аш	пѣтув-ате	затвѣр-яш	затвѣр-яте
3 <sup>rd</sup> person	пѣтув-а	пѣтув-ат	затвѣр-я	затвѣр-ят

Verbs whose 3<sup>rd</sup> singular is in -я also belong to this conjugation; the -я- is consistent throughout the conjugation. All verbs of this conjugation are accented on the syllable immediately preceding the ending.

**и-conjugation**

	<i>singular</i>	<i>plural</i>	<i>singular</i>	<i>plural</i>
1 <sup>st</sup> person	пѣв-я	пѣв-им	бро-я	бро-им
2 <sup>nd</sup> person	пѣв-иш	пѣв-ите	бро-иш	бро-ите
3 <sup>rd</sup> person	пѣв-и	пѣв-ят	бро-и	бро-ят

Verbs of this conjugation can be accented on either the stem (as пѣв-я) or the ending (as бро-я). The place of accent must be learned with each verb.

**e-conjugation**

	<i>singular</i>	<i>plural</i>	<i>singular</i>	<i>plural</i>
1 <sup>st</sup> person	пѣш-а	пѣш-ем	чет-а	чет-ем
2 <sup>nd</sup> person	пѣш-еш	пѣш-ете	чет-еш	чет-ете
3 <sup>rd</sup> person	пѣш-е	пѣш-ат	чет-е	чет-ат

	<i>singular</i>	<i>plural</i>	<i>singular</i>	<i>plural</i>
1 <sup>st</sup> person	пѣ-я	пѣ-ем	живѣ-я	живѣ-ем
2 <sup>nd</sup> person	пѣ-еш	пѣ-ете	живѣ-еш	живѣ-ете
3 <sup>rd</sup> person	пѣ-е	пѣ-ят	живѣ-е	живѣ-ят

In the e-conjugation, the 1<sup>st</sup> singular and 3<sup>rd</sup> plural can end either in -а/-ат or -я/-ят. Verbs in the latter group always accent the syllable immediately before the ending. Those in the former group are accented either on the stem or the ending; the accent must be learned with each verb. When the 1<sup>st</sup> singular and 3<sup>rd</sup> plural forms are accented on the ending (-а́, -а́т or -я́, -я́т), these endings are pronounced as if the vowel in each case were [ъ].

Bulgarian has no infinitive. One can predict the conjugation type from the dictionary form of a verb, the 1<sup>st</sup> singular form. Verbs in -ам or -ям belong to the а-conjugation, and verbs in -я preceded by a consonant or the vowel -о- belong to the и-conjugation. All others (including verbs in -я preceded by any other vowel) belong to the е-conjugation. In certain instances, primarily verbs ending in -ча, -ша or -жа, one cannot tell whether a verb belongs to the е-conjugation or the и-conjugation. For such verbs, the conjugation type must be learned. For these verbs, 2<sup>nd</sup> singular forms are regularly given in glossary listings, as follows:

пѝша (-еш)

### 3.2. Demonstrative pronouns

The word for "this / these" agrees in gender with the noun it modifies.

<i>masculine</i>	<i>feminine</i>	<i>neuter</i>	<i>plural</i>
ТО́ЗИ	ТА́ЗИ	ТОВА́	ТЕ́ЗИ

When the neuter form **това́** precedes the verb forms **е** or **са**, it can also mean "that" or "it". In this meaning, **това́** is unchanging, even if the verb is plural.

- |                                    |                                     |
|------------------------------------|-------------------------------------|
| -- Какво рисуваш? Къща ли?         | "What are you drawing? A house?"    |
| -- Да, това е къща.                | "Yes, it's a house."                |
| А това е вратата на къщата.        | And this is the door of the house." |
| Това са Милена и Димитър Стойкови. | This is Milena and Dimitri Stoykov. |
| Това е много интересно!            | That's very interesting!            |

### 3.3. Indefinite article

The Bulgarian indefinite article is similar in usage to English "a, an". Like the definite article, the indefinite article also agrees with its noun in gender. Here are examples, with the definite article given for comparison:



Трети урок / Lesson 3

	<i>indefinite</i>	<i>definite</i>	<i>meaning</i>
<i>masculine</i>	един прозорец	прозорец-ът	a/the window
<i>feminine</i>	една врата	врата-та	a/the door
<i>neuter</i>	едно шише	шише-то	a/the bottle

Bulgarians use the definite article in roughly the same contexts as English. For Bulgarians, however, the indefinite article is optional. Either of the following is possible, and there is no essential difference in meaning:

Четá	една	интересна книга.	I'm reading an interesting book.
Четá		интересна книга.	[same]

In the plural, *едни* is used to mean "some [unspecified]". The same meaning can be conveyed without the article.

Четá	едни	интересни книги.	I'm reading some interesting books.
Четá		интересни книги.	[same]

**3.4. Adjectives vs. adverbs; какъв vs. какво**

In most cases, adverbs are identical to the neuter form of adjectives. The adverb *добре*, however, has a different form. Compare the following:

ADJECTIVE ( <i>masculine, neuter</i> )	ADVERB	Meaning	
		<i>adjective</i>	<i>adverb</i>
същ, също	също	same	also
търпелив, търпеливо	търпеливо	patient	patiently
хубав, хубаво	хубаво	nice	nicely, well
отделен, отделно	отделно	separate	separately
чест, често	често	frequent	often
добър, добро	добре	good	fine, well, OK

The relationship between the question word *какво* and the adjectival pronoun *какъв* is similar to that between adverb and adjective. *Какво* is unchanging and always asks the question "what?". *Какъв* changes to modify a noun, and has several meanings, all of which are usually translated as "what". It can express an emotion such as surprise, it can ask a question about descriptive detail, or it can ask about professional or work identity. For example:

*question word*

Какво правиш?  
Какво е това?

What are you doing?  
What is that?

*pronominal adjective*

Каква хубава къща!  
Каква е тази книга?

What a nice house!  
What [sort of] book is that?

-- Какъв е той?  
-- Той е лекар.

"What does he do?"  
"He's a doctor."

**3.5. Fleeting vowels in nouns: the suffix -ец**

Certain masculine nouns contain a fleeting vowel, which drops out when the plural ending -и is added. The vowel in the frequently occurring suffix -ец is an example. In the examples below, the suffix is separated from the root by hyphens. When followed by the "zero" ending, the suffix is -ец, but when followed by the plural ending, it is simply -ц. For example:

<i>singular</i>	<i>plural</i>	<i>meaning</i>
прозор-ец	прозор-ц-и	window
американ-ец	американ-ц-и	American
чужден-ец	чужден-ц-и	foreigner, stranger

All nouns in -ец which do not drop this vowel in other forms will be noted in the glossary. Thus, the simple listing вегетерианец presumes the plural вегетерианци.

**3.6. Plural of masculine nouns in -к or -г**

Masculine nouns ending in -к or -г in the singular replace these consonants by -ц and -з, respectively, in the plural.

<i>singular</i>	<i>plural</i>	<i>meaning</i>
език	езиц-и	language
учебник	учебниц-и	textbook
археолог	археолоз-и	archaeologist
съпруг	съпруз-и	spouse

**3.7. Prepositions**

(a) The basic meaning of the preposition като is "as, like". For example:

бял като сняг

as white as snow

Трети урок / Lesson 3

(b) The basic meaning of the preposition по is “along, by”; this usage will be learned in Lesson 5. One of the idiomatic meanings of this preposition is the distributive one, which is best translated by English “each”. For example:

Хайде по една глътка!

Let's each have a drink  
[= a swallow]!

Студентите четат по седем  
страници.

The students read seven pages each.  
[= The students (each) read seven  
pages at a time.]

(c) The basic meaning of the preposition под is “under”. For example:

Обувките на Петър са под  
пейката.

Peter's shoes are under the bench.



Man in traditional folk costume, Koprivshitsa folk festival

**EXERCISES**

I. Fill in the blanks with the appropriate form of one of the following verbs: пи́ша, ви́ждам, вървя́, пра́вя, четá, зная́.

1. Я́на \_\_\_\_\_ ка́ртичката с мо́лив.
2. Ти́ какво́ \_\_\_\_\_? Кни́га ли \_\_\_\_\_?
3. Бага́жът на Дими́тър е те́жък. Дими́тър \_\_\_\_\_ мно́го ба́вно.
4. А́з не \_\_\_\_\_ къ́щата. Къ́де е тя́?
5. Милéна и Лили́яна \_\_\_\_\_ грéшки.
6. Та́зи кни́га е на бълга́рски. \_\_\_\_\_ ли бълга́рски?
7. А́з не \_\_\_\_\_ грéшки.

II. Fill in the blanks with the correct form of the demonstrative pronoun:

1. \_\_\_\_\_ е мно́го интéресно.
2. \_\_\_\_\_ врата́ отво́рена ли е?
3. \_\_\_\_\_ ку́фар е те́жък.
4. \_\_\_\_\_ са Милéна и Дими́тър.
5. Защо́ \_\_\_\_\_ прозо́рци са отво́рени?
6. Какво́ има́ в \_\_\_\_\_ éзеро?
7. \_\_\_\_\_ америка́нци са студéнти.

III. Fill in the correct preposition.

1. На́дка рису́ва \_\_\_\_\_ мо́лив.
2. \_\_\_\_\_ Та́ня има́ свобóдно мя́сто.
3. А́нгел отва́ря врата́та \_\_\_\_\_ купéто.
4. Милéна и Дими́тър пи́ят \_\_\_\_\_ една́ ча́ша ви́но.
5. Ива́н и Я́на живе́ят \_\_\_\_\_ Со́фия.
6. \_\_\_\_\_ прозо́рците \_\_\_\_\_ къ́щата има́ пейка.
7. И а́з съм жа́ден \_\_\_\_\_ На́дка.

**ADDITIONAL GRAMMAR NOTES****3.1a. Present tense**

The characteristic vowel of a conjugation -- the vowel which appears alone in the 3<sup>rd</sup> singular -- is called the theme vowel. The theme vowel of the a-conjugation, -а-, can also occur as -я-.

In the a-conjugation, all six forms contain the theme vowel. In the other two conjugations, the theme vowel is present only in four out of six forms (2-3sg and 1-2pl). The remaining two forms, the 1<sup>st</sup> singular and 3<sup>rd</sup> plural, always end in the sound [-ъ]. This sound is never written as -ъ-, but always as -а- or -я-. In this case sound and letter are not predictable from each other, even when this ending is accented. The words written *чета́* and *чета́т* must be pronounced [чeтѣ] and [чeтѣт]; and the spoken forms [вѣрв'ѣ] and [вѣрв'ѣт], in which the apostrophe signals softening of the preceding consonant, must be written *вѣрвѣ* and *вѣрвѣт*.

Note also that in the a-conjugation the 1<sup>st</sup> singular ends in -м, and the 1<sup>st</sup> plural ends in -ме. In the e- and и-conjugations, however, the 1<sup>st</sup> singular ends in a vowel and the 1<sup>st</sup> plural ends in -м. Care must be taken to interpret correctly the meaning (and conjugation) of verbal forms ending in -м.

Although the great majority of verbs whose 1<sup>st</sup> singular ends in -я preceded by a consonant belong to the и-conjugation, a few of them belong to the e-conjugation. The most common of these is *къпя* (*къпеш*, etc.) "bathe".

**3.2a. Demonstrative pronouns**

The forms of the demonstrative pronouns are very similar to those of the personal pronouns; this similarity should be exploited in learning them. Here are the two sets of pronouns listed together:

<i>masculine</i>	<i>feminine</i>	<i>neuter</i>	<i>plural</i>	<i>Type</i>
<i>то́зи</i>	<i>та́зи</i>	<i>това́</i>	<i>те́зи</i>	<i>Demonstrative</i>
<i>то́й</i>	<i>та́я</i>	<i>то́</i>	<i>те́</i>	<i>Personal</i>

**3.3a. Indefinite article**

English has both a definite and an indefinite article, italicized in the following examples. Note that English must place one of these two articles before a singular noun. The third example on the following page is incorrect English.

- I am reading *an* interesting book.  
 I am reading *the* interesting book [I mentioned to you before].  
 \* I am reading interesting book.

Bulgarian differs from English in that only the definite article is obligatory when the meaning "definite" is present. To express the meaning "indefinite", Bulgarians have an option: sometimes they use the word for "one" and sometimes they use nothing.

Most standard Bulgarian grammars do not yet recognize a separate category of "indefinite article". The existence of a frequent accentual difference between the meanings "one" [as opposed to more than one] and "a" [the indefinite article], however, indicates that most Bulgarians do in fact distinguish these two meanings. When **едѝн**, **еднѝа**, **еднѝо** means "a", Bulgarians tend to pronounce it with a much weaker accent than when it means "one". In this book, **едѝн** with the meaning "indefinite article" will not be accented.

### 3.4a. Adjectives vs. adverbs

Adverbs are used either as predicates (after the verb **сѝм**) or as attributes (adding information about a verbal state or action). Note the difference, especially in the case of **добѝр**, between the predicative usage of an adverb (the first two examples) and of an adjective (the third example):

#### Predicative

- |                       |  |
|-----------------------|--|
| -- Добре ли си сегѝа? | "Are you OK now?"                      |
| -- Дѝа, добре сѝм.    | "Yes, I'm fine."                       |
| Тѝй е много добѝр.    | He's very good [= a very good person]. |

#### Attributive

- |                            |                          |
|----------------------------|--------------------------|
| Нѝдка рисуѝва много добре. | Nadka draws very nicely. |
|----------------------------|--------------------------|

### 3.5a. The suffixes -ѝц, -ѝн and -ски

In nouns referring to persons, the suffix **-ѝц** usually indicates origin (or membership in a particular group). Another suffix designating origin is **-ѝн** (which is historically related to English "one [of]"). In the plural, this suffix is dropped. When referring to origin, both these suffixes are frequently preceded by the suffix **-ан-**. Note that the noun **господѝн** "Mr." also contains the suffix **-ѝн-**, and that its plural (usually translated as "Gentlemen") is irregular.

<i>singular</i>	<i>plural</i>	<i>meaning</i>
бѝлгар-ѝн	бѝлгар-ѝ	Bulgarian
англич-ѝн-ѝн	англич-ѝн-ѝ	Englishman
господ-ѝн	господ-ѝ	Mr. ( <i>plural</i> : Gentlemen)

The suffixes **-ец** and **-ин** form nouns of origin which refer either to a male (singular and plural usages) or to the generalized category (plural usage only). By contrast, the suffix **-к-** designates a specifically female representative of each category (since this suffix is always followed by the feminine noun ending **-а**, it is frequently referred to as **-ка**). These three suffixes are discussed in much greater detail in Lesson 23.

<i>singular/general</i>	<i>specifically female</i>	<i>meaning</i>
америк-án-ец	америк-án-ка	American
англич-án-ин	англич-án-ка	English[wo]man
българ-ин	българ-ка	Bulgarian
чужд-ен-ец	чужд-ен-ка	foreigner, stranger
вегетери-án-ец	вегетери-án-ка	vegetarian

The above forms are nouns. Adjectives indicating origin are formed with the suffix **-ск-**. When the masculine form of such an adjective is used alone, the noun "language" is understood, as in English. For example:

Разб́ирам са́мо ма́лко б́ългарски.	I understand only a little Bulgarian.
Разб́ирате ли англи́йски?	Do you understand English?

This suffix forms adjectives of numerous sorts. The form of the root to which the suffix is added is not always predictable. For example:

<i>national name [masculine]</i>	<i>stem</i>	<i>derived adjective</i>
българ-ин	българ-	българ-ски
англи-чанин	англий-	англий-ски

In the masculine, these adjectives always end in **-и**. Other forms are regular:

<i>masculine</i>	българск-и	ези́к	англи́йск-и	ромáн
<i>feminine</i>	българск-а	раки́я	англи́йск-а	къща
<i>neuter</i>	българск-о	ви́но	англи́йск-о	се́ло
<i>plural</i>	българск-и	студéнти	англи́йск-и	студéнти

### 3.8. Нали

The question word **нали́** can appear either at the beginning or at the end of a sentence. It signifies that the speaker expects a positive answer to the question. Its most frequent translation is as the so-called tag question ("isn't it?", "aren't you?", or the like). For instance:

Нали́ виждаш?	Don't you see?
Нали́ имате мо́лив?	You have a pencil, don't you?
То́й е голя́м, нали́?	It's big, isn't it?
Къща́ рисува́ш, нали́?	You're drawing a house, aren't you?

### 3.9. Definite forms of plurals in -a

A few masculine nouns, and all neuter nouns, form their plural in **-a**. The rules for forming these plurals will be learned in later lessons. For now, note the fact that *any* noun which ends in **-a**, no matter what its number or gender, takes the definite article **-та**. \*

Here are two examples. The plural of the masculine noun **нóмер** "number" is **номерá**, and the plural of the neuter noun **детé** "child" is the slightly irregular **деца́**. The definite forms of these nouns are:

<i>gender</i>	<i>singular</i>	<i>plural</i>
<i>masculine</i>	<b>нóмерът</b>	<b>номерáта</b>
<i>neuter</i>	<b>детéто</b>	<b>деца́та</b>

The easiest way to remember the forms of these plural articles is as follows:

**Nouns ending in -a take a rhyming form of the article,  
no matter what they mean.**

Thus:            **кнiгáта**                      **деца́та**  
                      *(feminine singular)*        *(neuter plural)*





### **SAMPLE SENTENCES**

1. Аз ймам (само) един приятел.
2. Един приятел пътува за Америка.
3. Аз ймам едно дете.
4. Едно дете отвържа вратата.
5. Това са студенти от Америка.
6. Това са цветни моливи. Това са книги.
7. Каква е тази книга? Това е роман.
8. Кой отвържа вратата? Едно дете. Какво е то? Малко или голямо?
9. Камен и Надка знаят по едно стихотворение.
10. Студентите носят по един куфар.

### **SENTENCES FOR TRANSLATION**

1. What lovely windows there are in this house! Do you see these windows?
2. What are Kamen and Nadka doing? They are counting pencils. Now what are they drawing? Kamen is drawing a pond next to a house, and Nadka is drawing a mountain.
3. Unfortunately I know very little Bulgarian because I am a foreigner. We, as foreigners, read slowly.
4. Americans and English speak English. This Englishwoman also speaks Bulgarian. Do the American women speak Bulgarian?
5. Is there a post office in this village? No, there isn't, because this is a small village.
6. What's this under the bench? Are these shoes? What large shoes they are!
7. Bulgarians like books. They read books often, and not only in Bulgarian. Does this Bulgarian woman read English?

**READING SELECTION**

Кореспонденция - (3)

20 юли, Сѳия

Драга Патриша,

Пощата е много бавна, но има още много време. Няма място за паника. Чакам търпеливо книгата. Четя усилено други книги. Вече разбирам малко английски, но още не говоря.

Интересно, ти как си? Добре ли си? Боб здрав ли е вече?

Бойко ремонтира банята. Сменя плочките. Остава още малко.

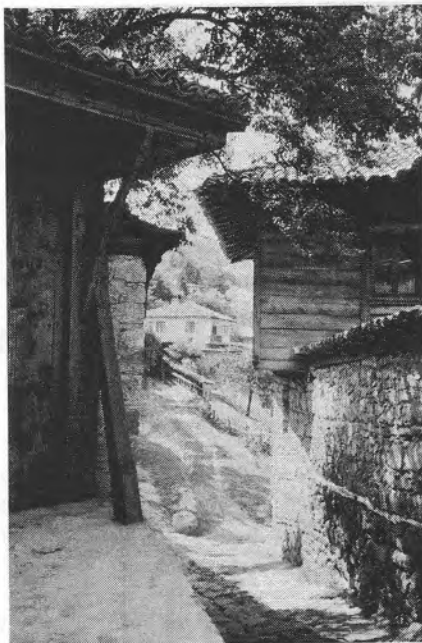
Обикновено ние почиваме в Копривщица, но тази година време за почивка няма. Децата са на село в Родопите -- нали знаеш, че аз съм оттам.

Копривщица е много хубаво място. Оттам правим излети в планините. Събираме малини и варим сладко. В Копривщица има типична българска атмосфера -- криви тесни улици и бели къщи с червени покриви.

Нали знаеш, Яна рисува много хубаво. Пращам тази рисунка за Майкъл. Това е църквата Александър Невски. Планината отзад е Витоша. На пейката до църквата сме Яна и аз. Идиличен пейзаж, нали?

Сърдечни поздрав

Калина



Street scene in Koprivshtitsa

## GLOSSARY / SENTENCES

американец	American (male)	идиличен	idyllic
американка	American (female)	излет	excursion
англичанин	Englishman, English person	или	or
англичанка	Englishwoman	интересно,	I wonder how you are?
археолог	archaeologist	ти как си?	
атмосфера	atmosphere	каква хубава къща!	what a nice house!
бавен	slow	какво е това?	what's this?
баня	bath, bathroom	какъв	what kind of, what
брой	count	какъв е той?	what [work] does he do?
българин	Bulgarian (male)	картичка	postcard
българка	Bulgarian (female)	като	like, as
варя	boil, cook	класически	classical
вегетерианец	vegetarian (male)	кой	who (see Lesson 5)
вегетерианка	vegetarian (female)	крив	crooked
вече	already, by now	къпя, -еш	bathe
виждам	see	леля	aunt (father's sister); "auntie"
вървя	walk, move, go	лош	bad
гимназия	academically oriented high school	малина	raspberry
гълтка	swallow	на	in, at
говоря	speak, talk	на български	[written or spoken] in Bulgarian
година	year	на село	[staying] in the village
гора	woods, forest	нали	isn't it? aren't there?
господа	gentlemen	нали виждаш?	doesn't she? (etc.)
градина	garden	нали е голям?	don't you see? it's big, isn't it?
грешка	mistake	нали знаеш,	you know, don't you,
дама	lady	че аз съм...	that I'm...
дами и господá	ladies and gentlemen	начален	beginning, elementary
деца (pl. of дете)	children	начално	elementary education
добре ли си сегá?	are you O.K. now?	образование	
драг	dear	не	no
един	one (masculine)	номер (pl. номера)	number
една	one (feminine)	нося	carry, wear
едно	one (neuter)	няма място за	there's no need to worry
езеро	lake, pond	паника	
живяя	live	обичам	like, love
защо	why	образование	education
защото	because	обувка	shoe
затварям	close	оставам	remain, stay
зная	know	остава още малко	there's still a bit left

## Трети урок / Lesson 3

отв́арям	open	сняг	snow
отд́елен	separate	сре́ден	middle ( <i>adj.</i> )
отза́д	in back, behind	сти́га	[that's] enough
о́ще не говоря́	I can't speak yet	сти́га с то́зи	enough about that
о́ще не четé	s/he doesn't [know how to] read yet	прозо́рец	window
		стихотворéние	poem
па́ника	panic, worry	стра́ница	page
пейза́ж	landscape, scene from nature	съби́рам	gather, collect
		съпру́г	husband, spouse
		същ	same
пе́йка	bench	та́зи	this ( <i>feminine</i> )
пи́ша (-еш)	write	те́зи	these
пи́я	drink	те́хникум	technical high school
планина́	mountain	типичéн	typical
плóчка	tile	това́	this ( <i>neuter</i> )
по	each ( <i>distributive</i> )	то́зи	this ( <i>masculine</i> )
под	under, below	търпели́в	patient ( <i>adj.</i> )
позна́вам	know, be acquainted with		
		у́лица	street
по́крив	roof	уси́лено	intensively
почи́вам	rest, go on holiday		
почи́вка	vacation trip, rest	хай́де	come on, let's
по́ща	mail, post office	хай́де по една́	[come on,] let's each
пра́вя	do, make	глы́тка!	have a drink!
пра́вя излет	go on an excursion		
пра́щам	send	цвéтен	colored
прозо́рец	window	църква	church
( <i>pl.</i> прозо́рци)			
пъту́вам	travel	ча́кам	await, wait, wait for
		ча́ша	glass, cup
разби́ра се	of course	че	that ( <i>conjunction</i> )
разби́рам	understand	червén	red
рису́вам	draw	чéст	frequent
рису́нка	drawing	чéсто	often
ромáн	novel	четá	read
		чужденéц	foreigner, stranger (male)
сла́дко	thick sweet preserves	чужденка́	foreigner, stranger (female)
сла́дък	sweet		
сме́ням	change, replace		

## CULTURAL COMMENTARY

### Forms of address

Bulgarian children often refer to strangers by kinship terms such as "aunt", "uncle", "grandma", "grandpa", depending on the sex and the (relative) age of the stranger. A young (to middle-aged) woman could thus be referred to by a child as "lelya" (леля).

### School systems: levels

As in America, Bulgarian children begin school at age 6 or 7. After completing the four grades of elementary school (начáлно образовáние), they move to the three grades of middle school (прогимна́зия), and then to one of several higher educational schools. These are of two types: the

## Трети урок / Lesson 3

academically oriented (**гимназия**) and the technically oriented (**техникум**). By law Bulgarian children must complete at least one year of higher education (that is, through eight grades of school). Among the most prestigious of the academically oriented schools is the "classical" high school (**Класическата гимназия**). Students are admitted to university by a very rigorous series of examinations.

### Home life: repairs

Home repairs, such as replacing the tiles in the bathroom, are almost always done by individual homeowners. Most Bulgarians learn to do these jobs out of necessity.

### Geography: Koprivshtitsa

The picturesque town of Koprivshtitsa (**Копривщица**) is located to the east of Sofia, in the foothills of the mountain range called Sredna Gora (**Средна гора**). The town has been designated a "museum-city", and many of the houses in it have been given the protective status of "historical monument". The houses are all of the old, Ottoman-inspired style, with overhanging balconies and dark red-tiled roofs. The streets are narrow and cobblestoned. Koprivshtitsa was the site of the initial Bulgarian uprising against the Ottomans; the homes of several of the famous revolutionaries have been converted into museums.

### Geography: the Rhodopes

The Rhodope mountains (**Родопите**) are situated in the south of Bulgaria. The region is known for its physical beauty and for its characteristic traditional handicrafts, music and speech.

### Geography: Sofia

One of the most striking sights in Sofia is the cathedral dedicated to Alexander Nevski (**Александър Невски**), built in honor of the Russian armies who liberated Bulgaria from the Ottoman overlordship in the late 19th century. Its golden dome is visible from a great distance, and its massive interior, crypt treasury and excellent choir make for a memorable visit. There is a large open square in front of the church where Sofia residents stroll and often have their pictures taken. Many street vendors have set up business there in recent years.

### Geography: Vitosha

Directly to the south of Sofia is Vitosha mountain (**Витоша**) at 7,506 feet. It is a favorite spot for excursions. On Sundays it is filled with Sofia residents picnicking and hiking; regularly scheduled city buses travel there.

### City and country

Connections to one's rural roots are generally valued in Bulgaria. Those who still have relatives "in the village" (i.e. in a particular rural settlement) try to visit in the summers or at least to send their children there. These visits are not only for the rural experience, but also to maintain contact with one's extended family.

### Food and drink: sladko

Bulgarians enjoy sweets, and particularly the thick, sweet home-cooked preserves called "sladko" (**сладко**). This can be made from any fruit, but it is commonly made from berries or plums, preferably freshly gathered. A combination of fruit, water and sugar is brought to the boil and then simmered for several hours. The resulting sweet is served to guests on small saucers when they first arrive, together with a glass of cold water or a small cup of Turkish coffee.

## LESSON 5

### **DIALOGUE**

#### Идва един висок човек

// Ангел стои в коридора и пуши. Идва един висок човек. Носи фотоапарат, касетофон, и видеокamera. Ангел го гледа и мисли. Какъв ли е този човек? Исква да го пита, но не знае как. //

Веселин: Извинете, искам да мина.

Ангел: Заповядайте, минете.

Веселин: Не мога, няма място.

Ангел: Защо носите толкова много? Гледам ви и се чудя. Какво работите?

Веселин: Журналист съм.

Ангел: А-а! Журналист! За къде пътувате?

Веселин: Отивам в Габрово, на фестивала.

Ангел: На кой фестивал?

Веселин: На фестивала на хумора и сатирата, разбира се.

Ангел: Аха, затова носиш тези апарати! Не са ли тежки?

Веселин: Тежки са, разбира се.

Ангел: Сложй ги на пода тогава! А не, не в коридора. Ела да влезем в купето. Хайде да изпием по една ракия.

Веселин: Не мога да вляза. Исквам да намеря свободно място. Това купе е пълно, нали?

Ангел: Да, пълно е, но децата могат да седнат заедно.

// Веселин иска да продължи по коридора, но в този момент забелязва Джули, и си казва -- Коя ли е тази хубавица? //

Веселин: Добре, хайде да влезем!

## LESSON 4

### **DIALOGUE**

#### Затворете прозореца, моля!

Милена: Моля ви се, господине, затворете прозореца!

Дейвид: Защо? Задушно е. Имаме нужда от въздух! Не затваряйте прозореца, моля.

Милена: Не знаете ли? Течението е много опасно за малките. Нали виждате? Децата седят на течение! Митко, веднага затвори прозореца!

Димитър: Добре, мило. Затварям.

Ангел: Седнете, господине. Аз съм до прозореца, сега затварям.

Таня: Надка, вземі моливите от пода.

Надка: Защо, мамо?

Таня: Не питай, само слушай. Сложи моливите в чантата. Къде е чантата? Камене, знаеш ли къде е чантата?

Камен: Да, зная. Сега слагам всичко в чантата.

Таня: Благодаря, Камене, добро момче.

Ангел: Пушите ли? Имате ли една цигара?

Дейвид: Не, ние не пушим. Нали знаете, димът е много опасен за малките.

Джули: И за големите. Вие, ако пушите, излезте в коридора, моля.

Ангел: Добре, госпожице. Сега излизам.

**BASIC GRAMMAR****4.1. Aspect**

Nearly every verbal idea in Bulgarian is expressed by two different verbs, each of which conveys a different point of view, or “aspect”. One of these views the action as general, basic and unbounded, and is called “imperfective”. The other views the action as bounded in some way or another, and is called “perfective”.

The combination of the two verbs is called an “aspect pair”. Dictionaries usually list the two together, with the imperfective form first. When one knows only the perfective, one must predict (or guess) the imperfective form in order to look up the meaning of the verb in the dictionary. For this reason, it is best to learn both members of an aspect pair at the same time.

All glossary listings from now on will be in this format; the glossary to this lesson repeats all verbs learned up to this point, now in the form of aspect pairs. Following are examples, always listed with imperfective preceding perfective.

<i>Imperfective / Perfective</i>	<i>meaning</i>
вли́зам / вля́за	enter, go in
ви́ждам / ви́дя	see
затва́рям / затво́ря	close
ка́звам / ка́жа	say
оста́вам / оста́на	stay, remain
отва́рям / отво́ря	open
пра́щам / пра́тя	send
сла́гам / сло́жа	put
тръ́гвам / тръ́гна	leave, set out

Perfective verbs most frequently refer to a single instance of completed action. Imperfective verbs usually describe an action in progress, refer to the general idea of an action, or suggest multiple, repeated instances of a single action. Because of the nature of their meaning, verbs such as **съм** “be” and **има́м** “have” exist only in the imperfective aspect.

**4.2. Imperative**

There are two sets of imperative endings in Bulgarian. These are:

	<i>singular</i>	<i>plural</i>
Type 1	-й	-йте
Type 2	-и́	-е́те



## Четвърти урок / Lesson 4

Singular forms are used when addressing a person one speaks to as **ти**, and plural forms are used either with a group or when addressing a person one speaks to as **вие**.

To form the imperative, drop the final letter of the 1<sup>st</sup> singular present form. Add Type 1 endings to verbs of the a-conjugation or verbs whose 1<sup>st</sup> singular ends in -я preceded by a vowel. Add Type 2 endings to all other verbs, and shift the accent to the ending.

	<i>1st sg. present</i>	<i>sg. imperative</i>	<i>pl. imperative</i>
Type 1	затв <sup>а</sup> р-ям п <sup>и</sup> -я бр <sup>о</sup> -я зн <sup>а</sup> -я	затв <sup>а</sup> р-яй! п <sup>и</sup> -й! бр <sup>о</sup> -й! зн <sup>а</sup> -й!	затв <sup>а</sup> р-яйте! п <sup>и</sup> -йте! бр <sup>о</sup> -йте! зн <sup>а</sup> -йте!
Type 2	п <sup>и</sup> ш-а в <sup>ъ</sup> рв-я затв <sup>о</sup> р-я чет-а	п <sup>и</sup> ш-й! в <sup>ъ</sup> рв-й! затв <sup>о</sup> р-й! чет-й!	п <sup>и</sup> ш-ете! в <sup>ъ</sup> рв-ете! затв <sup>о</sup> р-ете! чет-ете!

Some verbs have irregular imperatives. Among the most common of these are:

	<i>1st sg. present</i>	<i>sg. imperative</i>	<i>pl. imperative</i>
(irregular)	в <sup>и</sup> дя в <sup>л</sup> яза изл <sup>я</sup> за	в <sup>и</sup> ж! вл <sup>э</sup> з! изл <sup>э</sup> з!	в <sup>и</sup> жете! вл <sup>э</sup> зте! изл <sup>э</sup> зте!

Positive commands are usually formed from perfective verbs. This is because the focus is on the speaker's desire that an action be performed once and completed. Negative commands are normally formed from imperfective verbs. This is because the focus is on the speaker's desire that the process of an action not be undertaken. Below are two examples:

*perfective*

Затвори вратата!                      Close the door!

*imperfective*

Не затв<sup>а</sup>ряй вратата!                      Don't close the door!

### 4.3. Masculine definite objects

When masculine definite nouns are used as the object of a verb or preposition, the final -т of the article is lost, and the article is written -а. Nouns whose article is written -ят simply drop the -т. Here are examples:

*subject*

Прозорецът е голям.  
Как се казва лекаря?

The window is big.  
What is the doctor's name?

*object*

Той седи до прозореца.  
Това шише е на лекаря.

He is sitting by the window.  
This bottle belongs to the doctor.

#### 4.4. Verbs of body position

Bulgarian has two different verbs each for the concepts “sit”, “stand” or “lie”. One means to assume the position (as in “sit down, stand up, lie down”) while the other means to be in the position (as in “be seated, be standing, be lying down”). By the nature of their meaning, verbs of the second group exist only in the imperfective aspect.

ASSUME a position		BE in a position	
<i>imperfective</i>	<i>perfective</i>	<i>imperfective</i>	
сядам	седна	седя	SIT
ставам	стана	стоя	STAND
лягам	легна	лежя	LIE

#### 4.5. Embedded questions

When a question is integrated into another sentence, usually as the object of a verb, it is said to be “embedded”. In English, such questions shift the word order of the original question. In Bulgarian, however, the word order remains unchanged. Note that in all three of the examples below, the Bulgarian question **къде е чантата** (“where is the bag”) maintains the same word order, while the English question does not. Note too that the sentence in which a question is embedded does not have to be a question itself.

	Къде е чантата?	Where is the bag?
Знаеш ли	къде е чантата?	Do you know where the bag is?
Не, не зная	къде е чантата.	No, I don't know where the bag is.

#### 4.6. Prepositions

The preposition **в** means either “in” or “into” depending on the context.

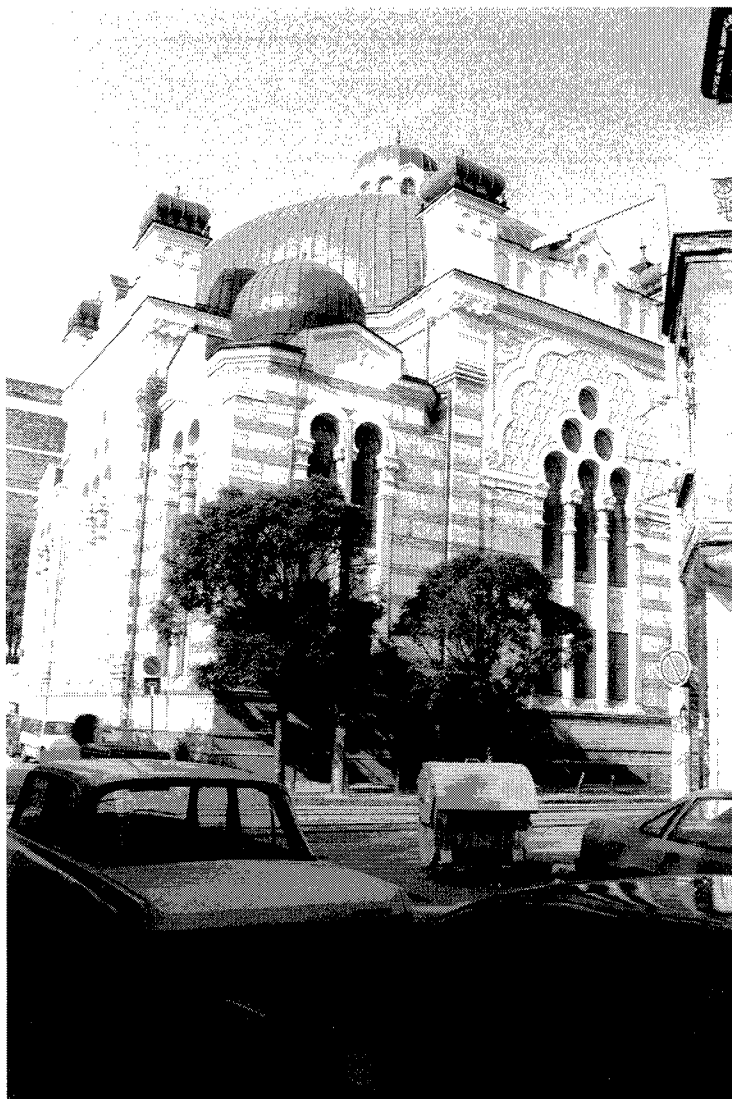
Мóливите са в чантата.	The pencils are in the bag.
Сегá слáгам всíчко в чантата.	Now I'm putting everything into the bag.

#### 4.7. Subjectless sentences

Bulgarian sentences which describe general conditions do not have a subject. English, by contrast, must use the subject “it”. For example:

Тúка е задúшно. Задúшно е тúк. It’s stuffy in here.  
Днéc е тóпло. Тóпло е днéc. It is warm today.

In order to translate correctly from English to Bulgarian, this “it” (which linguists call the “dummy it”) must be distinguished from the “it” that refers to something in particular, as in “It’s a house.” Do not use тоvá in Bulgarian unless the “it” is of this second sort.



Synagogue, downtown Sofia

## EXERCISES

I. Fill in the blanks with the appropriate form of the article.

1. Детé \_\_\_ е мно́го голя́мо. Виждаш ли детé \_\_\_?
2. Коридо́р \_\_\_ на вла́к \_\_\_ е тесен. Те́ защо́ сто́ят в коридо́р \_\_\_?
3. Къде́ са мо́ливи \_\_\_? В ча́нта \_\_\_ или в ку́фар \_\_\_?
4. Къде́ е трамва́ \_\_\_? Има ли мя́сто в трамва́ \_\_\_?
5. Обу́вки \_\_\_ са под пе́йка \_\_\_. Виждаш ли обу́вки \_\_\_?
6. Дим \_\_\_ е мно́го опа́сен. Седя́ далече́ от дим \_\_\_.
7. Влезте́ в кабинéт \_\_\_ на ле́кар \_\_\_. Ле́кар \_\_\_ е ту́ка.

II. Fill in the blanks with the appropriate form of one of the following verbs: затва́рям / затво́ря; вли́зам / вля́за; оста́вам / оста́на; тръ́гвам / тръ́гна; ка́звам / ка́жа; ся́дам / се́дна.

1. Не \_\_\_\_\_ в купéто, няма мя́сто.
2. Мо́ля ви се, \_\_\_\_\_ врата́та, ста́ва течéние.
3. \_\_\_\_\_ ту́ка о́ще ма́лко, не \_\_\_\_\_!
4. \_\_\_\_\_ и́стината.
5. Не \_\_\_\_\_ това́, ако не é и́стина.
6. Защо́ стои́ш до врата́та? \_\_\_\_\_, \_\_\_\_\_ на пе́йката!
7. Не \_\_\_\_\_ на та́зи пе́йка, не é чи́ста.

III. Fill in the blanks with the appropriate verb of body position.

1. Ка́мен и На́дка пъту́ват за Со́фия. Те́ \_\_\_\_\_ до прозо́реца.
2. Ка́мене, \_\_\_\_\_ на сто́ла!
3. Ка́мене, \_\_\_\_\_ от сто́ла!
4. В коридо́ра на вла́ка има́ мно́го хо́ра. Те́ \_\_\_\_\_ пра́ви.
5. Ку́чето спи́. То́ \_\_\_\_\_ под пе́йката.
6. \_\_\_\_\_, Ка́мене. Мно́го е къ́сно.
7. За момче́то няма́ мя́сто. То́ \_\_\_\_\_ на по́да. А́нгел ка́зва:  
“ \_\_\_\_\_! По́дът не é чи́ст.”

## ADDITIONAL GRAMMAR NOTES

### 4.1a. Aspect

Perfective verbs imply a meaning of boundedness and imperfective verbs imply the absence of such a meaning. The most frequent sort of boundedness is that of a single instance of an action, usually with a view to its completion. Present tense verb forms are normally used in the perfective only after various conjunctions or particles which signify boundedness. Examples will be seen in the next lesson.

Because of the non-bounded meaning of the imperfective aspect, present tense verb forms are used very frequently in the imperfective. Here are examples of the three primary meanings of the present imperfective:

*action in progress*

Какво рисуваш? Къща ли?  
Таня отваря вратата.

What are you drawing? A house?  
Tanya opens the door.

*generic idea of action*

Пушите ли?  
Надка рисува много добре.

Do you smoke?  
Nadka draws very well.

*habitual, repeated action*

Обикновено почиваме в  
Копривщица.  
Четя усилено други книги.

Usually we go to Koprivshtitsa  
for our vacation.  
I've been reading other books  
in a concentrated fashion.

The perfective aspect can also be used to describe habitual actions in a more vivid, immediate manner. Students are advised to avoid this usage for the present. It takes time, and exposure to the language, to learn the proper emotional contexts for such usage. For example:

Седнем в колата и сме там.

[All we have to do is] get into the car and  
there we are!

Bulgarian dictionaries list many verbs only in the imperfective aspect. Sometimes this is because the meaning of the verb is not compatible with the idea of boundedness (e.g. **имам**, **съм**). More frequently, it is because Bulgarians often consider the basic idea of a verb to be imperfective. Examples of such verbs, which are called “simplex verbs”, are **пиша** “write”, **четя** “read”, **пия** “drink”.

The perfective forms of these verbs are created by adding a prefix to them. Several types of prefixes can be added to these verbs; in each case, the prefix adds a particular sort of bounded meaning to the verb. Bulgarians consider that the addition of a prefix *always* changes the meaning of the verb -- sometimes slightly, sometimes radically. For this reason, every prefixed verb has a separate imperfective verb associated with it, and correspondingly, a separate listing in the dictionary. Here is an example of a “basic” verb, and of an aspect pair related to it by prefixation:

Simplex ( <i>imperfective only</i> )		Aspect pair ( <i>perfective / imperfective</i> )	
Verb	<i>meaning</i>	Verb pair	<i>meaning</i>
гледам	look	разглеждам / разгледам	study, examine

The perfective forms of these basic verbs, and this general type of aspect relationship, will be discussed in Lessons 7, 18 and 26. At this point, the student should focus on learning aspect pairs of the sort **казвам / кажа**.

#### 4.2a. Imperative

Affirmative commands are usually given in the perfective aspect and negative commands in the imperfective aspect. The imperfective imperative can be also used to convey repeated commands, or greater abruptness and a more insistent (and consequently less polite) command. These usages will be studied in later lessons.

Type 1 endings are also added to the irregular verb **дам** “give”, whose present tense conjugation will be learned in Lesson 9. Its imperative is:

<i>present</i>	<i>singular imperative</i>	<i>plural imperative</i>
дам	дай!	дайте!

#### 4.3a. Masculine definite objects

Although the object form of definite masculine nouns is written **-a**, its *sound* remains [-ъ-]. That is, although it has lost the final **-т** of the subject article, both in writing and in pronunciation, it retains the same vowel *sound*. The object form of the article in **-ят** keeps the same vowel letter in the written form, **-я**, although the vowel in all four of these article forms is pronounced as if written [-ъ-]. This pronunciation is especially clear when the article is accented. For example (the apostrophe denotes softening of the preceding consonant):

Димът е много опасен за малките.	[димът]	Smoke is very dangerous for children.
Тé седят далече от димá.	[димь]	They are sitting away from the smoke.
Денят е хубав.	[ден'ът]	It's a nice day.
Работи през деня.	[ден'ь]	He works during the day.

Most Bulgarians do not distinguish definite subjects from objects when speaking, and will often pronounce the subject form without the final -т. The distinction must be made in writing, however.

#### 4.4a. Verbs of body position

The structural similarities between the three different sets of verbs for body position can help the student remember them. These similarities are described below for each of the three types, listed by column number.

(1) <i>imperfective</i>	(2) <i>perfective</i>	(3) <i>imperfective</i>	
сядам	седна	седя	<i>SIT</i>
ставам	стана	стоя	<i>STAND</i>
лягам	легна	лежя	<i>LIE</i>

- (1) Paired imperfective verbs indicating a change of position all belong to the а-conjugation and all have the sound [a] in the root.
- (2) Paired perfective verbs indicating a change of position all belong to the е-conjugation, all have the consonant -н- in them, and all are accented on the stem.
- (3) Unpaired imperfective verbs denoting a state all belong to the и-conjugation, and all are accented on the ending.

Two of these verbs have additional meanings: **ставам** (perfective **стана**) also means “get up [in the morning]”, “become” and “happen”; and **лягам** (perfective **легна**) also means “go to bed”.

#### 4.6a. Prepositions

- (a) The preposition **от** is used to indicate the basic ingredients or material of which something is made. If the ingredient is an added one, the preposition **с** is used. Both these meanings are usually rendered in English by an adjective.

салáта от зéле и мóркови	carrot and cabbage salad
омлét с гьби	mushroom omelet

(b) The basic meaning of the preposition **освѐн** is “except [for]”. The idiomatic expression **освѐн това** means “in addition, besides”.

#### 4.8. Shifting vowels in verb roots

The **е/я** vowel shift, seen earlier in **голям / голѐми**, can also occur in accented verb roots. Two very common such verbs are the perfectives **изляза** “go out” and **вляза** “enter, come in”. Here is the conjugation of **изляза**, with the shifting vowels underlined:

	<i>singular</i>	<i>plural</i>
<i>1<sup>st</sup> person</i>	изл <u>я</u> за	изл <u>е</u> зем
<i>2<sup>nd</sup> person</i>	изл <u>е</u> зеш	изл <u>е</u> зете
<i>3<sup>rd</sup> person</i>	изл <u>е</u> зе	изл <u>я</u> зат
<i>imperative</i>	изл <u>е</u> з!	изл <u>е</u> зте!

The rule governing the alternation is the same as with adjectives: if **-е-** or **-и-** occurs in the following syllable, the alternant **-е-** is used; otherwise the alternant **-я-** is used. In conjugation, present tense forms with the theme vowel **-е-** have the root vowel **-е-**, while the 1<sup>st</sup> singular and 3<sup>rd</sup> plural have the root vowel **-я-**.

The fact that the alternant **-е-** occurs in the imperative of this verb must be learned separately.

#### 4.9. Generic definiteness

Bulgarian uses definite articles in a number of instances where English does not. One of the commonest of these is in referring to general categories. Consider the following sentence, and the several possible English translations:

Течѐнието е мнѐго опѐсно за мѐлките.

Drafts are very dangerous for children.

A draft is a very dangerous thing for children.

A draft is a very dangerous thing for any small person.

Here, the noun **течѐние** refers both to the generic category “draft” and to any one specific instance of this category. Normal English usage is either without an article or with the indefinite article. Bulgarian, however, must use the definite article. Similarly, when the adjectives **мѐлък** and **голям** are used in the definite plural, they can refer both to the generic categories “children” and “adults” and to any particular representatives of these categories. (The neutral words for children and adults are **деца** and **възрастни**, respectively.)

The Bulgarian generic use of the definite article is similar to that found in French and German. English speakers must pay attention to learn this usage.



#### 4.10. Third-plural passives

As in English, third person plural verb forms often convey the idea of the passive mood. The subject is “they”, but the persons to whom the pronoun “they” refers are unspecified. Examples:

Не зна́м какво́ серви́рат.

I don't know what they serve here.  
I don't know what is served here.

Ту́к вся́чко го́твят до́брé.

They cook everything well here.  
Here everything is cooked well.

#### 4.11. Alternate verb forms

Many people in the capital city of Sofia say both зна́я and зна́м in the 1<sup>st</sup> singular of the verb meaning “know”. Both variants are considered correct.



Mosque, downtown Sofia

## **SAMPLE SENTENCES**

1. Деца́та обичат сла́дко.
2. Пу́шенето е опа́сно за здра́вето.
3. Бъ́лгарите пия́т червено́ ви́но.
4. Чове́кът е смър́тен.
5. -- Ви́е ко́й сте?  
-- А́з съ́м Бой́ко Ата́насов.  
-- Ка́къв сте?  
-- Ле́кар съ́м.
6. Ко́й съ́м а́з? Зна́еш ли ко́й съ́м а́з?
7. Ка́къв съ́м а́з? Зна́еш ли ка́къв съ́м а́з?
8. Ка́к се ка́зваш?
9. Кажете́ ка́к се ка́звате!
10. За́къде пъту́вате? То́й пи́та за́къде пъту́вате.
11. Миле́на стои́ пра́ва. Дими́тър ка́зва: “Мо́ля, седни́. Има́ свободо́но мя́сто до прозо́реца.” Миле́на ся́да до прозо́реца. В купе́то вли́зат Та́ня и На́дка. Миле́на се́ди до прозо́реца. Тя ста́ва и ка́зва: “Мо́ля седне́те. Ви́е сте с ма́лко дете́.”
12. Ле́каря́т ка́зва: “Легне́те, има́те ну́жда от прегле́д”. То́й изли́за от ка́бинета́. Пацие́нтът ля́га. Ле́каря́т вли́за. Пацие́нтът ле́жи на легло́то.

**SENTENCES FOR TRANSLATION**

1. “See what there is here?! Beer and rakia! Have [= drink] a beer!”  
“No, this beer seems warm. I don’t like warm beer.”
2. We’re going out for a bit, because we’re getting hungry. Are you hungry too?
3. “Wait a minute! Don’t shut the door! I’m coming in also.”  
“Hurry up! We don’t have much time.”
4. Don’t sit in the draft! Don’t you know that drafts are dangerous?
5. “Ask the waiter where the menu is.”  
“I don’t need a menu. I know what they serve.”  
“Are you saying you know the menu by heart?”
6. Please put the salad and the rakia here. But don’t put the omelet here now.  
We’re not in a hurry.
7. Please put the drawings and the pencil in separate bags. And don’t put the book  
in the bag. I’m reading that book.
8. Come into the water, the lake is very warm today. The children are also coming  
in.
9. Children, don’t come into the house that way! See, this house has a door!
10. Take the bus! Don’t take the tram, it’s very slow.



## **READING SELECTION**

### В ресторанта

Марин: Гладен ли си? Изглеждаш неспокоен.

Пламен: Вече огладнявам. Освен това следобед съм на работа и нямам много време. Виждаш ли сервитьора наблизо?

Марин: Чакай малко. За първи път съм тук. Не знам какво сервираат. Още разглеждам листа.

Пламен: Аз знам менюто наизуст. Поръчвам пържола с гарнитур и шопска салата. Ти какво предпочиташ? Какво гледаш толкова в менюто, не знаеш ли български? Поръчай същото.

Марин: Ти бързаш, но аз не бързам. Винаги избирам бавно. Освен това съм вегетарианец. Ако обичате!

Сервитьорът: Моля!

Марин: Имате ли омлет?

Сервитьорът: Да, разбира се.

Марин: А колко струва?

Сервитьорът: Омлетът с шунка струва 150 лева, омлетът с гъби 130 лева, а омлетът с кашкавал 120 лева.

Марин: А какви салати имате?

Сервитьорът: Салата от зеле и моркови и шопска салата.

Марин: Пламене, тук добре ли правят омлета?

Пламен: Тук всичко готвят добре. И напитките са винаги студени.

Марин: Това ме подсеща. И една малка ракия. С хубава салата винаги пия ракия. А ти?

Пламен: Знаеш, че съм на работа. Не мога.

Марин: Пий една бира тогава. Аз плащам.

Пламен: Бира може. Утре черпя аз.

**GLOSSARY**

ако	if	кола	car, automobile
ако обичате	if you please	кóлко	how much, how many
		кóлко струва?	how much does it cost?
бѝра	beer	кúче	dog
бързам	hurry, be in a hurry	късен	late
веднага	immediately, at once	лѝв	lev (Bulgarian currency)
вземѝ моливите!	pick up the pencils!	120 лѝва	120 levs / leva
взѝмам (or взѝмам) / взѝма	take	лѝгло	(see L. 6 for ending) bed
виждам / видя	see	лѝгна see лягам	
винаги	always	лежá (-ѝш)	lie, be lying
влизам / вляза	enter, go in	лѝст	sheet of paper
водá	water	лягам / лѝгна	lie down, go to bed
въздух	air		
възрастен	adult	мáлките	small ones, children
възрастни	grownups	ме	me (see L. 5)
гарнитýра	garnish	меню́ (neuter)	menu
гледам	look at	мѝл	dear
голѝмите	big ones, adults	мѝло	darling (vocative)
гóтвя	prepare, cook	мóга	can, be able (see L. 5)
гъба	mushroom	мóже	possible, OK
		мóля	please
даѝ, дайте!	give! (see L. 9 for conjugation)	мóля ви се, госпóдине	if you please, sir
далѝче	far, far away	мóля!	at your service
дѝн, -ѝт (pl. дни)	day	мóрков	carrot
дѝм, -ѝт	smoke		
задýшен	stuffy	на рáбота сѝм	be at work, be on the job
затвáрям / затвóря	close	наблѝзо	nearby
зѝле	cabbage	наизýст	by heart, verbatim
знáм = знáя	know	налѝтка	beverage, drink
		неспокóбен	uneasy, restless
избѝрам / избѝра	choose, select	огладнявам / огладнея	get hungry
изглѝждам	look, appear, seem	омлѝт	omelet
излѝзам / излѝза	leave, go out	омлѝт с гъби	mushroom omelet
изучáвам / изúча (-ѝш)	study, make a study of	омлѝт с кашкавáл	cheese omelet
ѝмам нýжда от	need, have need of	омлѝт с шýнка	ham omelet
		опáсен	dangerous
кабинѝт	office (e.g. doctor's)	освѝн	except [for]
кáзвам / кáжа (-ѝш)	say	освѝн товá	besides, in addition
каквó	what for, why	остáвам / остáна	remain, stay
каквó глѝдаш	why are you so	от	[made] of
тóлкова в	absorbed in	отвáрям / отвóря	open
кашкавáл	kashkaval (yellow cheese)	пациѝнт (ка)	patient (medical)

Четвърти урок / Lesson 4

пíтам	ask	слúшам	listen, obey
плáщам / плáтя	pay	смéням / сменя	change, replace
пóд	floor	смъртен	mortal
подсéщам / подсéтя	remind, call to mind	спя	sleep
поръчвам / поръчам	order	ставам / стáна	get up, stand up, become, happen
почивам / почíна	rest, go on holiday	стóл	chair
прáв	straight, upright	стоя	stand, be standing
прáщам / прáтя	send	стоя прáв	stand, remain standing
прéглед	examination (medical)	струвам	cost
предпочítам / предпочетá	prefer	студén	cold
през	during ( <i>see L. 9</i> )	събíрам / съберá	gather
пуша (-иш)	smoke	същото	the same thing
пушене	smoking	сядам / сéдна	sit down, take a seat
първи	first	такá	that way, like that
пържóла	chop, steak	тáм	there
пържóла с гарнитúра	steak with the trimmings	товá ме подсéща	that reminds me
път	time (instance)	тогáва	then, in that case
рáбота	work, job	тóлкова	so much, so many, to such a degree
рáбóтя	work	тръгвам / тръгна	set out, leave
разбíрам / разберá	understand	úтре	tomorrow
разглéждам / разглéдам	examine, study	úтре чéрпя áз	it's my treat tomorrow
ресторáнт	restaurant	хóра	people
салáта	salad	цигáра	cigarette
салáта от зéле	cabbage salad	чéрпя	treat [someone]
салáта от мóркови	carrot salad	чíст	clean
сегá излízам	I'll go out right away	човéк	man, person
сéдна <i>see</i> сядам	have a seat, sir!	шóпска салáта	"Shope salad"
седнéте, господíне!	sit, be seated	шóпски	pertaining to the "Shope"
седя	sit in a drafty place	шúнка	area near Sofia
седя на течéние	serve, have available		ham
сервíрам	waiter		
сервítьор (ка)	put		
слáгам / слóжа (-иш)	afternoon		
следóбед	I have to work this		
следóбед сьм на рáбота	afternoon		

## **CULTURAL COMMENTARY**

### **Forms of address: nicknames**

Nicknames are very common in Bulgaria, and often end in **-ко** or **-че**. The nickname **Митко** is formed from the second syllable of **Димитър** plus **-ко**.

### **Families**

Bulgarians are extremely fond of children. They will usually make special efforts to help pregnant women or mothers with small children.

### **Food and drink: restaurants; vegetables; Shopska salata; drinks with meals**

The range of available options in Bulgarian restaurants is often quite predictable, although in recent years there has been an increase in variety. Meat is normally available. A fried or grilled chop (**пържола**), usually of pork, is a frequent choice. When the menu specifies “garnish” (**гарнитурa**), the main portion of meat will be served together with various accompaniments, usually fried potatoes and/or rice, and stewed or pickled vegetables.

Vegetarianism is not unknown in Bulgaria, although it is not yet common. In the months when fresh fruits and vegetables are readily available, the cuisine centers around them, and in winter months, cheese and eggs are staples.

Salads are very popular in Bulgaria. An especial favorite is “shopska salata” (**шопска салата**), which is composed of chopped cucumber, tomato, onion, and pepper, and is topped with grated feta cheese. It is a particular Bulgarian custom to eat this salad (or at least some of its components) as an accompaniment to a pre-dinner rakia. Bulgarians find incomprehensible the Western custom of eating nuts, pretzels, or popcorn as an accompaniment to alcoholic drinks.

In many parts of Bulgaria, the drinking of rakia is limited to the appetizer portion of the meal; beer or wine are drunk with the main meal. Some Bulgarians will drink rakia throughout, however. Formerly, all drinks were served at room temperature, but in recent years it has become fashionable to drink beer and soft drinks cold. Hospitality decrees that friends should take turns treating each other to drinks. Most drinks come in standard portions. The request of **една малка** (or **една голяма**) **ракия** will bring a standard sized drink.



Refectory, Troyan Monastery (north-central Bulgaria)

## LESSON 5

### **DIALOGUE**

#### Идва един висок човек

// Ангел стои в коридора и пуши. Идва един висок човек. Носи фотоапарат, касетофон, и видеокamera. Ангел го гледа и мисли. Какъв ли е този човек? Исква да го пита, но не знае как. //

Веселин: Извинете, искам да мина.

Ангел: Заповядайте, минете.

Веселин: Не мога, няма място.

Ангел: Защо носите толкова много? Гледам ви и се чужда. Какво работите?

Веселин: Журналист съм.

Ангел: А-а! Журналист! За къде пътувате?

Веселин: Отивам в Габрово, на фестивала.

Ангел: На кой фестивал?

Веселин: На фестивала на хумора и сатирата, разбира се.

Ангел: Аха, затова носиш тези апарати! Не са ли тежки?

Веселин: Тежки са, разбира се.

Ангел: Сложй ги на пода тогава! А не, не в коридора. Ела да влезем в купето. Хайде да изпием по една ракия.

Веселин: Не мога да вляза. Исквам да намеря свободно място. Това купе е пълно, нали?

Ангел: Да, пълно е, но децата могат да седнат заедно.

// Веселин иска да продължи по коридора, но в този момент забелязва Джули, и си казва -- Коя ли е тази хубавица? //

Веселин: Добре, хайде да влезем!



## BASIC GRAMMAR

### 5.1. Infinitive replacements

Where other languages use infinitives, Bulgarian uses a phrase composed of *да* + the present tense form of the verb. Such “*да*-phrases” have a number of uses in Bulgarian, but the most common is in this function of infinitive meaning.

Verbs used in *да*-phrases must have the proper personal ending. Because subject pronouns are often omitted in Bulgarian, it is especially crucial to have the right verb ending. In many cases, the verb of the *да*-phrase has the same ending as the verb upon which it depends. In these instances, the English translation uses a simple infinitive. For example:

Искам	да	намеря	свободно място.
I want	to	find	an empty seat.
Искам	да	мина.	
I want	to	pass by.	
Деца̀та	искат	да	седнат за̀едно.
The children	want	to	sit together.

In the above sentences, the one who wants the action performed is the same as the one who would perform it: both verbs have the same subject.

It is often the case, however, that the two verbs do not have the same subject. In these instances, the English translation must name the second subject. Furthermore, the identity of the Bulgarian *subject* is named by an English *object* pronoun. Care must therefore be taken both to get the right ending on the Bulgarian verb in the *да*-phrase, and not to be confused by the structure of the corresponding English sentence. In the following example, the meaning of the English pronoun “them” must be expressed by the 3<sup>rd</sup> plural ending on the Bulgarian verb *дойдат*.

Искаме	да	дойдат	и то̀зи пъ̀т.	
We want	them	to	come	this time too.

Not every Bulgarian *да*-phrase corresponds to an infinitive in English. After the verb “can”, for instance, English adds the verb directly. But Bulgarian treats this sequence of two verbs as any other infinitive replacement. (Thinking of the verb “can” as “be able” may help the student produce the correct construction in Bulgarian.) For example:

Не искам да вляза.  
I don't want to come in.

Не мога да вляза.  
I can't come in.  
I'm not able to come in.

Infinitive replacements are also common after the word **хайде**. This word, which is unchanging in form, usually refers to a group of which the speaker considers himself a member. The verb following it, therefore, is usually 1<sup>st</sup> plural. **Хайде** can also be used without a verb; in these cases a verb must be understood.

Хайде да влезем.	Let's go in.
Хайде да изпием по една ракия!	Let's each drink a rakia!
Хайде по една глътка!	Let's each [have] a drink!

### 5.2. The verb мога

The conjugation of the verb **мога** "can, be able" is slightly irregular, in that the stem-final consonant **-г-** shifts to **-ж-** before the theme vowel **-е-**.

	<i>singular</i>	<i>plural</i>
1 <sup>st</sup> person	МОГ-а	МОЖ-ем
2 <sup>nd</sup> person	МОЖ-еш	МОЖ-ете
3 <sup>rd</sup> person	МОЖ-е	МОГ-ат

### 5.3. Aspect choice in да-phrases

Perfective verbs signify an action which is bounded in some way. Infinitive replacement phrases often suggest this boundedness, and for this reason perfective verbs are very common after **да**.

The boundedness meaning is usually that of completion. When a speaker expresses her desire *to do* something, or exhorts someone else *to do* something, her focus is usually on the successful completion of a particular action. Compare the following, in which all the verbs following **да** are perfective:

Искам да мина.	I want to get by.
Искам да намеря свободно място.	I want to find an empty seat.
Хайде да влезем!	Let's go in.
Хайде да изпием по една бира.	Let's each have a beer.

Likewise, the verb **мóга** “can” is almost always followed by a perfective verb, since the essential focus is on the desired completion of an action. This is the case whether or not the particular action is seen as possible or impossible.

Imperfective verbs can appear after **да** if the specific meaning of boundedness is absent. The first of the two examples below, for instance, describes the speaker’s state of wishing he could ask for more information but not being able to do so. Since no boundedness is implied, the imperfective verb **пíтам** is used.

The second describes a speaker’s state after the doctor has told him he must stay inside the house for an extended period of time. Since the “going out” is not bounded to any single conceivable instance but rather covers the whole span of many possible instances, the imperfective verb **излíзам** is used.

И́ска да го пíта, но не знáе кáк.    He wants to ask him, but doesn’t know how [to go about it].  
 Не мóга да излíзам -- бóлен сьм.    I can’t go out -- I’m sick.

#### 5.4. Direct object pronouns

Bulgarian distinguishes three cases in personal pronouns: subject, direct object and indirect object. Subject pronouns were learned in Lesson 1. This lesson presents direct object pronouns. Indirect object pronouns will be learned in Lesson 7.

In the following chart, direct object pronouns are given alongside subject pronouns, for ease of comparison:

	<i>subject</i>	<i>direct object</i>
<i>1<sup>st</sup> singular</i>	áз	ме
<i>2<sup>nd</sup> singular</i>	тí	те
<i>reflexive</i>		се
<i>3<sup>d</sup> singular</i>		
<i>feminine</i>	тя́	я
<i>masculine</i>	то́й	го
<i>neuter</i>	то́	го
<i>1<sup>st</sup> plural</i>	ни́е	ни
<i>2<sup>nd</sup> plural</i>	ви́е	ви
<i>3<sup>d</sup> plural</i>	те́	ги

The particle *се* is included in this chart under the category “reflexive”, which is the traditional name given by Bulgarian grammarians to it. Its range of usage is much wider, however.

Subject pronouns are fully accented words and may stand in any position in the sentence. Object pronouns are clitics, and obey the word order rules given in Lesson 1. That is, they may not occur at the beginning of a sentence or phrase, and they must occur adjacent to the verb on which they depend. In essence, this means that object pronouns precede the verb directly unless the verb stands at the beginning, in which case they follow the verb directly. The following two examples demonstrate this rule. In the first, the object pronoun stands directly in front of the verb it depends on. In the second, however, the verb begins the sentence, and the object pronoun must come directly after it.

А̀нгел го глѐда и мѝсли.  
Сложѝ ги на по̀да!

Angel is looking at him and thinking.  
Put them on the floor!

### 5.5. Usage of direct objects

The meaning of “direct object” in Bulgarian is the same as in English: the person or object which is most directly affected by the action of the verb. In Bulgarian, as in English, direct objects follow the verb directly, without an intervening preposition. For instance:

Put	the books	on the floor.
Сложѝ	кнѝгите	на по̀да!
<i>verb</i>	<i>direct object</i>	<i>prepositional phrase</i>

You	are carrying	a lot of baggage.
(Тѝ)	но̀сиш	мно̀го бага̀ж.
<i>subject</i>	<i>verb</i>	<i>direct object</i>

Bulgarian and English usage happen to coincide in the case of the above two verbs. In a number of other instances, however, what is a direct object in Bulgarian will be expressed by a prepositional phrases in English. For instance:

А̀нгел	глѐда	чо̀вѐка.
<i>subject</i>	<i>verb</i>	<i>direct object</i>

Angel	looks	at the man.
<i>subject</i>	<i>verb</i>	<i>prepositional phrase</i>

One must be wary of literal translation in such instances. The usage of a verb is part of its overall meaning, and needs to be learned along with that meaning.

Direct object pronouns are used after the impersonal expression **няма** "there isn't" and the pointing word **это**.

Къде е Иван?	Where is Ivan?
Не зна́я. Няма го тук.	I don't know. There's no sign of him.
Къде е тази книга?	Where is that book?
Не зна́я. А, это я.	I don't know. Oh, here it is.

### 5.6. Interrogative pronouns

Like other pronouns, the interrogative pronoun "who, which" expresses gender and number. Here are the forms:

<i>masculine</i>	<i>feminine</i>	<i>neuter</i>	<i>plural</i>
ко́й	коя́	коё	кой

The neutral question word for "who" is **ко́й**. That is, if nothing is known of the sex of the person queried about, the masculine form **ко́й** is used.

Ко́й се́ди на това́ мя́сто?	Who ( <i>unspecified</i> ) is sitting in this seat?
-----------------------------	---

If the sex is known, however, the appropriate form is used:

Весели́н забеля́зва Джу́ли и си ка́зва -- Ко́я е та́зи хубави́ца?	Veselin sees Julie and says to himself, "Who ( <i>feminine</i> ) is this beauty?"
---	--

When the interrogative pronoun modifies a noun, it agrees with its noun and has the meaning "which". For example:

-- На ко́й фести́ва́л?	"To which ( <i>masculine</i> ) festival?"
-- На фести́ва́ла на ху́мора и са́тирата, разби́ра се.	"To the festival of humor and satire, of course."

### 5.7. Motion verbs

The basic verbs for "come" and "go" in Bulgarian are

	<i>imperfective</i>	<i>perfective</i>
come	идв-ам	дойд-а
go	отив-ам	отид-а

Both verbs carry within them the meaning of directedness; that is, of someone coming or going *towards* a particular end-point (even if that end-point is not explicitly specified). The idea of directedness is reinforced by the presence of *от-* and *до-* in certain of these verbs. The similarity to the prepositions meaning “from” and “to” can help remind the student of the “directed” meaning of these verbs.

By contrast, the verb *вървя* (which, with rare exceptions, exists only in the imperfective aspect) implies the absence of any direction. For this reason, it is usually translated “walk”. It can also, however, be translated “go”, “come”, “move”, or any of a number of verbs signifying locomotion. The primary difference between *вървя* and the other verbs is the factor of directedness. For example:

**ИДВАМ**

А̀нгел стои в коридо̀ра.  
Ѝдва един висо̀к чо̀век.

Angel is standing in the corridor.  
A tall man comes [towards him].

**ОТИВАМ**

-- За къде пътувате?  
-- Отивам в Габрово, на фестивала.

“Where are you headed for?”  
“I’m going to Gabrovo,  
to the festival.”

**ВЪРВЯ**

Веселин върви по коридора.  
Влакът върви много бавно.

Veselin walks down the corridor.  
The train is going very slowly.

In the first two sets of examples, an end-point of the movement is either implied or stated directly. Those in the last set, however, explicitly avoid mention of an end-point.

**5.8. Double interrogatives**

Normally, questions have either a question word or the question particle *ли*. When a question has both of these, the meaning “I wonder...” is added.

Какъв ли е този човек?

I wonder what kind of a man this is?

**5.9. Prepositions**

(a) Both *в* and *на* can mean “to”. While many of the specific differences are idiomatic, there is a tendency for *в* to refer to specific physical locations which one can enter, while *на* is more likely to refer to abstract ideas, events, general locales, or

Петти урок / Lesson 5

places conceived of as surfaces rather than enclosures. Consider the following examples:

Отивам	в Габрово,	на фестивала.
I'm going	to Gabrovo,	to the festival.
	<i>[a city one can enter]</i>	<i>[an event]</i>

Сложй ги	на пода.	А не,	не в коридора.
Put them down	on the floor.	Ah, no,	not in the corridor.
	<i>[onto a surface]</i>		<i>[within the enclosure of a space]</i>

The student is advised to watch the usage of **в** and **на**, and learn examples idiomatically until s/he gets a feel for it.

The preposition **на** can also mean possession. For example, the first **на** in the following sentence means "to", while the second **на** signifies possession:

Отивам на фестивала на хумора	I'm going to the festival of humor
и сатирата, разбира се.	and satire, of course.

(b) The basic meaning of **по** is "along, down". For example:

Веселин йска да продължй по	Veselin intends to continue down the
коридора, но в този момент...	corridor, but at that instant...

**По** also has many other meanings, however. One of these is "according to, of, in the manner of". For example:

Йскам да ги посрещна по	I want to entertain them in the
български.	Bulgarian manner. <i>[à la bulgare]</i>
учебник по български	a Bulgarian textbook <i>[textbook</i>
	<i>of the Bulgarian language]</i>
преподавател по български	Bulgarian teacher <i>[a teacher</i>
	<i>who teaches Bulgarian]</i>

## EXERCISES

I. Fill in the blanks with the appropriate personal endings.

1. Искам да намер \_\_\_\_\_ шапката на Андрей.
2. Искам и Тания да вид \_\_\_\_\_ шапката на Андрей.
3. Моля, идете да посрещн \_\_\_\_\_ Джули на гарата.
4. Съветвам Ангел да слъш \_\_\_\_\_ какво казвате.
5. Седни! Искаш ли аз да свар \_\_\_\_\_ едно кафе?
6. Не мога да разбер \_\_\_\_\_ какво казваш.
7. Джули продължава да уч \_\_\_\_\_ български.

II. Fill in the blanks with the appropriate form of the interrogative pronoun (кой, коя, кое, кои).

1. \_\_\_\_\_ от тези жени е кондукторка?
2. От \_\_\_\_\_ шоколад искаш да купим?
3. Аз говоря български и английски. На \_\_\_\_\_ език искаш да говорим?
4. \_\_\_\_\_ дете може да брои до сто?
5. \_\_\_\_\_ е на телефона?
6. \_\_\_\_\_ книги връщаш в библиотеката?
7. \_\_\_\_\_ е тази непозната жена?

III. Rewrite the following sentences, replacing the underlined nouns with the correct pronouns.

1. Тания познава Иван добре.
2. Димитър иска да види тези студенти.
3. Джули и Дейвид не пият ракия.
4. Коста не може да намери селото на картата.
5. Веселин за съжаление не познава тази хубавица.
6. Къде отива момчето? Не виждам това момче.
7. Кой знае този урок? Кой може да върне тези книги в библиотеката?



## ADDITIONAL GRAMMAR NOTES

### 5.1a. Infinitive replacements

Sentences such as “I want them to come” are notably difficult for English speakers to translate into Bulgarian. This is partly because in such sentences the English *object* pronoun (here, “them”) denotes *subject* meaning (in this case, “they” are the ones who “will come”). In a neutral meaning, the Bulgarian translation of this sentence does not use a pronoun at all. If emphasis is intended, however, the subject pronoun (in this case, *те* “they”) will be used:

Искам и *те* да дойдат.                      I want *them* to come as well.

The problem is further complicated by the fact that in such sentences an English object pronoun can sometimes also correspond to a Bulgarian object pronoun:

Аз	<i>те</i> 2sg object	съветвам	да дойдеш. 2sg verb	I advise you to come.
Искам	<i>ти</i> 2sg subject		да дойдеш. 2sg verb	I want <i>you</i> to come.

In both sentences, the subject of the verb *дойдеш* “come” is the second person singular *ти* “you”. It is explicitly stated in the second sentence, but only because the meaning is emphatic. It is omitted from the first sentence because its meaning has already been introduced by the object pronoun *те* (which is the object of the verb *съветвам* “advise”).

The contrast is seen more clearly when the verbs and pronouns are third person singular, where there is a more marked difference between subject and object pronouns.

Аз	<i>я</i> 3sg object	съветвам	да дойде. 3sg verb	I advise her to come.
Искам	<i>тя</i> 3sg subject		да дойде. 3sg verb	I want <i>her</i> to come.

In order to translate these sentences correctly into Bulgarian, one must determine the relationship between the verb preceding *да* in Bulgarian and the pronoun which always appears as an English object (e.g. “her” in the English sentences above). If the verb takes a pronoun object, then the correct pronoun in Bulgarian is the object one. But if the verb takes an entire phrase as its object, then the correct pronoun in Bulgarian is the subject one. This can be represented schematically as follows:

Аз я съветвам да дойде. (a) I advise her (b) she [is] to come

Искам тя да дойде. (a) I want (b) she [is] to come

Each of these sentences can be broken down into two components, which are represented above as (a) and (b). The (a) portion of each sentence is what comes before the *да*, and the (b) portion is what comes after it. In the first example, the “she” of part (b) simply disappears into the “her” of part (a). In the second example, however, the “she” of part (b) must move up into part (a). In English it turns into an object when it moves up, but in Bulgarian it remains a subject.

#### 5.4a. Object pronouns and word order

Word order rules involving verbal clitics are quite complex in Bulgarian, and for this reason they will be learned gradually. Since clitics are unaccented, they are spoken quickly and are often hard to hear. Special care must be taken, therefore, to learn the rules governing their placement.

To help the student become aware of these rules, examples will be given using a notation developed for this purpose. All rules learned in this book are given according to this notational format, together with a full list of abbreviations used, in Lesson 15. Within lessons, word order rules are explained and illustrated with examples in which the relevant words are identified notationally. Sentences are given either in complete form, or with sufficient grammar to illustrate the context; only the portion of each sentence relevant to the word order rule being learned, however, is specifically analyzed.

According to this notational analysis, abbreviations identifying clitics are written entirely in capital letters, those identifying fully-accented words (upon which clitics can depend) are written entirely in lower-case letters, and those identifying conjunctions which are unstressed but which may begin a sentence (and therefore are not clitics) are written with a capital letter. The following examples illustrate this notation.

(1) 

Иска	да	го	пита	но...
<i>verb</i>	<i>Cnj.</i>	<i>DIR</i>	<i>verb</i>	

He wants to ask him but...

(2) 

Гледам	ви	и	се	чудя.
<i>verb</i>	<i>DIR</i>	<i>Cnj.</i>	<i>DIR</i>	<i>verb</i>

I look at you and am amazed.

### Placement of object pronouns

The basic rule is that a pronoun verbal object must be directly adjacent to the verb it depends on, and that it must follow at least one accented word.

- (3) 

Ангел	го	гледа
<i>subj.</i>	<i>DIR</i>	<i>verb</i>

 и мисли.

Angel looks at him and thinks.

- (4) 

Сложи	ги
<i>verb</i>	<i>DIR</i>

 на пода.

Put them on the floor.

### Conjunctions and negation

The conjunction *да* occupies a special position in this schema: it has no accent of its own, but it is not a clitic. This means that it (like other conjunctions) can function as an accented word for purposes of clitic placement. The word order of *да*-phrases is very rigid: the verb must follow *да* directly unless the verb has a pronoun object. In this case the pronoun object *must* come directly between *да* and the verb. Example (1) above illustrates this rule.

For word order purposes, the negative particle *не* acts like the conjunction *да*, requiring clitics to follow it directly. Remember that a clitic following the negative particle is accented.

- (5) Ангел 

не	го	гледа.
<i>Neg.</i>	<i>DIR</i>	<i>verb</i>

Angel does not look at him.

- (6) 

Не	ги	слагај
<i>Neg.</i>	<i>DIR</i>	<i>verb</i>

 на пода.

Don't put them on the floor!

### The question particle

In a neutral question, the interrogative particle *ли* always follows the verb, and must come between the verb and any pronoun object. (It follows from this that clitics can never precede the verb in this type of question.) If both negative and interrogative particles are present, the pronoun object comes between them.

- (7) Ангел 

гледа	ли	го?
<i>verb</i>	<i>INT</i>	<i>DIR</i>

Is Angel looking at him?

- (8) 

Слагај	ли	ги
<i>verb</i>	<i>INT</i>	<i>DIR</i>

 на пода?

Are you putting them on the floor?

- (9) 

Не	ги	ли	слагај
<i>Neg.</i>	<i>DIR</i>	<i>INT</i>	<i>verb</i>

 на пода?

Aren't you putting them on the floor?

**5.4b. Predicates and word order**

When present tense forms of the verb **сѣм** are used to connect a subject and a predicate noun or adjective, they function as the copula of the sentence. These copula forms are clitics, and follow rules very similar to those formulated above for object pronouns. They cannot stand in initial position, they always occur adjacent to the predicate noun or adjective, and they must follow the negative or interrogative particle directly.

When both negative and interrogative particles are present, the copula is placed between them. This is the only time when the copula does not occur directly adjacent to the predicate noun or adjective. Here are examples, with numbering consecutive across lessons:

- |                  |   |              |                  |                  |                  |                |             |                 |                  |                        |
|------------------|---|--------------|------------------|------------------|------------------|----------------|-------------|-----------------|------------------|------------------------|
| (10)             | <table border="0" style="display: inline-table;"> <tr> <td style="padding: 0 10px;"><b>Тѣжки</b></td> <td style="padding: 0 10px;"><b>са.</b></td> </tr> <tr> <td style="padding: 0 10px;"><i>predicate</i></td> <td style="padding: 0 10px;"><i>COP</i></td> </tr> </table>  | <b>Тѣжки</b> | <b>са.</b>       | <i>predicate</i> | <i>COP</i>       | They're heavy. |             |                 |                  |                        |
| <b>Тѣжки</b>     | <b>са.</b>  |              |                  |                  |                  |                |             |                 |                  |                        |
| <i>predicate</i> | <i>COP</i>  |              |                  |                  |                  |                |             |                 |                  |                        |
| (11)             | <table border="0" style="display: inline-table;"> <tr> <td style="padding: 0 10px;"><b>Не,</b></td> <td style="padding: 0 10px;"><b>не</b></td> <td style="padding: 0 10px;"><b>са</b></td> <td style="padding: 0 10px;"><b>тѣжки.</b></td> </tr> <tr> <td></td> <td style="padding: 0 10px;"><i>Neg.</i></td> <td style="padding: 0 10px;"><i>COP</i></td> <td style="padding: 0 10px;"><i>predicate</i></td> </tr> </table>                                   | <b>Не,</b>   | <b>не</b>        | <b>са</b>        | <b>тѣжки.</b>    |                | <i>Neg.</i> | <i>COP</i>      | <i>predicate</i> | No, they're not heavy. |
| <b>Не,</b>       | <b>не</b>   | <b>са</b>    | <b>тѣжки.</b>    |                  |                  |                |             |                 |                  |                        |
|                  | <i>Neg.</i>   | <i>COP</i>   | <i>predicate</i> |                  |                  |                |             |                 |                  |                        |
| (12)             | <table border="0" style="display: inline-table;"> <tr> <td style="padding: 0 10px;"><b>Тѣжки</b></td> <td style="padding: 0 10px;"><b>ли</b></td> <td style="padding: 0 10px;"><b>са?</b></td> </tr> <tr> <td style="padding: 0 10px;"><i>predicate</i></td> <td style="padding: 0 10px;"><i>INT</i></td> <td style="padding: 0 10px;"><i>COP</i></td> </tr> </table>   | <b>Тѣжки</b> | <b>ли</b>        | <b>са?</b>       | <i>predicate</i> | <i>INT</i>     | <i>COP</i>  | Are they heavy? |                  |                        |
| <b>Тѣжки</b>     | <b>ли</b>   | <b>са?</b>   |                  |                  |                  |                |             |                 |                  |                        |
| <i>predicate</i> | <i>INT</i>  | <i>COP</i>   |                  |                  |                  |                |             |                 |                  |                        |
| (13)             | <table border="0" style="display: inline-table;"> <tr> <td style="padding: 0 10px;"><b>Не</b></td> <td style="padding: 0 10px;"><b>са</b></td> <td style="padding: 0 10px;"><b>ли</b></td> <td style="padding: 0 10px;"><b>тѣжки?</b></td> </tr> <tr> <td style="padding: 0 10px;"><i>Neg.</i></td> <td style="padding: 0 10px;"><i>COP</i></td> <td style="padding: 0 10px;"><i>INT</i></td> <td style="padding: 0 10px;"><i>predicate</i></td> </tr> </table> | <b>Не</b>    | <b>са</b>        | <b>ли</b>        | <b>тѣжки?</b>    | <i>Neg.</i>    | <i>COP</i>  | <i>INT</i>      | <i>predicate</i> | Aren't they heavy?     |
| <b>Не</b>        | <b>са</b>   | <b>ли</b>    | <b>тѣжки?</b>    |                  |                  |                |             |                 |                  |                        |
| <i>Neg.</i>      | <i>COP</i>  | <i>INT</i>   | <i>predicate</i> |                  |                  |                |             |                 |                  |                        |

All of the above word order patterns will be drilled in later lessons.

**5.7a. Motion verbs**

The **от-** and the **до-** in the motion verbs **отѣвам**, **отѣда** and **дѣда** are called prefixes. Prefixes are similar to, but not identical with, prepositions; this relationship will be discussed later. All four directional motion verbs contain the same root, **-ид-**, although its form is slightly obscured in **отѣвам** (compare **ѣдвам**, where the **-д-** has been retained before the suffix **-вам**) and in **дѣда** (where the **-и-** has shifted to **-ѣ-**).

This bare root is found in the verb **ѣда**, which can be used in place of **отѣда**. There is no essential difference in meaning. **ѣда** is especially frequent in the imperative:

**Иди в магази́на!**      Go to the store!

The imperative form of **дѣда** is a Greek borrowing, completely unrelated to it in form. The imperative of **ѣдвам** is regular, however.

<i>indicative</i>	<i>imperative</i>	
	<i>singular</i>	<i>plural</i>

дóйда	елá	елáте
íдвам	не íдвай	не íдвайте

Bulgarians use *íдвам* and *дóйда* as any other aspect pair. Bulgarian dictionaries, however, list them as two separate verbs. Officially, the imperfective of *дóйда* is the rarely used *дохóждам*.

### 5.10. Contrastive negation

When it negates a verb, the negative particle *не* is unstressed. When it is used contrastively, to negate another part of speech or when standing alone, it bears accent. For example:

А нé, нé в коридóра.

Oh no, not in the corridor.

-- Дeтéто гoвóри ли?

"Does the child talk?"

-- Óще нé.

"Not yet."



Professor Stayko Kabasanov with traditional Rhodope bagpipe player and singer

## **SAMPLE SENTENCES**

1. Тóй íска да четé кнীগи. Тóй íска да прочетé тáзи кнীগá.
2. Обикновéно слáгам кнীগите в чáнтата. Сегá не íскам да ги слóжа в чáнтата.
3. Лиляна пíше (едно) писмó. Íска да го напише.
4. -- Отíвам с Веселín на кíно. Елá и тí!  
-- Íскам да дóйда, но не мóга.
5. -- Идí за хляб.  
-- Не знáя къдé е магазíнът.  
-- И аз идвам тогáва.
6. Задúшно е, отвáрям вратáта. Тáня я затвáря.
7. Бóб е бóлен. Слáгам го да лéгне.
8. Тí ме пíташ кáк се кáзвам.
9. Аз те виждам оттúка.
10. Тóй вíнаги кáзва íстината.
11. Бóйко обíча децáта. И Бóб ги обíча.



Ruins of Byzantine basilica, Nesebăr

## SENTENCES FOR TRANSLATION

1. Look, here comes Lilyana! Do you see her? Why is she walking so slowly?
2. Don't you want to come to the movies today? Let's go! Ivan is at the theater already, and he wants us to meet him there.
3. The Bulgarian teacher advises you to go to the library often. She wants you to go there now. She wants us to study these lessons well. Of course, we also want to know them.
4. I need this book. Are you reading it? If you are not reading it, please put it on the table. Then I can read it. Or do you want me to return it to the library?
5. We are going to the station now. Milena is coming from Gabrovo and we want to meet her. Do you want to come too? Come on, let's go!
6. Who is calling? Do you want to speak with Tanya? She can't come to the phone right now. She is with the children. She is putting them to bed.
7. Which book do you advise me to read? I don't want to read a textbook, I want to read a novel. Which Bulgarian novels are good? Can you read them?
8. "Ivo can't open the window, he is [too] small. Can you open it, please?"  
"Which window do you want me to open? But then let's close the door. Can you close it, please?"

**READING SELECTION**

Кореспонденция - (4)

31 август, Сѳия

Драга Патриша,

Имам една радостна новина, бързам да я съобщя. Седя днес в кухнята и четя. Изведнъж звънецът звъни. Ставам, отварям вратата и какво виждам? Едно непознато момиче. Откъде идва? От пощата! Носи съобщение за колет. От Америка! Вземам чантата и тръгвам за пощата.

Много благодаря за учебника, Патриша! Той идва съвсем навреме. Подготовката върви идеално. Изпитът, казват, не е много труден. Пиши от какво имаш нужда? Аз мога ли с нещо да се реванширам?

Целувам те,

Калина

14 септември, Сан Франциско

Драга Калина,

Значи учебникът е вече в Сѳия. Радвам се. Успех на изпита! Ние сме добре. Емили тръгва отново на училище. Боб работи, а Майкъл играе с децата на съседите.

Скоро Боб има рожден ден. Винаги идват на гости приятели. Искаме да дойдат и този път. Имам една страхотна идея. Искам да ги посрещнем екзотично, по български. Имаме българска народна музика. Тука в магазините има българско вино. Мога да сготвя български гозби. Какво ме съветваш да сготвя? Искам нещо типично, ефектно, но не много сложно.

Пиши!

Патриша



**GLOSSARY**

август	August	иди за хляб!	go buy some bread
апарат	apparatus, equipment	изведнѣж	suddenly
аха	aha	извинявам / извиня	pardon, excuse
библиотека	library	изпивам / изпия	drink up
в този момент	then, at that point in time	изпит	exam, test
ви	you ( <i>object pronoun</i> )	искам	want
видеокамера	video camera	какво работите?	what [kind of] work do you do?
висок	tall, high	какъв ли е той?	what's he like, I wonder?
връщам / върна	return	карта	card, map
гара	Station (bus, train)	касетофон	cassette player
ги	them ( <i>object pronoun</i> )	кафе	coffee, cup of coffee
го	him, it ( <i>obj. pronoun</i> )	кино	cinema, movies
гозба	dish	кой, коя, кое, кои	who, which
гост	guest	колѣт	parcel, package
да	( <i>subordinating conjunction</i> )	кондуктор (ка)	conductor
искам да дойда	I want to come	купувам / купя	buy, purchase
не мога да дойда	I can't come	кухня	kitchen
до	[up] to	ли	( <i>question particle</i> )
дохождам / дойда	come, arrive (5.7a)	магазин	store
екзотичен	exotic	ме	me ( <i>object pronoun</i> )
ела	come!	минавам / мина	pass
елегантен	elegant	мисля	think
ефектен	effective	момѣнт	moment
журналист (ка)	journalist	музика	music
забелязвам / забележа (-иш)	notice, spot	на телефона съм	be (talking) on the phone
заедно	together	навреме	on time
заповядай	help yourself!	намирам / намеря	find
заповядвам / заповядам	command, order	написвам / напиша (-еш)	write, write down, finish writing
затова	therefore, thus	народен	national, folk
звънец	bell	не	( <i>contrastive negation</i> )
звъня	ring	не там	not there [but elsewhere]
играя	play	непознат	unknown
ида	come, go	нещо	something
идвам	come	ни	us ( <i>object pronoun</i> )
идвам на гости	come/go to visit	новина	[a piece of] news
идеален	ideal	отивам / отида	go
идея	idea	оттука	from here
		още не	not yet
		по	along, down
		по	according to, in the manner of

Пети урок / Lesson 5

подготóвка	preparation	съвсém наврème	at exactly the right moment
подготóвката върви	the preparation's coming along	съобщáвам / съобщя	announce, inform
посрещам / посрещна	meet, greet, entertain	съобщéние	announcement
преподавател по бългáрски	teacher of Bulgarian	съобщéние за колét	postal notice for a package
продължáвам / продължá (-иш)	continue	съсéd (ка)	neighbor
прочítам / прочетá	read (to completion)	те	you ( <i>object pronoun</i> )
пълн	full	телефóн	telephone
ра́двам се	rejoice, be happy	трудо́н	difficult
ра́достен	happy, joyful	тръгвам на	start school
реванши́рам се	make up, return a favor	учи́лище	
реванши́рам се с не́що	make [it] up by doing something	уро́к	lesson
рождéн	birth ( <i>adj.</i> )	успéх	success
рождéн дeн	birthday	успéх на изпита	good luck on the test
са́тира	satire	уча (-иш)	learn, teach
сваря́вам / сваря	cook, boil	учи́лище	school
сгóтвям / сгóтвя се	cook, make oneself ( <i>object pronoun</i> )	фестивáл	festival
септémври	September	фотоапа́рат	camera
си	to oneself ( <i>see L. 7</i> )	хля́б	bread
сла́гам да лeгне	put [someone] to bed	хубави́ца	beauty
слóжен	difficult, complex	хумо́р	humor
стó	[a] hundred	целу́вам / целу́на	kiss
страхóтен	horrible, dreadful, terrifying	чудя се	wonder
страхóтна идéя	[a] terrific idea	ша́пка	hat
съвeтвам	advise	шокола́д	chocolate
съвсém	completely	я	her ( <i>object pronoun</i> )



## CULTURAL COMMENTARY

### Geography: Gabrovo

Gabrovo (Габрово) is a town in north central Bulgaria. The residents of this town are known for their sense of humor, and for the jokes they tell about themselves. Most of these jokes turn on their sense of "economy", and are similar to the jokes Scotsmen tell about themselves. These jokes have become so famous that the town of Gabrovo now holds an annual week-long "festival of humor". It is a very popular tourist event, for which tickets are hard to obtain.

### Families

Bulgarians have a highly developed sense of family. Sometimes this sense of "family" extends even into public space. Some Bulgarian parents might feel it an intrusion that an adult they do not know would make decisions about their children (such as deciding the children can share a seat in the train), but others would accept it in the sense of "temporary family".

### Hospitality

Hospitality towards a guest is a central feature of Bulgarian society. Many sacrifices will be made (willingly) in service of the "guest-host" relationship.

### Forms of address: ти vs. вие

Most urban Bulgarians will address a stranger as *вие* out of politeness. Two people making each other's acquaintance will only switch to *ти* upon mutual agreement. A number of Bulgarians, however, especially those from rural environments, will either address anyone they meet in unofficial circumstances as *ти* from the very outset, or will move to *ти* extremely quickly (and without the formality of a mutual agreement).

### Postal system

Traditionally, Bulgarians have had low confidence in the mail service, considering it to be slow at best and generally untrustworthy. This is at least partly due to memories of the Communist regime, when everything that came through the mails was subject to search; in more recent years such fears have been replaced by fears of theft. The distrust of the mails is thus especially great when it comes to packages (or anything that could conceivably contain valuables).



Troyan Monastery (north-central Bulgaria)

## LESSON 6

### **DIALOGUE**

#### Къде беше досега?

Веселин: Добър ден.

Ангел: Деца, я направете място на този човек да седне. Как се казваш бе, приятел?

Веселин: Казвам се Веселин Христов.

Ангел: Аз съм Ангел, от Балчик. А това са Милена и Димитър от Варна, Таня от .... откъде си, Таня?

Таня: От София.

Ангел: А това са Джули и Дейвид от Америка.

Веселин: А вие, деца, как се казвате?

Камен: Камен.

Надка: Надка.

Веселин: На колко сте години?

Камен: Аз съм на седем години, а Надка е на пет.

Веселин: На седем години ли? Ходиш ли на училище? Знаеш ли да броиш?

Камен: Зная, разбира се. Отдавна вече. Като бях на три години питах майка...

Веселин: Преброй колко места има в купето.

Камен: Едно, две, три, четири, пет, шест, седем, осем.

Милена: А колко души сме? Пътуваме от един час само, а имаме още шест часа път. Много дълъг път!

Надка: Чичко, ти къде беше досега?

Веселин: Бах в коридора. Плъгувах прав. Тръдах през прозореца.

Надка: Мамо, кога пристигаме в Шумен? Аз съм гладна. Искам едно кебапче.

Камен: Аз искам две кебапчета.

Таня: Пристигаме в два часа. Значи, след петнайсет минути.

Камен: Значи, всичко три кебапчета.

Надка: Не! Четири!

Веселин: Позволете, госпожо, да почерпя всички в купето с по две кебапчета. Госпожице Джюли, знаете ли какво е кебапче?

Джюли: Зная, но аз за съжаление съм вегетарианка.

Надка: Мамо, какво е вегетарианка?



Traditional Bulgarian pottery

**BASIC GRAMMAR****6.1. Past tense**

The simple past tense in Bulgarian is called the aorist. It corresponds to the English simple past ("I came", "you saw", "he did"). The conjugation is the same for all verbs: there is no ending in the 2<sup>nd</sup> and 3<sup>rd</sup> singular, and other endings contain the consonant -х-. These endings are:

	<i>singular</i>	<i>plural</i>
1 <sup>st</sup> person	-х-	-х-ме
2 <sup>nd</sup> person	-	-х-те
3 <sup>rd</sup> person	-	-х-а

Preceding these endings is the aorist tense theme vowel. For a-conjugation verbs, this vowel is the same as in the present tense -- either -а- or -я-.

For comparison, here are both present and aorist tense forms of the verbs **пѝтам** and **отвѝрям**. (Aorist forms of the other conjugations will be learned later.)

	<i>PRESENT</i>	<i>AORIST</i>	<i>PRESENT</i>	<i>AORIST</i>
1 <sup>st</sup> singular	пѝт-ам	пѝт-ах	отвѝр-ям	отвѝр-ях
2 <sup>nd</sup> singular	пѝт-аш	пѝт-а	отвѝр-яш	отвѝр-я
3 <sup>rd</sup> singular	пѝт-а	пѝт-а	отвѝр-я	отвѝр-я
1 <sup>st</sup> plural	пѝт-аме	пѝт-ахме	отвѝр-яме	отвѝр-яхме
2 <sup>nd</sup> plural	пѝт-ате	пѝт-ахте	отвѝр-яте	отвѝр-яхте
3 <sup>rd</sup> plural	пѝт-ат	пѝт-аха	отвѝр-ят	отвѝр-яха

The past tense conjugation of the verb **сѝм** is somewhat irregular. It is as follows:

	<i>PRESENT</i>	<i>AORIST</i>
1 <sup>st</sup> singular	сѝм	бѝх
2 <sup>nd</sup> singular	си	бѝше
3 <sup>rd</sup> singular	е	бѝше
1 <sup>st</sup> plural	сме	бѝхме
2 <sup>nd</sup> plural	сте	бѝхте
3 <sup>rd</sup> plural	са	бѝха

The meaning corresponds to English "was" or "were" used as a simple past. The form **бе** can be used in place of **беше** with no change in meaning. For example:

Къде беше досега?  
Бях в коридора.

Бяхте ли на морето?  
Не беше много интересно.

Той бе там досега.  
Питах майка....

Where were you before?  
I was in the corridor.

Were you at the seaside?  
It wasn't very interesting.

He was there until now.  
I asked my mother....

## 6.2. Plural of neuter nouns

The plural of neuter nouns is **-a**, which appears in several different forms. If the singular ends in **-o**, then the plural usually ends in **-a**. If the singular ends in **-e**, then the plural usually ends in **-ета**. If the singular ends in **-e** preceded by **-и-**, then the plural ending is written **-я**. Neuter nouns ending in **-e** keep the accent on the same syllable in both singular and plural.

The simple ending **-a** is almost always accented, regardless of the accent in the singular. The **-e-** of the ending **-ета** is accented only if the singular ending **-e** is accented, and the ending **-я** is never accented. The definite article is **-та** (obeying the rule requiring all noun forms ending in **-a** to take a rhyming article). Here are examples:

Type <i>sg / pl</i>	<i>singular</i>	<i>plural</i>	<i>definite plural</i>
<b>-o / -a</b>	място езеро село	места езера села	местата езерата селата
<b>-e / -ета</b>	кебапче купé момиче момчé	кебапчета купéта момичета момчéта	кебапчетата купéтата момичетата момчéтата
<b>-ие / -ия</b>	течение	течения	теченията

Plurals of all neuter nouns which cannot be predicted from the above rules will be noted in the glossary. Certain common ones are:

<i>singular</i>	<i>plural</i>
време	времена
име	имена
училище	училища
цвете	цветя

The plural ending on all adjectives continues to be **-и**. Therefore, adjectives modifying plural neuter nouns have the same ending as adjectives modifying all other plural nouns.

### 6.3. Numbers

The number 1 is identical with the indefinite article except that it is always accented. It changes form according to the gender of the noun counted: **едѝн** (masculine), **еднѝ** (feminine), **еднѝ** (neuter).

There are two forms for the number 2: **двѝ** for masculine nouns, and **двѝ** for feminine and neuter nouns. The remaining numbers do not change form. Here are the numbers from 3-100:

		11	единѝсет			
		12	дванѝсет	20	двѝсет	
3	трѝ	13	тринѝсет	30	трѝсет	
4	чѝтири	14	четиринѝсет	40	четѝридесѝт	
5	пѝт	15	петнѝсет	50	петдесѝт	
6	шѝст	16	шестнѝсет	60	шестдесѝт	
7	сѝдем	17	седемнѝсет	70	седемдесѝт	
8	ѝсем	18	осемнѝсет	80	осемдесѝт	
9	дѝвет	19	деветнѝсет	90	деветдесѝт	
10	дѝсет					100 стѝ

Compound numbers are formed by addition. The conjunction **и** must be both written and spoken. For example:

21	(= 20 + 1)	двѝсет и еднѝ
32	(= 30 + 2)	трѝсет и двѝ
89	(= 80 + 9)	осемдесѝт и дѝвет

### 6.4. Masculine nouns after numbers

Nouns which appear after numbers are said to be "quantified". For feminine and neuter nouns, the quantified forms are exactly the same as the plural forms, but for masculine nouns the quantified form is different from the plural. Its ending is similar to that of the definite object form (**-а** if the article is **-ѝт**, and **-ѝ** if the article is **-ѝт**), but with a potential accentual difference. This is because the definite article can sometimes be accented, but the quantified ending can *never* be accented.

The quantified form of masculine nouns is used after *all* numbers, after **кѝлко** "how many", "how much" and **нѝколко** "some, several". After **мнѝго** "many", however, the *plural* form is used. The chart below summarizes the non-plural forms of masculine nouns:



	SINGULAR		QUANTIFIED
<i>indefinite</i>	<i>definite (subject)</i>	<i>definite (object)</i>	
мóлив	мóливът	мóлива	двá мóлива
трамвáй	трамвáят	трамвáя	двá трамвáя
грáд	грáдът	грáдá	двá грáдá
чáс	чáсът	чáсá	двá чáсá

Fleeting vowels lost in the plural are retained before the quantified ending.

<i>singular</i>	<i>quantified</i>	<i>plural</i>
прозóр-ец	прозóр-ец-а	прозóр-ц-и

The word човéк “man, person” exists only in the singular. The form дýши is used for the quantified meaning, and the form хóра for the plural meaning. Note that хóра, like all plurals ending in -а, takes a rhyming article. For example:

-- Кóлко дýши íма в купéто? “How many people are in the compartment?”

-- Сáмо едín човéк. “Only one person.”

Мнóго хóра пýтýват с тóзи влáк. Many people are [traveling] on this train.

Тýка хóрата живéят добрé. People live well here.

### 6.5. Masculine numbers

The numbers from 2 to 6 have a special form before masculine nouns referring to human beings. The nouns themselves are in the plural. For example:

едín лéкар	one doctor
двáма лéкари	two doctors
трéма лéкари	three doctors

The masculine quantifier forms for 4, 5 and 6 are четири́ма (or четíрма), петíма, шестíма. For larger quantities, the regular numbers are used. The noun remains in the plural. “Masculine” numbers are always used before the noun дýши, regardless of the sex of the persons counted.

### 6.6. Motion verbs, continued

The verb *ходя* means “go”. It is like *отивам* (perfective *отида*) in that an end-point is implied. Its meaning is broader, however: it can refer to a round-trip movement, a repeated movement, or to the general idea of going somewhere without reference to any one specific trip. Here are examples:

Ходиш ли на училище?	Do you go to school?
Аз ходя често на театър.	I go to the theater often.
Ходим на Витоша всяка неделя.	We go to Vitosha every Sunday.
Хайде да ходим на цирк!	Let's go to the circus!

### 6.7. Telling time

The definite form of the noun *час* “hour” is used to tell time. The subject form refers to time at the moment of speech, and the object form (which occurs only after a preposition) refers to any other time. In this usage, *часá* corresponds to the English “o'clock”, and is often abbreviated *ч*.

The definite form of *час* is always accented on the article (which is always pronounced as if written [-ѐ]). The preposition *в* corresponds to English “at” in time expressions. Here are examples of both subject and object usage:

Кóлко е часѐт?	What time is it?
В кóлко часá?	At what time?
Часѐт е едѐн.	It's one o'clock.
В едѐн часá. (в 1 ч.)	At one o'clock.
Часѐт е шѐст.	It's six o'clock.
В шѐст часá. (в 6 ч.)	At six o'clock.

One can also identify the hour without the noun (as in English).

-- В кóлко часá?	“When?” [= At what time?]
-- В двá.	“At two.”

The prepositions *от* and *до* refer to the starting point and the ending point, respectively, of a time period, while the prepositions *след* and *преди* refer respectively to periods following or preceding a particular point in time.

Тóй работи всѐки дѐн от 9 до 5.	He works daily from 9 to 5.
Елá след двá часá, но преди пѐт!	Come after 2 o'clock, but before 5.

От колко часа́ имаш лекции?

When do your classes start?  
[= From when do you have lectures?]

До колко часа́ имаш лекции?

When are your classes done?  
[= Until when do you have lectures?]

Time after the hour is expressed by the conjunction **и**. To say "half past" the hour, Bulgarians use the word **половина**. For example:

Сегá е три́ и два́йсет  
Ела́ в шéст и полови́на!

It's 3:20.  
Come at 6:30 [at half past six].

Time before the hour is expressed by the preposition **без**:

-- Кóлко е часáт?  
-- Еди́найсет без два́йсет.

"What time is it?"  
"It's twenty to eleven [10:40]."

Сегá е без дéсет.  
Ела́ в три́ без петна́йсет!

It's ten of.  
Come at 2:45 [at a quarter of three].

In certain official contexts, the time is expressed using the 24-hour clock:

Вла́кът трéгва в 19 часá.

The train leaves at 7 p.m.

### 6.8. Time as duration

The indefinite form of the noun **чáс** refers to a period of 60 minutes' duration. The form after numerals other than 1 is the quantified form. The accentual difference between the definite object form and the quantified form is very important in distinguishing these two meanings. In addition, the two different meanings of the preposition **преди** are distinguished by accent. For example:

Това́ бéше преди́ два́ часá.  
Това́ бéше преди́ два́ чáса.

That was before 2:00.  
That was two hours ago.

Ела́ след три́ часá.  
Ела́ след три́ чáса.

Come after 3:00.  
Come in three hours. [= 3 hrs. from now]

Áз чáкам тýка от три́ часá.  
Áз чáкам тýка [от] три́ чáса.

I've been waiting here since 3:00.  
I've been waiting here for three hours.

When the English preposition "for" refers to immediately past duration which extends into the present (as in the above example), it can be translated either by **от** or by the absence of a preposition altogether. The student must avoid using the preposition **за**

Шести урок / Lesson 6

in this meaning. This preposition refers only to a closed sequence of time, as in the following examples:

Отивам на морето за две седмици.	I'm going to the seacoast for two weeks.
Обикновено прочитам една книга за два дена.	I usually read a book in two days.

**6.9. Prepositions**

Following is a recapitulation of the usage of prepositions in time expressions.

<i>Preposition</i>	<i>(meaning)</i>	<i>Example</i>	<i>(meaning)</i>
в	at	в 2 часа	at 2:00
без	to, till, of	в 5 без 10	at 10 to 5 (4:50)
на	...old	на 10 години	10 years old
от	from since, for	от 9 до 5 от 7 години	from 9 to 5 for 7 years
до	to, until up to, until	от 9 до 5 до преди 3 години	from 9 to 5 until 3 years ago
преди	before	преди 6 часа	before 6:00
преди	ago	преди 3 години	3 years ago
след	after in	след 10 часа след 10 минути	after 10:00 in 10 minutes
за	in for	за 2 дена за 2 седмици	[with]in 2 days for 2 weeks

Remember that *преди* in the meaning "before" carries stress, to differentiate it from *преди* in the meaning "ago", which is unstressed.

## EXERCISES

I. Rewrite the following sentences in the past tense, replacing **всеки ден, често or днес** with **вчера**.

1. Всеки ден ти гледаш телевизия от 1 до 2.
2. Днес времето не е хубаво.
3. Ние питаме всеки ден за новини от България.
4. Днес вие пътувате с друг влак.
5. Те карат кола всеки ден.
6. Аз често сънувам кошмари.
7. Ние сме вкъщи, а те не са.

II. Write the numerals out in words, and fill in the blanks with the appropriate ending.

1. В чантата има 1 ябълк\_\_\_\_, 2 молив\_\_\_\_, и 5 книг\_\_\_\_.
2. Таня има 2 съседк\_\_\_\_, а познава само една.
3. Той купува 2 вестник\_\_\_\_ всеки ден.
4. Има 3 празни куп\_\_\_\_ в този вагон, а 2 лекар\_\_\_\_ стоят в коридора и пушат.
5. В няколко сел\_\_\_\_ има само 1 училищ\_\_\_\_ и 1 болниц\_\_\_\_, а в други сел\_\_\_\_ има по 2 училищ\_\_\_\_ и 2 болниц\_\_\_\_.
6. Ангел има 32 зъб\_\_\_\_ а Веселин само 26.
7. Всеки ден 48 трамва\_\_\_\_ минават по моста.

III. Place the proper accent mark on the word **часа** in each of the following.

1. Аз работя до 2 часа. Ела в 3 часа ако искаш да ме видиш.
2. Сега е 4 часа. Ела в 6 часа, значи след 2 часа.
3. Много е късно! Чакам те вече 3 часа!
4. Колко часа работиш днес? В колко часа искаш да дойда?
5. Той кара кола вече 4 часа.
6. Училище започва в 7 часа и свършва в 12 часа.
7. Ресторантите не работят след 11 часа.

**ADDITIONAL GRAMMAR NOTES****6.1a. Word order and the past tense of *сѐм***

The verb *сѐм* is a copula, joining a subject and a predicate noun or adjective. In the present tense, *сѐм* is also a clitic, and can therefore never begin a sentence. The past tense copula is not a clitic, however. It is a fully stressed verb, and can occur in any position in the sentence. For example:

Вакáнцията бѐше хубава.  
Бѐше хубаво на морѐто.

[Our] vacation was good.  
It was very nice at the seashore.

**6.2a. Plural of neuter nouns**

Neuter nouns in *-o* usually shift the stress to the ending in the plural. If the noun in question contains an alternating root vowel, this causes the *-я-* to shift to *-е-* (because the *-е-* *always* appears when the vowel is unstressed, regardless of the vowel in the following syllable). Examples:

<i>singular</i>	<i>plural</i>
мѐст-о	мест-á
млѐк-о	млек-á

In the capital city of Sofia, one often hears the singular forms *местó* and *млекó*. These are now accepted as alternate pronunciations.

The word *нѐщо* is both a pronoun meaning “something” and a noun meaning “thing”. Only the noun has a plural: *нѐщá* means “things”.

**6.3a. Numbers**

Students who know Russian should take care to remember that *двá* is used *only* with masculine nouns, and *двѐ* with both feminine *and* neuter nouns. When counting or naming something by number, one uses the neuter forms:

еднó, двѐ, трѝ...

№ 1 [нóмер еднó], № 2 [нóмер двѐ], № 3 [нóмер трѝ]...

Numbers for the teens (11 - 19) are formed with the suffix *-найсѐт*. Numbers for four of the decades (20, 30, 40 and 60) are formed with the suffix *-йсѐт*. The historical source of these suffixes may help the student remember which is which.

Teens (11 - 19)

The sequence -найсет is historically a contraction of на + десет. The number дванадесет (12) therefore is "two on ten" (2+10). One can also express the teens in uncontracted fashion, e.g. единадесет, тринадесет, четринадесет, etc., but these forms are considered bookish and are encountered rarely in speech.

Decades (20, 30, 40, 50, 60, 70, 80, 90)

The suffix -исет is historically a contraction of десет. The number два́йсет (20) is therefore "two tens" (2 x 10). Uncontracted forms of 20 and 30 also exist -- два́десет, три́десет, as do contracted forms of the numbers 40 and 60 -- чети́рйсет and ше́йсет. All are used frequently, although the contracted forms are more common in speech, and the uncontracted ones more common in writing. Indeed, for the numbers 50, 70, 80 and 90, only the uncontracted forms are used.

The accent is on the first part of the number in 20, 30, 40, but on the end in the remaining forms. Care must be taken to remember to write the middle -т in петдесет and деведесет, since it is not heard in speech. The pronunciation of these forms is: [педесет, деведесет].

6.4a. Masculine nouns, review

A masculine noun has five possible forms, three in the singular (indefinite, definite subject and definite object), one non-singular form used after numerals, and even though in many nouns they look and sound alike. Their meanings are quite different. The definite object is a singular noun, while the quantified noun conveys the meaning of "a specific countable amount of more than one". Plural carries the meaning of "more than one, non-counted". For example:

quantified

Колко молива има в чантата?  
 В чантата има шест молива.  
 В чантата има няколко молива.  
 Има много молива в чантата.  
 There are lots of pencils in the bag.  
 How many pencils are in the bag?  
 There are six pencils in the bag.  
 There are several pencils in the bag.

plural

Another difference is that certain masculine nouns shift the accent in the ending in the definite form. In these nouns, the definite object forms and the quantified forms are distinguished by accent placement. While other forms may have end stress, the quantified form never shifts stress onto the ending. For example:

indefinite	ден (един)	денят	деня	двата	два дена
	(един) час	часът	часа	града	два часа
	(един) град	градът	градя		два града
		definite subject	definite object		quantified

### 6.5a. Masculine numbers

The numbers *двáма*, *трíма*, etc. are used with masculine personal nouns in both the “specifically male” and the “general category” meanings. Thus, *трíма студéнти* can mean either “three male students” or “three students, at least one of whom is male”. Only in the case of *души* (where no other number is possible) can *двáма*, *трíма*, etc., refer to nouns denoting specifically non-masculine persons.

### 6.6a. Motion verbs, continued

The following summarizes the Bulgarian motion-verb system:

Category	verbs	meaning
<i>Directional, single one-way trip</i>	отíвам / отíда й́двам / до́йда	go come
<i>Directional, unrestricted</i>	хóдя	go
<i>Non-directional</i>	върв́я	walk, go, move

The first two verbs (*отíвам* and *й́двам*) refer to a single, one-way movement in space towards a specified end-point (either explicitly mentioned or implied). The third, *хóдя*, refers to movement in space towards a specific end-point without restriction as to numbers of trips. When reference is to a single trip, it implies round trip movement. The last verb in the list, *върв́я*, refers to the idea of locomotion without a specified end-point.

Only the two unidirectional verbs exist in aspect pairs. The other two, *хóдя* and *върв́я*, are either imperfective or perfective, depending on the context.

### 6.7a. Tense and time expressions

The fact that Bulgarian uses the present tense with a broader scope of meaning than in English is particularly relevant in time expressions. If a time period which began at some clearly defined point in the past continues into the present, Bulgarians speak of it with the present tense. In such instances, English must use the progressive form of the present perfect tense in order to express this broader scope. Students must take care not to transfer English usage into Bulgarian or vice versa. For example:

Аз те чакам от три часа!  
От колко време живеете в  
Америка?

I have been expecting you for three hours!  
How long have you been living in  
America?



By contrast, both English and Bulgarian can use the present tense to denote a period which also includes the future. In English this occurs primarily with motion verbs, while in Bulgarian it can be used with other verbs as well. For example:

Чакам до три часа, а после  
 тръбам.  
 I'll wait until 3:00, but then I'm  
 leaving.

**6.9a. Prepositions**

(a) The preposition *на* has three very distinct meanings, detailed below. Context is usually sufficient to distinguish among these meanings.

1. *possession* Това е вратата на къщата.  
 This is the door of the house.

2. *direction* Отивам на фестивала.  
 Чантата е на пода.  
 I'm going to the festival.  
 The bag is on the floor.

3. *indirect object* Направяте място на този човек!  
 Поднасям кафето на гостите.  
 Make space for this man.  
 I'm offering the guests coffee.

Indirect object constructions will be studied in detail in the next lesson.

(b) Bulgarian, like English, often has more than one preposition in a row. In this case the object of the first preposition is the phrase including the second one.

до [преди 3 години]      по [по две ябълки]  
 up to [3 years ago]      treat to [2 apples each]

(c) The preposition *без* means "without".

Не можем без приятели.  
 We can't [live] without friends.

**6.10. "All, every"**

The pronominal adjective *всеки, всяка, всяко* means "each, every". Grammatically, it is an adjective: it changes in form to agree with the noun it refers to, and can only be used with a noun following. In form, it is noteworthy for the *я/е* alternation, and because the masculine form ends in *-и*. Its plural form is *всеки*.

The pronoun *всичко* means "all, everything". It is grammatically an adverb: it is used alone (it cannot be used with a noun following), and it has only one form in the singular. Its plural form, which means "everyone", is also *всеки*. Here are examples of usage:

Нали всяко дете тук обича  
сладолед?

Да, всички деца обичат  
сладолед.

Всичко хубаво!  
Значи, всичко три кебапчета.  
Искам да почерпя всички в  
купето.

Every child here likes ice cream, yes?

Yes, all children like ice cream.

All the best!  
That means three kebabs in all.  
I want to treat everyone in the  
compartment.

### 6.11. The particles я and бе

The particle *я* is frequently used before imperative forms, where it functions to soften the force of the order somewhat. In this way, the command is transformed more into an invitation or a prompt. The meaning is hard to translate exactly, and depends upon the context; often the most correct translation is to ignore the particle altogether.

**Я направете място на този човек да седне!**

Why not make a place for this man to sit down?  
How about making a place for this man to sit down?  
Make a place for this man to sit down!

In terms of word order, the particle *я* is classed with the conjunction *да* and the negative marker *не*, and follows the rules outlined in Lesson 5. It must precede the verb form directly, and any pronoun object must be placed directly between *я* and the imperative form. For example (numbering of word order examples is cumulative across lessons):

(14) 

<b>Я</b>	<b>направи</b>	<b>място!</b>
<i>Part.</i>	<i>verb</i>	

How about making a place?

(15) 

<b>Я</b>	<b>го</b>	<b>сложи</b>	<b>на пода!</b>
<i>Part.</i>	<i>DIR</i>	<i>verb</i>	

Come on, put it on the floor!

The particle *бе* is used as a vocative of sorts. It adds a tone of familiarity to the conversation, indicating that the speaker feels on colloquially casual terms with the person s/he is speaking to. Formerly (and still, in rural contexts) it was used only to address men. In modern urban contexts, the use of this particle in modern urban contexts is now non-differentiated as to sex.

**Как се казваш бе, приятел?**

What's your name, friend?

## SAMPLE SENTENCES

1. В трамвая има много хора. Ей, внимавайте, бъдете човека!
2. Ставам в шест часа. В осем часа отивам на училище.
3. -- На колко години сте?  
-- На осемнайсет.  
-- А аз съм на деветнайсет години.
4. Работното време на магазина е от осем до осемнайсет часа.
5. От три години не съм в България.
6. Моля, не вдигайте шум след десет часа.
7. Ела тук след един час.
8. Влакът тръгва в дванайсет без пет.
9. -- Колко е часът?  
-- Часът е три без петнайсет.  
-- Часът е три и петнайсет.
10. Не искаш ли да ходим на кино? Ти ходиш само на лекции!
11. Не всяка жена работи само вкъщи.
12. Всичко е готово.
13. Поръчахме само десерт, защото не бяхме много гладни.
14. Той беше за първи път в града и много пъти пита за посоката.
15. -- Къде ли са снимките?  
-- Не знам. Няма ги.  
-- А тук гледахте ли?  
-- Да, Лиляна вече отваря този шкаф.

**SENTENCES FOR TRANSLATION**

1. How many tomatoes do you have? Do you want me to put the tomatoes into the pot?
2. Do you know where we were until now? We were looking out the window for three hours. To tell the truth, it wasn't very interesting.
3. "Did you ask Lilyana why she isn't coming today?"  
"Why do you want to know?"  
"Because she wasn't here yesterday, and I dreamed that she was in the hospital, and that three doctors were looking at her."  
"Do you often dream about doctors and hospitals?"
4. What time does Ivan come home from work? How many hours does he work each day?
5. "When do you want me to come?"  
"Come quickly! Can you come in fifteen minutes? I have many things to say. And all these things are interesting."
6. "Where are those two students?"  
"They were here ten minutes ago but I don't know where they are now."
7. We are going to the circus with three Greeks, five Turks, and six Bulgarians. And you are going to the movies with two children.
8. These children don't go to school yet. They are still very little. Boris is three years old and Marina is four. But Kamen goes to school every day: he is seven.
9. Do all students study every Sunday? Not all -- some of them go to the sea and others watch television.
10. "Did you watch television at home yesterday?"  
"No, I was in the library. I watched a video there."

**READING SELECTION**

Кореспонденция - (5)

29 септември, Сoфия

Здравей Патриша,

За гостите можеш да готвиш сарми. Аз ги готвя така.

Взимам листа от лоза, ориз, лук, половин килограм кайма, три лъжици олио, и подправки. Пържа лука, ориза и каймата в олиото. Слагам в средата на всеки лист по една лъжица от това, и го завивам от всички страни.

Нареждам сармите в тенджерата и ги варя половин час. Сервирам ги топли с кисело мляко. Ако не продават листа в Сан Франциско, можеш въпреки да ги консервираш. Аз вече консервирах няколко буркана и съм много доволна.

По този начин правя и сарми с кисело зеле. Мога да пълня също чушки и домати. За вегетерианци, можеш да готвиш тези гозби и без месо.

Мога да те науча да правиш и салати, ако искаш.

Сърдечни поздравии,

Калина

12 октомври, Сан Франциско

Драга Калина,

Българите, изглежда, готвят като гърците и турците. Сигурна съм, че в Сан Франциско мога да намеря консервирани лозови листа.

Боб казва, че тараторът по български е много вкусен и става бързо. Таратора правят от кисело мляко с краставица, копър, чесън, орехи и олио, нали? Питам Боб за рецептата, но той не знае точно.

Предпочитам лесни рецепти, защото работя до 6 часа и нямам много време да готвя.

Пиши как са децата.

Всичко хубаво,

Патриша

## GLOSSARY

бе	(vocative particle)	домат	tomato
без	without	досега	until now
беше	was (2sg., 3sg.)	души	people (counting form)
болница	hospital	единайсет	eleven
буркан	jar, can	за	[with]in, for
бутам	push, shove	за две седмици	for two weeks
бърз	fast, quick	завивам / завия	turn, bend, wrap
бях	was (1sg.)	започвам /	begin
бяха	were (3pl.)	започна	
бяхме	were (1pl.)	здравей	hi
бяхте	were (2pl.)	зъб	tooth
в колко часа?	at what time?	изглежда	it seems
в последно време	lately	име (pl. имена)	name
вагон	wagon, car	кайма	ground meat
ваканция	vacation	карам	drive, ride, push
вдигам / вдигна	raise, lift	карам кола	drive a car
вдигам шум	make noise	като	like, as; when
вестник	newspaper	като бях	when I was
вкусен	tasty, delicious	кафеен, -ейна	coffee (adj.)
вкъщи	home, at home	кафена лъжичка	coffee spoon
внимавайте, бугате	careful, you're	кебапче	kebab
човека	pushing someone	килограм	kilogram
внимавам	pay attention	кисел	sour
всеки, всяка, всяко	every	кисело зеле	sauerkraut
всеки момент	any minute	кисело мляко	yogurt
всеичко шест	six in all	кога	when
готов	prepared, ready	колко души сме?	how many of us are there?
град, -ът (pl. in L. 7)	town, city	колко е часът?	what time is it?
гърци (sg. in L. 23)	Greeks	консервирам	preserve, can
два	two (masculine)	консервиран	preserved, canned
двайсет	twenty	копър	dill
двама	two (masculine animate)	кошмар	nightmare
дванайсет	twelve	кръставица	cucumber
две	two (feminine, neuter)	лекция	lecture, class
девет	nine	лесен	easy
деветдесет	ninety	лист (pl. листа)	leaf
деветнайсет	nineteen	лоза	vine
ден, -ят (pl. дни, 2 дена / деня)	day	лозов	grape, vine (adj.)
десерт	dessert	лозови листа	grape leaves
десет	ten	лук (pl. in L. 7)	onion
до	until (time)	лъжица	spoon, spoonful
добър ден	hello, good day	лъжичка	teaspoon, teaspoonful
доволен	pleased, satisfied		

## Шести урок / Lesson 6

месó	meat	преди	ago
местá	places	през	through
мину́та	minute	присти́гам /	arrive
мля́ко (pl. млекá)	milk	присти́гна	
морé	sea	прода́вам / прода́м	sell
мо́ст (pl. in L. 7)	bridge	(conj. in L. 9)	
на 10 годи́ни	10 years old	пъ́лня	fill
на ко́лко сте	how old are you?	пъ́ржа (-еш)	fry
годи́ни?		пъ́т (pl. in L. 8)	way, road
на морéто	at the seaside	пъ́т (pl. пъ́ти)	time, instance
напра́вам / напра́вя	do, make	рабо́тен	work (adj.)
наре́ждам / наре́дя	set up, arrange	рабо́тно вре́ме	office hours, hours of operation
науча́вам /	teach	реце́пта	recipe
на́уча (-иш)			
на́чин	way, manner	сарми́	stuffed cabbage or grape leaves
неде́ля	Sunday	свър́швам /	complete, finish
ня́колко	several	свър́ша (-иш)	
окто́мври	October	седемдесéт	seventy
о́лио	cooking oil	седемна́йсет	seventeen
о́рех	walnut	се́дмица	week
ори́з	rice	си́гурен	sure, certain
о́сем	eight	сладолéд	ice cream
осемдесéт	eighty	след	after
осемна́йсет	eighteen	след 15 мину́ти	in 15 minutes
от	since (time)	снíмка	photograph
от всíчки страни́	from / on all sides	ста́ва бързо	it goes quickly
от еди́н час	for an hour	странá	side
отда́вна	long ago	съну́вам	dream
отда́вна ве́че	for a long time now	съну́вам кошма́ри	have nightmares
пéт	five	тарато́р	yogurt and cucumber soup
пéт без де́сет	ten of five (o'clock)	теа́тър	theater
петдесéт	fifty	телевíзия	television
петíма	five (masculine animate)	тeнджера	(cooking) pot
петна́йсет	fifteen	тóчен	exact, precise
пи́там за посо́ката	ask directions	тóчно	exactly
по тóзи на́чин	in this way	три́йсет	thirty
подна́сям / поднесá	present, offer, serve	три́ма	three (masculine animate)
подпра́вка	spice	трина́йсет	thirteen
позво́лявам /	allow	ту́рци (sg. in L. 23)	Turks
позво́ля		учи́лище	school
полови́н(a)	half	(pl. учи́лища)	
пóсле	then, next	хóдя	go
послéден	last	хóдя на кíно	go to the movies
посо́ка	direction	хóдя на учи́лище	go to school
почeрпвам /	treat someone to	цвeтe (pl. цвeтя́)	flower
почeрпя			
празeн	empty		
пребро́явам /	count out		
пребро́я			
преди́	before		

## Шести урок / Lesson 6

цирк ( <i>pl. in L. 7</i> )	circus	шѐст	six
час, -ът, 2 часа ( <i>pl. in L. 7</i> )	hour	шестдесѐт or шейсѐт	sixty
чѐсън	garlic	шестѝма	six ( <i>masculine animate</i> )
чѐтири	four	шестнаѝсет	sixteen
четиринаѝсет	fourteen	шкаф ( <i>pl. in L. 7</i> )	cupboard
четиридесѐт or четирийсѐт	forty	шум	noise
четирийма	four ( <i>masculine animate</i> )	я	( <i>imperative particle</i> )
чѝчко	uncle ( <i>affectionate</i> )	я направѐте място	come on, make space
чушка	pepper ( <i>vegetable</i> )	ябълка	apple

### CULTURAL COMMENTARY

#### Geography: Varna and Balchik

One of the main train lines in Bulgaria runs through northern Bulgaria from Varna to Sofia. Varna, on the Black Sea coast, is a major seaport and tourist center, and is the third largest city in Bulgaria. Balchik (Балчѝк) is a small town to the north of Varna.

#### Traveling: eating in trains

Although there are restaurant cars on certain Bulgarian trains, Bulgarians tend not to patronize them. Instead, travelers either come laden with food, or buy snacks from platform vendors during scheduled stops.

#### Food and drink: general; kebaches; yogurt

Bulgaria's cuisine is a generally Balkan one; its cuisine is similar to that found in Greece and Turkey. Grilled meats and stuffed vegetable dishes are favorites. In its cultural function the Bulgarian kebache (кебаѝче) is roughly equivalent to the Western hamburger. The formal differences are that the ground meat is generally more spicy, and that it is formed into small sausage-shaped meatballs which are then either grilled on a skewer or fried.

Bulgarian кисѐло мляко (literally, "sour milk") is yogurt. Yogurt is a mainstay in Bulgarian cuisine. It is eaten alone, served with many dishes, and forms the basis of other dishes, such as the cold yogurt soup called таратор. Bulgarian yogurt is famous for its high quality; in fact the Latin name of the yogurt culture is *bacillus bulgaricus*. Yogurt can be made from cow's milk, sheep's milk, and even from the milk of the water buffalo. The latter is a rarity and therefore considered a delicacy.

#### Weights and measures

Bulgarians measure weight in grams and kilograms ("kilo" for short). A pound is roughly half a kilo. Spoons are of three sizes. The largest, called лѝжѝца, is served with meals and is roughly the size of a soup-spoon. In recipes it is equivalent to a tablespoon. The medium-sized one, called лѝжѝчка, is served with tea or Western-style coffee, and is the size of a regular spoon. In recipes, it is equivalent to a teaspoon. The smallest, called кафеѝна лѝжѝчка, is served with Turkish or espresso coffee. Cooking heats, both in the oven and atop the stove, are "low", "medium" and "high".



## LESSON 7

## DIALOGUE

### На перона в гарата

Нака: Мамо, виж, пристига ме! Ето я гарата! Ето ти кебапчетата на перона!  
Ето я продавачката!

Беселин: Да, сета слизам да ви купя кебапчета. Осем пълника в купето --  
значи, шестнайсет кебапчета. А на Джъли, какво да ѝ купя? Джъли, да  
слезем ли да потърсим нещо? Хайде да слезем!

Мишена: Не забравяйте, че имате само десет минути. Количката с  
кебапчетата е в края на перона!

Димитър: Аз веднъж така купувах кебапчета, и влакът отпътува. Прекарах 5  
часа на една пейка на гарата. Беше един студ...

// На перона, при количката с кебапчетата //

Беселин: Лайте ми шестнайсет кебапчета, моля.

Продавачката: С хляб или без хляб?

Джъли: Без, защото аз имам два хляба във влака.

Беселин: Имате ли нещо безмесо? Господжипата е вегетарианка.

Продавачката: Ами-и... няма много. Имам само кашкавал и сирене. И  
плодове.

Беселин: Какво желаете, Джъли?

Джъли: Предпочитам кашкавал.

Беселин: Добре, на господжипата кашкавал.

Продавачката: Ето ви, господжипце, една порция кашкавал. А вие, господине,  
ще почакате малко за кебапчетата.

Децата (от прозореца): Хайде, бързайте! Влакът ще тръгне!

Беселин: Качете се, Джъли. Аз ще взема кебапчетата.

Джъли: Но ако изпуснете влака...

Беселин: Не се притеснявайте, всичко е наред. Няма да изпусна влака!

**BASIC GRAMMAR****7.1. Future tense**

To form the future tense in Bulgarian, place the particle **ще** (or the phrase **няма да**) before the present tense form. The meaning of the future tense is as in English, "I will/won't + verb". Here are the affirmative and negative future conjugations of the verb **чета́**:

**FUTURE TENSE**

	<i>affirmative</i>	<i>negative</i>
<i>1<sup>st</sup> singular</i>	ще чет-а́	няма да чет-а́
<i>2<sup>nd</sup> singular</i>	ще чет-е́ш	няма да чет-е́ш
<i>3<sup>d</sup> singular</i>	ще чет-е́	няма да чет-е́
<i>1<sup>st</sup> plural</i>	ще чет-е́м	няма да чет-е́м
<i>2<sup>nd</sup> plural</i>	ще чет-е́те	няма да чет-е́те
<i>3<sup>d</sup> plural</i>	ще чет-а́т	няма да чет-а́т

The future marker (**ще** or **няма да**) does not change, but the verb following this form, which is exactly equivalent to the present tense form, must have the correct endings.

There are two different ways to form the future tense of **съм**: one can add the future markers **ще** and **няма да** either to the verb **бъда**, or to **съм** itself. Here are both possible conjugations of "to be" in the affirmative future. To form the negative future, replace **ще** with **няма да**. The variant with **бъда** is somewhat more frequently used.

**FUTURE TENSE: "to be"**

<i>1<sup>st</sup> singular</i>	ще бъд-а	ще съм
<i>2<sup>nd</sup> singular</i>	ще бъд-е́ш	ще си
<i>3<sup>d</sup> singular</i>	ще бъд-е	ще е
<i>1<sup>st</sup> plural</i>	ще бъд-е́м	ще сме
<i>2<sup>nd</sup> plural</i>	ще бъд-е́те	ще сте
<i>3<sup>d</sup> plural</i>	ще бъд-а́т	ще са

The future tense refers to an action which has not yet occurred. Because speakers often envision such an action as a totality (i.e. as bounded), perfective verbs occur very frequently in the future tense. If the sense of boundedness is absent,

however, the imperfective is used. Note that in the second example the meaning of boundedness is present in the second verb only:

Ще почакам само 5 минути. I'll wait five minutes only.  
 Ще чакам да дойдете. I'll wait for you to come.

## 7.2. Indirect object pronouns

Indirect object pronouns in Bulgarian are very similar to direct object pronouns. The following gives subject, direct object, and indirect object pronouns. The grave accent mark on the 3<sup>rd</sup> person feminine form (ѝ) is an obligatory part of Bulgarian spelling; it functions to distinguish this form from the conjunction (и).

	<i>subject</i>	<i>direct object</i>	<i>indirect object</i>
1 <sup>st</sup> singular	а́з	ме	ми
2 <sup>nd</sup> singular (reflexive)	ти́	те	ти
		се	си
3 <sup>rd</sup> singular			
<i>feminine</i>	тя́	я	ѝ
<i>masculine</i>	то́й	го	му
<i>neuter</i>	то́	го	му
1 <sup>st</sup> plural	ни́е	ни	ни
2 <sup>nd</sup> plural	ви́е	ви	ви
3 <sup>rd</sup> plural	те́	ги	им

The reflexive indirect object form **си** is used to indicate that the action is directed back towards the subject of the sentence. For example:

Веселин забелязва Джу́ли и си ми́сли... Veselin notices Julie and thinks to himself...

Indirect object pronouns are clitics, and must obey the same word order rules as direct object pronouns: they cannot occur at the beginning of a sentence or phrase, and they must occur adjacent to the verb (or other word) on which they depend.

Ето ти, Джу́ли. Here you are, Julie.  
 [= Here are these things for you.]

## 7.3. Usage of indirect objects

The meaning "indirect object" in Bulgarian is similar to that in English: it denotes a person or object affected by the verb in a way which is considered somehow less direct than that of a direct object. In English this meaning is conveyed either through word order or by the prepositions "to" or "for". When there is no preposition, the indirect object always comes before the direct object, as in

Give	the children	the kebabs.
<i>verb</i>	<i>indirect obj.</i>	<i>direct obj.</i>

The English indirect object in this sentence can also be "to the children".

In Bulgarian, by contrast, indirect objects *must* be preceded by the preposition *на*. The neutral word order is with the direct object first. The indirect object can occur first if the speaker wishes to place somewhat more emphasis on it.

Да́й	кеба́пчетата	на деца́та.	Give the children the kebabs.
<i>verb</i>	<i>direct obj.</i>	<i>indirect obj.</i>	

Да́й	на деца́та	кеба́пчетата.	Give the kebabs <i>to the children</i> .
<i>verb</i>	<i>indirect obj.</i>	<i>direct obj.</i>	

In the above examples, both the Bulgarian and the English sentences express indirect objects with a preposition. There are a number of verbs, however, which take a direct object in English but an indirect object in Bulgarian -- or, as in the example from Lesson 5 which is repeated below, which take a direct object in Bulgarian, but a prepositional phrase in English.

Помáгам	на деца́та.
<i>verb</i>	<i>indirect obj.</i>

I'm helpng	the children
<i>subject + verb</i>	<i>direct obj.</i>

А́нгел	гле́да	чове́ка.
<i>subject</i>	<i>verb</i>	<i>direct obj.</i>

Angel	looks	at the man.
<i>subject</i>	<i>verb</i>	<i>prep.phrase</i>

The lesson of these examples is that one cannot predict the status "direct object"/"indirect object" in Bulgarian directly from the structure of the corresponding English sentence. One must simply learn which verbs in Bulgarian take direct objects and which take indirect objects.

**7.4. Plural of masculine monosyllabic nouns**

Most masculine nouns consisting of a single syllable (and a few which have a fleeting vowel in the second syllable) add the ending *-obe* in the plural. The accent is unpredictable and must be learned. However, the addition of the definite article in the plural does not affect the place of accent.

Accent types are illustrated below. In the majority of nouns the accent stays on the stem syllable, as in type (1). In a number of nouns, however, the accent is on the final syllable of the plural ending, as in (3), and in a few nouns it is on the first syllable of the ending, as in (2). If a noun has a plural of type (2) or (3), this will be indicated in the glossary; otherwise one should assume its plural is of type (1).

(1)	(2)	(3)
stem stress	initial end stress	final end stress
БКҮС-ОБЕ БҮЛӘК-ОБЕ ДИМ-ОБЕ ПОД-ОБЕ СӨК-ОБЕ СТОЛ-ОБЕ ХҮШ-ОБЕ ЦИПК-ОБЕ ШҮМ-ОБЕ	НОЖ-ОБЕ	БЕҢП-ОБЕ ТРАД-ОБЕ ПЛОД-ОБЕ СЕҢГ-ОБЕ СТУД-ОБЕ ЧАС-ОБЕ

(with article: СӨКӨБӨТӨ, НОЖӨБӨТӨ, ПЛОДОБӨТӨ, etc.)

**7.5. Verbal prefixation and the aspect system**

Prefixation is very frequent in Bulgarian. The addition of a prefix alters the meaning of a verb to a certain extent, but does not normally obscure the semantic relationship between it and other verbs with the same root. The ability to recognize the relationship between prefix and verbal root, therefore, can be a very valuable tool in vocabulary building. To aid in seeing this, the examples below are given with a hyphen separating the prefix from the rest of the verb. The first three examples, which exist only in the prefixed form, all refer to movement. In each instance, the prefix adds the meaning of the direction of the movement.

В	-	ЛІЗАМ	/	В	-	ЛІЗА
ИЗ	-	ЛІЗАМ	/	ИЗ	-	ЛІЗА
С	-	ЛІЗАМ	/	С	-	ЛІЗА

enter, come in  
 leave, go out  
 get off, get down, descend

Most prefixes are similar in form to prepositions. They do not always have the same meaning, however. Of the three verbs above, for instance, only in one of them (влизам) does the prefix в- have the same meaning as the preposition в.

Another set of verbs which exists only in the prefixed form expresses the general meaning "carry". Although the three prefixed verbs given below are historically related to the simplex imperfective verb нoся, they are considered within the Bulgarian aspect system to be separate verbs from it.

до	-	насям	/	до	-	неса	bring
за	-	насям	/	за	-	неса	take
под	-	насям	/	под	-	неса	offer, present

Although the above six verbs are very commonly used, their form is exceptional in that the non-prefixed forms do not exist as separate verbs. It is much more usual for prefixes to be added to already existing verbs. Sometimes a prefix is even added to an existing aspectual pair. For example:

	ставам	/	стана	get up, stand up
о-	ставам	/	стана	remain

In the majority of cases, however, prefixes are added to simplex imperfectives -- those verbs which exist only in the imperfective aspect, and which designate an activity in basic and general terms. Placing a prefix before such a verb adds the idea of boundedness, and makes it perfective. Each such verb created in this way is considered to designate a new and separate verbal meaning. Sometimes this new meaning is very different from that of the simplex imperfective, and sometimes it is only slightly different from it. Here are some examples:

<i>simplex imperfective</i>	<i>meaning</i>	<i>prefixed perfective</i>	<i>meaning</i>
четá	read	про-четá	read to the end
		пред-по-четá	prefer
знáя	know	по-знáя	guess
белéжа	mark	за-белéжа	notice
броя	count	пре-броя	count up, count out
пия	drink	из-пия	drink up, drain a glass
търся	seek	по-търся	look specifically for
бързам	be in a hurry	по-бързам	hurry up
чакам	wait	по-чакам	wait for a bit
правя	do, make	на-правя	do, make

Simplex imperfectives signify basic, general actions. They do not have perfective partners. Every perfective verb formed by prefixation, however, has its own imperfective partner. The process by which these new imperfectives are derived will be studied in more detail later.

The chart below gives the above verbs as they are listed in Bulgarian dictionaries. Simplex imperfectives stand alone, while the prefixed perfectives formed from them are listed together with their aspect partners, with the imperfective form given first:

бележа	бележа
броя	броя
забелязвам / забележа	зная
изпивам / изпия	напаявам / напая
напаявам / напая	пий
познавам / позна	потърсявам / потърся
потърсявам / потърся	почакавам / почакам
пращавам / праша	пращавам / праша
предпочитам / предпочета	предпочитам / предпочета
предпоказвам / предпозая	прочитам / прочита
търся	търся
чакам	чакам
чета	чета

7.6. Да-phrases, continued

The most frequent meaning of a да-phrase is as an infinitive replacement. Usually the да will connect two verbs, which may or may not have the same subject.

Искам да стъпя	Искам да стъпяш
да си купя нещо.	да ми купиш нещо.
Искам да стъпя	Искам да стъпяш
да си купя нещо.	да ми купиш нещо.
Искам да стъпя	Искам да стъпяш
да си купя нещо.	да ми купиш нещо.

The да-phrase can also be used alone. When it refers to the idea of the action in general (and does not specify an actor), it is the grammatical subject of the sentence, and the verb is in the 2<sup>nd</sup> singular. The verb in such a да-phrase can also take other personal endings if the identity of its subject is specified. In this case, да-phrases can act grammatically either as the subject or the object of the sentence.

Here are examples, followed by a schematic outline of the grammar involved:

- |  |  |
|--|--|
| 1. Но да познаваш кўхнята на един нарѳд, не   достатъчно.  | It's not enough [just] to know the cuisine of a people.    |
| 2. Добр  е да опознаеш и страната.                         | It's good to get to know the country as well.              |
| 3. Мисля, че ще е хубаво да прекараме ѳпуската в България. | I think it will be nice to spend our vacation in Bulgaria. |
| 4. Искам да сготвиш кебапчета.                             | I want you to make kebabs.                                 |

<i>subject</i>	<i>predicate / verb</i>	<i>object</i>
1. да познаваш...	не � достатъчно	
2. да опознаеш...	е добр�	
3. да прекараме...	ще е хубаво	
4.	искам	[ти] да сготвиш нещѳ

When да-phrases are used in questions, an additional shade of meaning is often added, which is best translated by adding English "should". For instance:

А на Джули, каквѳ да ѳ купя?      And what about Julie? What should I buy for her?

Да сл зем ли да потърсим нещѳ?      Should we get off to look for something?

### 7.7. Pronoun reduplication

Certain definite direct objects receive special emphasis. By a process called "pronoun reduplication", an object pronoun is added to the sentence (reduplicating the noun in question). Because this pronoun also refers to the same object as the noun, it must be of the same gender as the noun in question.

Pronoun reduplication is obligatory after the introductory particle  то or after the impersonal negative н ма, and optional in other instances to be learned later. Here are examples:

�то я гарата!	There's the station!
�то ги кебапчетата!	Here's the kebabs!
Н�ма го чов�ка.	No trace of him.

<i>noun object</i>	<i>reduplicative pronoun</i>
гарата	я
кебапчета	ги
чов�ка	го



## 7.8. Prepositions

(a) The basic meaning of the preposition **при** is “by, near, at, in the vicinity of”. It differs from **до**, which also means “by, near”, in two ways. First, **до** can mean movement as well as location, while **при** can only mean location. Second, **до** refers to immediate proximity, while **при** refers to a more general, unspecified location.

Деца́та се́дят до Джу́ли.  
Те́ са при коли́чката с  
кеба́пчетата.

The children are sitting next to Julie.  
They are at the cart with the kebabs.

(b) The basic meaning of the preposition **през** is “through”.

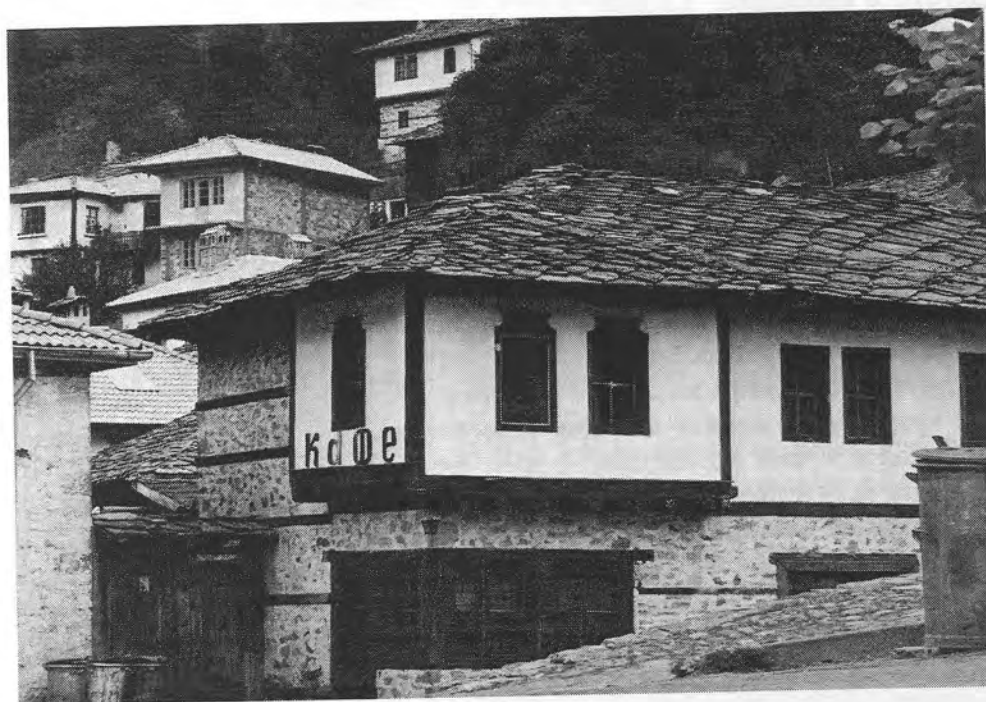
То́й че́сто вли́за през прозо́реца.  
Че́сто ми́навам през града́.

He often gets in through the window.  
I pass through town often.

(c) The preposition **по** can also mean “about”, “approximately”, “around”, especially in contexts of time.

Ела́ по това́ време, тога́ва.

Come around that time, then.



Café in Shiroka Lăka, near Smolyan

## EXERCISES

I. Rewrite the following sentences replacing the underlined phrases with the appropriate pronouns.

1. Деца́та декламира́т стихотворе́ния на пъ̀тниците.
2. Пъ̀тниците ще пока́жат на момче́то къде́ да слезе от вла́ка.
3. Все́ки де́н ма́йката чете́ на деца́та кни́гата.
4. Позволете́ на чове́ка да вземе́ вестника.
5. Ле́лята купу́ва ли на деца́та шокола́д?
6. Ти ка́зваш на Джу́ли и́стината, но Джу́ли не вярва.
7. Кали́на и Бо́йко пи́шат на Бо́б и Патри́ща.

II. Put everything in the following sentences into the plural.

1. Ако си гла́ден, вземй кеба́пче и пло́д.
2. На ма́сата има кра́ставица, шокола́д и готва́рска кни́га.
3. Ку́чето обича ли дете́то?
4. Па́да голя́м сня́г, ду́ха си́лен вятър.
5. Мя́стото е свободо́но. Седни́!
6. В града́ живе́ят момче́ и момиче́.
7. Хля́бът е на ма́сата, а шише́то е в хлади́лника.
8. Тя но́си в ча́нтата уче́бник, мо́лив, тетра́дка и ре́чник.

III. Rewrite the sentences in the future, replacing *все́ки де́н* or *сегá* with *у́тре*.

1. Все́ки де́н взима́м трамва́я и не закъ́снявам за университе́та.
2. Сегá изби́рам подаръ́к за ма́йка.
3. Ела́ друг пъ́т! Сегá съм зае́т и бързам.
4. Сегá купу́вам на деца́та по еди́н сладолед.
5. То́й ста́ва в 7 часа́ все́ки де́н.
6. Ча́кам те все́ки де́н след ра́бота.
7. Сегá отива́ме на га́рата да посрещне́м Джу́ли и Де́йвид.
8. Все́ки де́н пребро́явам пти́ците на дърво́то.
9. Деца́та все́ки де́н изпи́ват ча́ша мля́ко, а ма́йките - ча́ша кафе́.
10. Сегá ду́ха си́лен вятър.

**ADDITIONAL GRAMMAR NOTES****7.1a. Future tense**

The verb **бъда** is used both as the future tense, and the imperative, of **съм**.

Бъди добър!	Be good!
Бъдете точни!	Be on time!

The future particle **ще** is unaccented. It can also occur accented; in this case it is the 3<sup>rd</sup> singular of the regular verb **щá** "want". Conjugated forms of **щá** occur most frequently after negation, and are restricted to colloquial contexts.

щѐ не щѐ                      whether one wants to or not

**7.2a. Indirect object pronouns**

Indirect object pronouns follow exactly the same word order rules as those given in Lesson 5 for direct object pronouns. Recall that numbering of word order examples is cumulative across lessons. For example:

(16) 

Купувам	ви	кебапчета.
<i>verb</i>	<i>IND</i>	<i>direct obj.</i>

I'm buying you kebabs.

(17) А    на Джули,    каквó    

да	й	купя?
<i>Сnj.</i>	<i>IND</i>	<i>verb</i>

And Julie, what should I buy for her?

When a verb takes two objects and both are expressed by pronouns, the indirect object pronoun precedes the direct object pronoun. Examples of this usage will be given in Lesson 9.

**7.4a. Plural of masculine monosyllabic nouns**

Masculine monosyllables form their plural with the ending **-ове**. This ending takes the form **-еве** in nouns ending in **-й** or in a soft consonant (those with the article form **-ят**). The stem final **-й** drops before this ending. A few nouns with a fleeting vowel take the **-ове** plural ending, losing the fleeting vowel before it. In these nouns, a final soft consonant causes the spelling **-ьове**. Here are examples:

<i>singular indefinite</i>	<i>singular definite</i>	<i>plural</i>
ча́й	ча́ят	ча́еве
це́нтьр	це́нтьр-ът	це́нтр-ове
о́гън	о́гън-ят	о́гнь-ове
вя́тър	вя́тър-ът	ветр-ове

The accent in masculine nouns can shift forward to the definite form in the singular, and to both definite and indefinite forms in the plural. For some nouns this shift happens in all possible forms, for others only in the singular or the plural. Essentially, a noun's accent pattern must be learned; it is predictable, however, that accent shifts in the plural will always occur in both definite and indefinite forms. Here are some common nouns with accentual shifts (the notation (te) means that the accentuation is the same in both indefinite and definite forms).

	<i>sing. indefinite</i>	<i>sing. definite</i>	<i>plural</i>	<i>(meaning)</i>
<i>Shift in both</i>	гра́д	градъ́т	градове́ (те)	city
	пло́д	плодъ́т	плодове́ (те)	fruit
	сня́г	снегъ́т	снеговé (те)	snow
	ча́с	часъ́т	часовé (те)	hour
<i>Shift in singular only</i>	вкúс	вкусъ́т	вкúсове (те)	taste
	ди́м	димъ́т	ди́мове (те)	smoke
	шúм	шумъ́т	шúмове (те)	noise
<i>Shift in plural only</i>	вя́тър	вя́търът	ветровé (те)	wind

The plural of дeн (днi) was learned in Lesson 6. The plurals of пeт, крaй, and certain other masculine monosyllables, will be learned in Lesson 8.

### 7.5.a. Verbal prefixation and the aspect system

Almost all prefixed Bulgarian verbs are perfective, and are formed by adding a prefix to a simplex imperfective. This produces a new verb, with a new meaning. The imperfective partners of these new verbs are called "derived imperfectives", because each is derived from the corresponding perfective by one of several means, the most common of which is suffixation. All derived imperfectives belong to the a-conjugation, and most contain a characteristic suffix, such as -в- (e.g. побърз-в-ам) or -ав-/-яв- (e.g. пребро-яв-ам). The meaning of a derived imperfective is identical to that of its base perfective except for the absence of the idea of boundedness.

Bulgarian differs markedly from other Slavic languages in this respect. The fact that verbs like правя, пиша and четá do not have perfective partners, and that the prefixed verbs направя, напиша and прочетá are considered to be separate

verbs, each with its own imperfective partner, may mystify the student who is familiar with the aspect system of another Slavic language. The fact that it is difficult to give an English translation for **п<sup>р</sup>а́в<sup>я</sup>** and **нап<sup>р</sup>а́в<sup>я</sup>** which would convey the difference in meaning that goes beyond that of boundedness (aspect), or to characterize a significant difference in meaning (or any at all) between the two imperfective verbs **п<sup>р</sup>а́в<sup>а</sup>** and **нап<sup>р</sup>а́в<sup>я</sup>м**, no doubt compounds the mystification for such a student.

Yet the system makes sense to Bulgarians. Aspect, after all, is nothing more than a coherent way of defining a point of view. What matters is that the system is internally consistent, and that it makes sense to the speakers whose communication system it functions to organize.

### 7.8a. Prepositions

(a) When the preposition **в** “in, into” occurs in front of a word beginning with **в-** or **ф-**, it is doubled. Although it is written **вѣв**, it is frequently pronounced [вѣф]. This pronunciation of **в** can also occur before words beginning with a vowel, and before other consonants as well. In writing, however, only **вѣв** occurs, and only when the following word begins with **в-** or **ф-**. For example:

Аз **и́**мам два хля́ба **вѣв** вла́ка.  
 Те **жи**вѣят **вѣв** Флорѣнция.

Те **хо**дят **че**сто **в** Ирла́ндия.  
 Ни́е **жи**вѣем **в** Со́фия.

[вѣф Ирла́ндия] or [ф Ирла́ндия]  
 [вѣф Со́фия] or [ф Со́фия]

(b) The same is the case with the preposition **с** “with”.

Със **здр**аве да го но́сиш!  
 Аз **ще** до́йда **със** Саби́на.

А **ти** **ще** до́идеш **с** Ива́н.  
 Оби́чаш ли да пи́еш кафе́ **с** мля́ко?

[със Ива́н]  
 [със мля́ко] or [с мля́ко]

### 7.9. Derivation: adjectives in -ен, nouns in -к and in -ник

The process of forming related words from the same root is called *derivation*. In verbs, the most common instance of derivation is the formation of imperfective partners for prefixed perfectives (themselves formed from simple imperfectives by the process of prefixation). The general outlines of verbal derivation will become clear to the student as s/he learns examples of aspect pairs; the details of this system will be studied in Lessons 18 and 26.

Many different words are related by derivational processes. For instance, the suffix **-ен-** creates adjectives from noun roots, the suffix **-к-** creates feminine nouns

from various roots, and the suffix **-ник** creates masculine nouns from various roots. The stem to which the suffix is added is usually recognizably the same as in a word with a closely related meaning.

Learning to recognize individual suffixes, and the general patterns of word derivation, will help the student learn (and retain) new words much more quickly. Below are examples of each of these three very common suffixes.

### Adjectives in **-ен-**

The adjectival suffix **-ен-** is usually added to a noun stem. Sometimes the stem is identical to the noun itself, and sometimes it has been slightly transformed. The suffix is freely added to foreign words as well (rendering them thereby domestic). In many such words, even the Latin suffix “-ic” has been borrowed into Bulgarian as **-ич**, as in the last three items in the chart below.

The suffix **-ен** almost always contains a fleeting vowel. The few instances where it does not (such as **чаен, чаена**, derived from **чай**) will be noted specifically in glossary lists.

<i>noun</i>	<i>stem</i>	+ ен >	<i>derived adjective</i>	<i>(meaning)</i>
свобод-а́	свобод-	+ ен >	свободен, -дна	free
си́л-а	сил-	+ ен >	си́лен, -лна	strong
гла́д	глад-	+ ен >	гла́ден, -дна	hungry
наро́д	народ-	+ ен >	наро́ден, -дна	national
трамва́й	трамвай-	+ ен >	*трамва́ен, -йна	tram
интерес	интерес-	+ ен >	интересен, -сна	interesting
до́м	дом-аш-	+ ен >	домáшен, -шна	domestic
без мес-о́	без-мес-	+ ен >	безме́сен, -сна	meatless
иди́л-ия	идил-ич-	+ ен >	идили́чен, -чна	idyllic
ти́п	тип-ич-	+ ен >	типичен, -чна	typical
екзот-ика	екзот-ич-	+ ен >	екзоти́чен, -чна	exotic

\*Note the spelling rule in **трамва́ен, трамва́й-на**: the stem-final **-й** drops out before a following front vowel, but is retained elsewhere.

## Nouns in -к-

The suffix -к-, which is always followed by the feminine ending -а, is added to various stems. The use of this suffix to form nouns of profession or origin, such as *учителка* or *българка*, was studied in Lessons 1 and 3. These nouns, by definition, always refer to female human beings.

The suffix is also widely used to form nouns denoting objects or concepts. The stem to which the suffix is added can be provided by either a noun or a verb. In the examples below, imperfective verbs are given because the normal dictionary citation form is the imperfective. The stem from which the derived noun is formed carries no aspectual meaning within itself.

## (1) Derivations from a noun base

<i>noun</i>	<i>stem</i>	+ к >	<i>derived noun</i>	<i>(meaning)</i>
ка́рт-а	ка́рт-ич-	+ к >	ка́ртичка	postcard
кѣщ-а	кѣщ-ич-	+ к >	кѣщичка	little house
плѠч-а	плѠч-	+ к >	плѠчка	tile

## (2) Derivations from a verb base

<i>verb</i>	<i>stem</i>	+ к >	<i>derived noun</i>	<i>meaning</i>
рис-ѹвам	рис-ун-	+ к >	рисѹнка	drawing
глѣт-вам	глѣт-	+ к >	глѣтка	swallow
почѣв-ам	почѣв-	+ к >	почѣвка	rest
грѣш-а́	грѣш-	+ к >	грѣшка	mistake
белѣж-а	белѣж-	+ к >	белѣжка	note

### Nouns in -ник

This suffix creates nouns denoting either persons or objects. As in the case of the suffix -к-, the stem to which it is added can be provided by either a noun or a verb. All such nouns shift the final -к to -ц before the plural ending -и. For example:

#### (1) Derivations from a noun base

<i>noun</i>	<i>stem</i>	+ НИК >	<i>derived noun</i>	<i>(meaning)</i>
ча́с	час-ов-	+ НИК >	часо́вник, -ци	clock(s)
вой-на́	вой-	+ НИК >	войни́к, -ци	soldier(s)
ча́й	чай-	+ НИК >	ча́йник, -ци	teapot(s)
пѳ́т	пѳт-	+ НИК >	пѳ́тник, -ци	traveler(s)

#### (2) Derivations from a verb base

<i>verb</i>	<i>stem</i>	+ НИК >	<i>derived noun</i>	<i>(meaning)</i>
у́ч-а *	уч-е-	+ НИК >	учени́к, -ци	pupil(s)
у́ч-а *	уч-еб-	+ НИК >	уче́бник, -ци	textbook(s)
реч-е́ш **	реч-	+ НИК >	рече́чник, -ци	dictionary, -ies
беле́ж-а	бележ-	+ НИК >	беле́жник, -ци	notebook(s)

\* The derivational process is not direct; other forms have intervened. In the case of *уче́бник*, the word itself is a borrowing from Russian.

\*\* The verb *рече́* "say" has a consonant shift similar to that of *мо́ра*: the consonant -к appears before the endings -а, -ат; and the consonant -ч appears before the other endings.



## SAMPLE SENTENCES

1. Всяка сѣдмица ще тѣрся в библиотѣката интересни кнѣги.
2. Ще потѣрся ўтре в библиотѣката интересни кнѣги.
3. Ще чаќам да дѣйдете.
4. Ще почаќам пѣт минути и трѣгвам.
5. Ще купувам мляќо и хляќ всѣки дѣн.
6. Ётре ще купя мляќо и хляќ.
7. Чѣсто го виждам в Университѣта.
8. Ще го видя в Университѣта.
9. Тој чѣсто влиза вкѣщи през прозѣреца.
10. Днес тој няма кљѣч и мѣже да влезе вкѣщи саќмо през прозѣреца.
11. -- Слизате ли на другата спѣрка?  
-- Нѣ. Ще ви направа място да слѣзете.
12. Тя чѣте бѣрзо. За два дни прочита една кнѣга.
13. -- Зная, че обѣчаш шоќолад.  
-- Не обѣчам.  
-- Обѣчаш, обѣчаш, познавам по очѣте!  
-- Познай тоѓава каквѣ ще направа сега!
14. Каќмен мѣже да брои до десет. Каќмен преброява пѣтниците. Наќда не мѣже да ги преброи.
15. -- Бѣрзам за учѣлище.  
-- Побѣрзай да не закѣснѣеш за учѣлище.

## **SENTENCES FOR TRANSLATION**

1. "How will we get in? We don't have keys! "  
"You will help the children to get in through the window. They are small, and can get in but you can't."
2. Please tell the waiter to bring us tomatoes, cucumbers, bread and cheese. And knives and spoons, of course.
3. Come over tomorrow and bring the textbook. I want to show Julie several things.
4. How many loaves of bread [= breads] do you have? Everyone is very hungry. They will also want fruits and vegetables.
5. Here is the station, we'll get off here. Then we'll go into the station and buy two bottles of rakia and three pieces of fruit [= fruits].
6. "Do you travel a lot?"  
"Yes, I go to many villages and cities. Next year I will go to three cities and two villages. After that I will go to the seashore on vacation."
7. Please bring me notebooks, dictionaries, textbooks and pencils. I am going to study for hours and hours. I will be very busy, and won't be able to talk on the telephone.
8. Ivan is telling me that unfortunately he will not be able to come to the movies today. He will write poems for several hours. He wants to finish five new poems. Then he will recite them to the children.
9. How many children will begin school tomorrow? Seven girls and eight boys. The teacher will show them many books and pictures and will help them learn to read and write. Will they make many mistakes? Of course, everyone makes mistakes. Will they be able to read this book [through]? They will not be able to read it immediately, but they will continue to work. Then success will come.

## READING SELECTION

### Кореспонденция - (6)

20 октомври, Сян Франциско

Здравей Бойко,

Патриша много харесва таратора, защото тя обича всички плодове и зеленчуци. Ще купим българска готварска книга. Тук има богат избор от готварски книги. Патриша има цяла колекция. Аз често ѝ купувам готварски книги за подарък. Но да познаваш само кухнята на един народ, не е достатъчно. Добре е да опознаеш и страната. Започвам да мисля, че ще е хубаво догодина да прекараме отпуската в България. Ние обикновено прекарваме отпуската в Америка. Догодина обаче очаквам да имам повече време. Патриша и Калина вече са приятелки. И децата ще намерят общ език. Какво ще кажеш? Какъв план ще направим? Искам пътуването да бъде интересно и за децата.

Пиши ми как сте! Ние сме добре.

Чакам отговор.

Сърдечни поздрави,

Роберт

3 ноември, София

Драги Боб,

Чудесен е планът да дойдете в България на почивка. Очакваме да ви видим тук в София. Опиши ми вкусовете на Патриша и децата. Какво обичат те да гледат? Архитектурата на градове и села или природата? България е малка страна, но със стара история и интересна природа. Има места по вкуса на всеки човек. А как обичате да пътувате? Обичате ли да пътувате с влак?

Днес е неделя. Иво е с други ученици от класа на Витоша. Времето не е много хубаво, но те са млади и могат да издържат ветрове и снеговé. Яна рисува. Калина търси нови думи в речниците: изпитът по английски е скоро.

Поздрави на Патриша и децата.

Всичко хубаво,

Бойко

**GLOSSARY**

ами	but, well	й	[to] her ( <i>indirect object</i> )
архитектура	architecture	иди́лия	idyll
безмѣсен	vegetarian ( <i>adj.</i> ) : without meat	ѝзбор	selection, choice
белѣжа (-иш)	mark	ѝздѣржам / ѝздѣрж́а (-ѝш)	stand, endure
белѣжка	note	ѝзпѣскам / ѝзпѣсна	drop, let go; miss
белѣжник	notebook, notepad	им	[to] them ( <i>indirect object</i> )
богáт	rich	интерѣс	interest
бѣда	be	истѣрѝя	history
веднѣж	once	каквѣ ще кáжеш?	what do you think?
ветровѣ <i>see</i> вѣтър	[to] you ( <i>pl. indirect object</i> )	кáчвам / кáчá (-ѝш)	carry up, take up
ви	taste	кáчвам се / кáчá се (-ѝш)	ascend, get on
вкѣс, -ѣт	war	клáс, -ѣт	class, grade in school
войнá	soldier	( <i>pl. класовѣ</i> )	
войнѝк	in	кльч	key
във = в	believe	клькѣция	collection
вѣрвам	wind	кльчѝка	pushcart
вѣтър ( <i>pl. ветровѣ</i> )		крáй	end
		кѣхнѝя	cuisine
глáд	hunger	кѣщѝчѝка	little house
глѣтвам / глѣтна	swallow		
готвáрсѝ	cooking, culinary	мáса	table
готвáрсѝя кнѝгá	cookbook	ми	[to] me ( <i>indirect object</i> )
грáд, -ѣт ( <i>pl. градовѣ</i> )	city	млáд	young
грѣшá (-ѝш)	sin, err	му	[to] him, it ( <i>ind. object</i> )
декламѝрам	declaim, recite	на	for, to ( <i>indirect object</i> )
дѣгодѝна	next year	на дрѣгáтá спѝркá	at the next stop
дѣм, -ѣт ( <i>pl. домовѣ</i> )	home, house	нарѣд	in order, O.K.
домáшен	home ( <i>adj.</i> )	нарѣд	people, folk
донáсям / донесá	bring	ни	[to] us ( <i>indirect object</i> )
достáтъчен	enough	нѣв	new
дрѣг	next	нѣж ( <i>pl. ножѣвѣ</i> )	knife
дѣмá	word	нѝмá дá	won't ( <i>negative future</i> )
дѣрвѣ ( <i>pl. дѣрвѣтá</i> )	tree		
екзѣтѝкá	exotica, exoticism	обáче	however
желáя	wish, desire	ѣщ	general, common
зabрáвям / забрáвя	forget	ѣгн ( <i>pl. огнѣвѣ</i> )	fire
зáѣт	busy, occupied	ѣпѝсвам / ѣпѝшá (-ѣш)	describe
закъснѝвам / закъснѝя	be late	ѣпѝзнáвам / ѣпѝзнáя	recognize, get to know
занáсям / занесá	carry, take to	ѣт клáсá	from the same school
зеленчѣк	vegetable		class

to oneself	се	answer	ответ
white cheese	сырне	set off for, depart	отправляю
get off, go down,	слизам / слъза	await, expect	очаквам
descend			
snow	снѣг, снѣгѣт	fall	падам / падна
juice	сок	it's snowing heavily	пада голям снѣг
bus or tram stop	спирка	[railway] platform	перон
old	стар	plan	план
country	страна	fruit	плод (pl. плодове)
cold, chill	студ, -ѣт	tile, slab	плоча
with	със = с	about that time	по това време
	(pl. студове)	hurry up	побързам /
notebook	тетрадка	more	побързам
[to] you (indirect object)	ти	present, gift	подарък
type	тип	know; guess	познавам / позная
там (adj.)	тамваден	tell by [someone's]	познавам по очите
seek, look for	търся	eyes	показвам /
university	университѣт	show	показвам (-еш)
student, pupil	ученик	help	помогам / помога
student, pupil (female)	ученичка	portion, serving	порция
like (see L. 12)	харесвам	seek	потърсявам / потърся
refrigerator	хладилник	wait	почаквам / почакам
center	център	spend	прекарвам /
whole, entire	цял, цели	at, by	прекарвам
tea (adj.)	чаен, чаена	nature	природа
teapot	чайник	at, by	природен
hour	час, -ѣт	nature	природен
watch, clock	часовник	worry	притеснявам се /
will (future particle)	ще	at, by	притеснявам се
whether one wants or not	ще не ще	salesperson	притесняващ
		bird	продавач (ка)
		traveler	птица
		travels, trip	пътник
		say, utter	пътуване
		dictionary	река (-ѣш)
		freedom	рѣчник
		oneself, themselves,	се
		itself, etc.	се

## **CULTURAL COMMENTARY**

### **Food and drink: cheese and bread**

Domestic cheese in Bulgaria is of two types. One is white and soft, and the other is yellow and hard. The white soft cheese, called "sirene" (сирене) is known in the West as "feta"; and the harder yellow cheese has begun to be imported under its own name, "kashkaval" (кашкавал). Both are known throughout the Balkans. "Sirene" can be made from either cow's milk or sheep's milk (or a combination of the two). The preferred kind is that made from sheep's milk. Other cheeses are imported into Bulgaria from Western Europe, and are known under their Western names. They remain a specialty item for most Bulgarians, however, and one too expensive to indulge in often.

Like many other Europeans, Bulgarians eat bread with every meal. "Fast-food" kebabs are served with a thick slice of bread.

### **History**

Bulgaria's history is extremely old: the first state was founded in 681. Bulgarian culture flourished during the medieval period, up to the time of the Ottoman conquest in the 14th century. The modern Bulgarian state won its freedom in 1878. Bulgarian history will be outlined in greater detail in Lesson 20.

### **Geography: general**

Bulgaria's landscape is surprisingly varied for its relatively small size. It contains several different ranges of tall mountains, most of the long basin of the Danube (Дунав) river (though not the delta area near its mouth) and a long coastal section along the Black Sea (Чёрно морé).

### **School system: student life**

The terminological difference between pre-university schooling and university education extends to the words for "student". To a Bulgarian, the word студент means only university level. Any student below that level is referred to as an ученик / ученичка. There is no direct equivalent in English: the slightly archaic "pupil" and the more common "schoolchild" usually refer only to the elementary grades. Those enrolled in Bulgarian schools are called ученик / ученичка through the end of high school.

As in other countries, schoolchildren go with their classmates on recreational field trips. A favorite field trip of Sofia schools is to Vitosha, in all seasons of the year.



## LESSON 8

### **DIALOGUE**

#### Влакът е готов да тръгне

// Влакът ще тръгне всеки момент, а Веселин още стои на перона. Плаща на продавачката и взема кебапчетата. Ще успее ли да се качи навреме? //

Продавачката: Побързайте, господине! Ще изпуснете влака!

Веселин: Няма да го изпусна! Довиждане.

// Веселин тича и се качва в последния вагон. Помогат му двама мъже. //

Веселин: Благодаря! Къде съм? В кой вагон?

Владимир: В двайсет и четвърти. Това е последният вагон на влака. Кой вагон търсите?

Веселин: Осемнайсети.

Георги: Седнете, починете си малко! Поемете си дъх!

Веселин: Не мога. Ще изстинат кебапчетата. Децата чакат.

Георги: Млад сте за баща! Колко деца имате? Виждам, че имате много кебапчета!

Веселин: Амii... децата не са мои. Но са много сладки. И гладни! А кебапчетата са и за други пътници в купето.

Георги: Бързайте тогава. Гладни деца не могат дълго да чакат. Мобите деца, например, изобщо не могат да чакат. Хайде! Владо, помогни му!

Владимир: Няма ли някой да седне на моето място?

Георги: Не се притеснявай, аз ще го пазя. Няма да го отстъпя на никого. Изпрати човека!

Владимир: Добре, ще го изпратя. Ще му помогна да занесе кебапчетата на гладните деца. Няма да изстинат кебапчетата.

**BASIC GRAMMAR****8.1. Long adjective forms**

The masculine form of most adjectives ends in a consonant (e.g. голям, хубав, добър, млад). The masculine form of certain adjectives, however, ends in the vowel -и. Among these are ordinal numbers ("first", "second", etc.), all adjectives ending in -ски, and the pronominal adjective всеки "each, every".

Cardinal numbers beyond 2 are unchanging in form. Ordinal numbers are adjectives, and must change to agree with the noun they refer to. Following are the ordinal numbers for 1 through 9:

<i>masculine</i>	<i>feminine</i>	<i>neuter</i>	<i>plural</i>	<i>(meaning)</i>
първ-и	първ-а	първ-о	първ-и	first
втор-и	втор-а	втор-о	втор-и	second
трет-и	трет-а	трет-о	трет-и	third
четвърт-и	четвърт-а	четвърт-о	четвърт-и	fourth
пет-и	пет-а	пет-о	пет-и	fifth
шест-и	шест-а	шест-о	шест-и	sixth
седм-и	седм-а	седм-о	седм-и	seventh
осм-и	осм-а	осм-о	осм-и	eighth
девет-и	девет-а	девет-о	девет-и	ninth

Although the masculine and the plural forms are identical, one can tell either from the noun or from the context which meaning is intended. Ordinals from 5 onwards are formed by adding the above endings to the number itself. For instance, пет [5] + -и gives пет-и [5<sup>th</sup>].

Note that the -e- in седем and осем is treated as a fleeting vowel (седем [7], осем [8], but седми [7<sup>th</sup>], осми [8<sup>th</sup>]).

The spoken form of dates always uses the ordinal form. English speakers can say either "September 15" or "September 15<sup>th</sup>", but Bulgarian speakers can only say петнайсети септémври. When the date is expressed in writing by a number and not a word, the final -и is sometimes added and sometimes not. The date on which something happens is indicated by the preposition на.

В България учениците тръгват  
на училище  
на 15-и септémври  
на 15 септémври.

In Bulgaria children start school  
on September 15th.



Ordinal numbers have both indefinite and definite forms. When these numbers name something, such as a date, an address or a reservation number, they are used in the indefinite. For example:

Днес е втори октомври.  
Ние сме в седми вагон.

Today is October 2<sup>nd</sup>.  
We're in car no. 7.

Живеем в Надежда, блок  
деветдесет и трети, вход  
"Б", пети етаж.

Our address is [= we live in] residential  
district Nadezhda, building no. 93,  
2nd entrance, 5th floor.

When ordinal numbers refer to a counted place in a series, however, they are used in the definite. For example:

Ще слезете на третата спирка.  
Тя живеят на петия етаж.

You [will] get off at the third stop.  
They live on the fifth floor.

## 8.2. Definite forms of adjectives

When a definite noun is modified by an adjective, the article is added to the adjective instead of the noun. If there is more than one adjective, the article is added to the first of the series. The article is placed after the adjective ending. In the case of masculine adjectives, the ending *-и* always appears before the article. The sequence *и + ът* is always written *-ият*. Fleeting vowels are lost before this ending. In the case of alternating root vowels, the *-я-* shifts to *-е-* before this ending.

Here are the definite and indefinite forms of the adjectives *добър* and *голям*, and of the ordinal number *първи*.

	<i>masculine</i>	<i>feminine</i>	<i>neuter</i>	<i>plural</i>
<i>indefinite</i>	добър	добр-а	добр-о	добр-и
<i>definite</i>	добр-ият	добр-ата	добр-ото	добр-ите
<i>indefinite</i>	голям	голям-а	голям-о	голём-и
<i>definite</i>	голём-ият	голём-ата	голём-ото	голём-ите
<i>indefinite</i>	първ-и	първ-а	първ-о	първ-и
<i>definite</i>	първ-ият	първ-ата	първ-ото	първ-ите

English and Bulgarian are alike in that when definite nouns occur preceded by adjectives, the entire phrase is considered definite. The only difference between them in this respect is that in Bulgarian the article occurs *after* the first element in this phrase instead of before it, as in English.

Here are examples of definite nouns both with and without adjectives:

<i>feminine</i>	Чанта-та Голяма-та чанта	е на пода е на пода.	The bag is on the floor. The big bag is on the floor.
<i>neuter</i>	Детё-то Малко-то дете	рисува добре. рисува добре.	The child draws well. The small child draws well.
<i>plural</i>	Моливи-те Цветни-те моливи	са в чантата. са в чантата.	The pencils are in the bag. The colored pencils are in the bag.
<i>masculine subject</i>	Молив-ът Червен-ият молив	е тук. е тук.	The pencil is here. The red pencil is here.
<i>masculine object</i>	Виждаш ли Виждаш ли	молив-а? червен-ия молив?	Do you see the pencil? Do you see the red pencil?

As in definite nouns, the masculine object form drops the -т. Remember that in Bulgarian, the category “subject” includes predicate nouns, and that the category “object” includes objects of prepositions. For example:

<i>subject</i>	Това е последният вагон на влака.	It's the last car of the train.
<i>object</i>	Веселин се качва в последния вагон.	Veselin gets into the last car.

### 8.3. Possessive pronominal adjectives

Possessive pronominal adjectives in Bulgarian are similar to other adjectives in that they change form to agree with the noun they refer to. In Bulgarian, the question word чий “whose” also belongs to this group. These adjectives, whose forms are given below, are used most frequently in the definite form, although the indefinite form can be used in certain instances.

	<i>masculine</i>	<i>feminine</i>	<i>neuter</i>	<i>plural</i>	<i>(meaning)</i>
<i>1sg</i>	МОЙ	МО-Я	МО-Е	МО-И	my/mine
<i>2sg</i>	ТВОЙ	ТВО-Я	ТВО-Е	ТВО-И	your(s)
<i>3sg fem</i>	НЕИН	НЕЙН-А	НЕЙН-О	НЕЙН-И	her(s)
<i>3sg masc</i>	НЕГОВ	НЕГОВ-А	НЕГОВ-О	НЕГОВ-И	his
<i>1pl</i>	НАШ	НАШ-А	НАШ-Е	НАШ-И	our(s)
<i>2pl</i>	ВАШ	ВАШ-А	ВАШ-Е	ВАШ-И	your(s)
<i>3pl</i>	ТЕХЕН	ТЯХН-А	ТЯХН-О	ТЕХН-И	their(s)
<i>query</i>	ЧИЙ	ЧИ-Я	ЧИ-Е	ЧИ-И	whose

There are fleeting vowels in both **неин** and **тѣхен**, but their behavior is quite different. The vowel in **неин** is, exceptionally, **-и-**. As do other fleeting vowels in adjectives, it appears only in the masculine singular. However, a trace of it (in the form of the consonant **-й-**) is present in the remaining forms. Note that the masculine form **неин** has two syllables, while the stem seen in other forms (**нейн-**) has only one.

Note that the adjective meaning “their” has not only a vowel-zero alternation (**тѣхен** / **тѣхни**) but also an **е** / **я** alternation in the root (**тѣхен** / **тѣхна**).

#### 8.4. Negative and indefinite pronouns

Question words are those which request information, and with which one forms questions. Practically all such words in Bulgarian begin with **к-** (**кой**, **кога**, **къде**, **какво**, etc.). Negative and indefinite pronouns are formed by adding the prefixes **ни-** and **ня-**, respectively, to these words. The Bulgarian system is much more symmetrical in this respect than the English one:

	<i>identity</i>	<i>time</i>	<i>place</i>	<i>character</i>	<i>manner</i>
<i>question</i>	<b>кой?</b> who?	<b>кога?</b> when?	<b>къде?</b> where?	<b>какъв?</b> what sort?	<b>как?</b> how?
<i>negative</i>	<b>ни-кой</b> no one	<b>ни-кога</b> never	<b>ни-къде</b> nowhere	<b>ни-какъв</b>	<b>ни-как</b>
<i>indefinite</i>	<b>ня-кой</b> someone	<b>ня-кога</b> sometime	<b>ня-къде</b> somewhere	<b>ня-какъв</b> some sort	<b>ня-как</b> somehow

The English translation “what sort?” for **какъв** in the above chart does not cover all the meanings of the Bulgarian word. No translations are given for **никакъв** or **никак**, since for these words the correct translation depends on the context. The form **понекога** “sometimes” also exists. It differs slightly in meaning from **някога** “sometime” (in the meaning “at some point in the past”).

The words for “nothing” and “something” are formed by adding recognizable prefixes not to the question word **какво** but to the more colloquial word **що**:

<i>negative</i>	<b>нищо</b>	nothing
<i>indefinite</i>	<b>нещо</b>	something

When the words in the “identity” column refer to human beings, they have both a subject and an object form. The subject form is the one listed above, and the object form ends in **-го**: **кого**, **никого**, **някого**. The object form must be used whenever the pronoun is the object of the verb or of a preposition. For example:

*subject*

Кой живее тук?	Who lives here?
Някой чака на вратата.	Someone is waiting at the door.

*object*

С когото живеете?	Who do you live with?
На когото помагаш?	Whom are you helping?
Виждаш ли някого?	Do you see someone?

### 8.5. Double negatives

In Bulgarian, as in all Slavic languages, multiple negative markers are required. If the verb is negated and the sentence includes pronouns or adverbs for which there exists a negated form, this negated form must be used. This is in contrast to English, where only one negative marker per sentence is permitted. For example:

Никъде никого не виждам.	I don't see anyone anywhere.
Той нищо не знае.	He doesn't know anything.
Няма да го дам на никого.	I won't give it to anyone.
Никой няма да седне тук.	No one will sit down here.

### 8.6. Word order and the future tense

Pronoun objects of a verb in the future tense must be placed after the future markers (*ще* or *няма да*) and before the verb.

Ще го пазя, няма да го отстъпя. I'll guard it. I won't give it up.

The question marker *ли* occurs after the main verb when the future marker is *ще*. When the future marker is *няма да*, the question marker occurs after the negative form *няма*. For example:

Ще дойдеш ли утре?	Are you coming tomorrow?
Няма ли да дойдеш утре?	Aren't you coming tomorrow?

### 8.7. The particles *се* / *си* with verbs

Bulgarian grammars usually refer to the particles *се* and *си* as "reflexive". Formally, these particles are object pronouns. They obey the same word order rules as object pronouns, and they are formally similar with the 1sg-2sg object pronouns:

	<i>direct object</i>	<i>indirect object</i>
<i>1<sup>st</sup> singular</i>	<b>МЕ</b>	<b>МИ</b>
<i>2<sup>nd</sup> singular</i>	<b>ТЕ</b>	<b>ТИ</b>
<i>reflexive</i>	<b>СЕ</b>	<b>СИ</b>

Functionally, however, they have a double life. They can be used either as the object of a verb, or as part of the verb itself. When used as pronoun objects, they are called “true reflexives” -- the objects of a verb whose action “reflects” back onto the subject. That is, the person who is the object of the verb is simultaneously its subject. Here are examples illustrating the difference between non-reflexive and reflexive usage. (Reflexives will be studied in more detail in Lesson 13.)

*non-reflexive*

<b>Ма́йката ми́е дете́то.</b>	The mother washes the child.
<b>Весели́н ка́зва не́що на Джу́ли.</b>	Veselin says something to Julie.

*reflexive*

<b>Дете́то се ми́е.</b>	The child washes [himself].
<b>Весели́н си ка́зва не́що.</b>	Veselin says something to himself.

More commonly, the particles **се** and **си** occur as “verbal additives”, becoming part of an individual verb’s meaning. In this usage, the two particles function quite differently. When the particle **се** accompanies a verb, it is usually an integral part of that verb. The complex “verb + **се**” then becomes a unique verb all its own. Here are examples of verbs with and without this particle:

<i>+/- particle</i>	<i>verb</i>	<i>(meaning)</i>
<i>without</i>	<b>ка́звам / ка́жа</b>	say [something]
<i>with</i>	<b>ка́звам се</b>	be called
<i>without</i>	<b>приби́рам / приберá</b>	gather, collect
<i>with</i>	<b>приби́рам се / приберá се</b>	come home
<i>without</i>	<b>разби́рам / разберá</b>	understand
<i>with</i>	<b>разби́ра се (3sg)</b>	of course
<i>without</i>	<b>ка́чвам / качá</b>	lift [something]
<i>with</i>	<b>ка́чвам се / качá се</b>	get on [bus, train, etc.], go up
<i>without</i>	<b>притесня́вам / притесня́</b>	cause concern [to someone]
<i>with</i>	<b>притесня́вам се / притесня́ се</b>	worry

There is not always a predictable relationship between the meaning of a verb with *ce* added, and the same verb without *ce*. Sometimes the difference is one of transitivity (the ability to take a direct object), in which case there is no separate dictionary entry. But when the meaning is sufficiently different, as in the above, each of the verbs is a separate dictionary entry. (The usage of *ce* to mark intransitivity will be studied in Lesson 11.)

The particles *ce* and *си* function quite differently. Although *ce* is obligatory, in that it is part of the verb it accompanies (and indeed, makes this verb into a new and different verb), *си* is optional. It can be added to a verb or not as the speaker chooses. When it is present, it adds the meaning of greater intimacy, of greater involvement in the action. For instance, in the expression **поемам дъх**, “catch [one’s] breath”, a Bulgarian could say either of the following two sentences:

<b>Седнете, поемете дъх!</b>	Sit down and catch your breath!
<b>Седнете, поемете си дъх!</b>	[same]

The second version is much more frequently heard, no doubt because it is generally perceived that someone out of breath is (or should be) highly involved in the action of catching his breath.

### 8.8. Prepositions

(a) The preposition **към** means “towards”. It indicates movement in the direction of a certain point, both in space and in time. It is also used in a number of idiomatic expressions to indicate relationship.

<b>Детето тича към градината.</b>	The child runs towards the park.
<b>Към пет часа ще сме готови.</b>	We’ll be ready towards/around 5:00.
<b>Напоследък тя проявява интерес към средновековието.</b>	Lately she has been showing an interest in the Middle Ages.
<b>Ще намериш новите думи в допълнението към речника.</b>	You’ll find [the] new words in the supplement to the dictionary.

(b) The primary meaning of the preposition **от** is “from”. Although many instances of it are translated with other prepositions in English, most still maintain the general idea of separation. (For more on the use of the preposition **от** in phrases of comparison, see Lesson 10.)

<b>Никой от моите приятели не може да повярва това.</b>	None of my friends can believe it.
<b>Никой не обича животните повече от Емили.</b>	No one likes animals more than Emily.

(c) The preposition **на** is used to specify intervals in space or time. The English phrases “at a distance of...” or “at intervals of...” may help the student learn this usage.

Рѝлският манастир е на два  
часа път с кола от Сѝфия.

Rila monastery is about two hours'  
drive from Sofia.

Ще гълташ лека̀рствата на 8  
часа.

Take the pills every 8 hours.

(d) The preposition **през** also specifies intervals of space or time, but intervals that are skipped over.

Списанието излиза през  
седмица.

The magazine comes out every other  
week.

Тя посажда по едно дърво  
през три къщи.

She plants a tree every three houses.

Той живее през три улици.

He lives three streets over from here.

### 8.9. Demonstrative pronouns, continued

Corresponding to the pronoun **то̀зи** “this” is the pronoun **ѝнзи** “that”. The forms are similar to those of **то̀зи**. They are:

<i>masculine</i>	<i>feminine</i>	<i>neuter</i>	<i>plural</i>	
ТО-ЗИ	ТА-ЗИ	ТО-ВА	ТЕ-ЗИ	this
ѝН-ЗИ	ѝНА-ЗИ	ѝНО-ВА	ѝНЕ-ЗИ	that

English speakers should beware of translating “this” and “that” directly into Bulgarian. As the following example shows, the *neutral* demonstrative pronoun in English is “that”, but in Bulgarian it is **то̀зи** “this”.

Та̀зи къща е много хубава.

That house is very nice.

The difference may be schematized as follows:

	<i>nearby</i>	<i>neutral</i>	<i>distant</i>
English	this	that	that
Bulgarian	то̀зи	то̀зи	ѝнзи

## EXERCISES

I. Rewrite the sentences changing all underlined nouns to the appropriate pronouns:

1. Пётър и Нádка нýма да глédат фýлма в недéля.
2. Ще прочетéш ли писмóто на бáбата?
3. Нýма ли да покáжеш на Ангел списáнието?
4. Ще полúчим ли писмáта след трé дни?
5. Бáба нýма ли да оберé тáзи сéдмица лýка?
6. Кáмен нýма да отстýпи мóливите на Нádка.
7. Лéкарят ще преглéда пациéнтите след óбед.

II. Expand each of the following sentences by adding one or more of the following adjectives before each noun: добър, интересен, леден, малък, православен, софийски, истински, американски, бял, голям, цветен, млад, български, пресен, дълъг, топъл, наш, ваш.

1. Ще поднесат на гостите плодове и чай.
2. Децата гърсят моливи.
3. Църквата има история.
4. Днес е студено. Духа вятър. Децата гледат снега през прозореца.
5. Туристите ходят на екскурзии.
6. Адвокатът очаква Дейвид и Джули с нетърпение.
7. Приятелите пишат писма.

III. Rewrite the following sentences as negative.

1. Той отива някъде и бърза.
2. Това ни интересува, разкажете ни го.
3. Някои дава на децата орехи.
4. Майката ги храни с лъжичка.
5. Те някак ще наредят нашата програма.
6. Ангел вижда някого през прозореца.
7. Някой звъни на вратата.



**ADDITIONAL GRAMMAR NOTES****8.1a. Long adjective forms**

All adjectives formed with the suffix **-ск-** add **-и** in the masculine form. This suffix is used to create adjectives from a number of stems. It is very frequent with proper nouns (names of places or regions). Additional suffixes are sometimes added when adjectives are formed from proper nouns. Although the proper nouns themselves are capitalized (as in English), the adjectives formed from them are not.

<i>noun</i>	<i>stem</i>	+ - ск- >	<i>adjective (masculine)</i>	<i>(meaning)</i>
мѣж	мѣж-	+ - к- >	* мѣжк-и	masculine
йстин-а	истин-	+ -ск- >	йстинск-и	true
Рѣл-а	рил-	+ -ск- >	рилск-и	of Rila
Европ-а	европ-ей-	+ -ск- >	европейск-и	European
Куб-а	куб-ин-	+ -ск- >	кубинск-и	Cuban
Византи-я	византий-	+ -ск- >	византийск-и	Byzantine

\* The adjective мѣжки is formed on to this pattern, but is written without the **-с-**.

**8.2a. Definite forms of adjectives**

Adjectives can often refer to nouns which are not stated. Some such adjectives in fact now function as full-fledged nouns, three examples of which are given below. Although they look like singular neuter nouns, their plural endings show that they are essentially adjectives:

<i>singular indefinite</i>	<i>singular definite</i>	<i>plural indefinite</i>	<i>plural definite</i>	<i>(meaning)</i>
живѳтн-о	живѳтн-ото	живѳтн-и	живѳтн-ите	animal
контрѳлн-о	контрѳлн-ото	контрѳлн-и	контрѳлн-ите	quiz, test
домашн-о	домашн-ото	домашн-и	домашн-ите	homework

The longer forms **контрѳлна рѳбота** and **домашна рѳбота** also exist, and also mean "quiz" and "homework", respectively. The fact that the shorter forms end in **-о** is proof that they now function as nouns on their own -- if the noun **рѳбота** were there but simply remained unspoken, the shorter forms would end in **-а**.

## Осми урок / Lesson 8

Indeed, adjectives used alone are usually understood to refer to a particular noun which does not happen to be stated. Since that noun almost always refers to something that has already been mentioned, the adjective appears in its definite form. For instance:

-- Која чанта търсите?

"Which bag are you looking for?"

-- Голямата.

"The big one."

Димът е опасен за малките.

Smoke is dangerous for the small ones.  
(Here "small ones" = "children"  
in the generic usage.)

### 8.2b. Soft adjectives

One commonly used adjective, *син* "blue", ends in a soft consonant. To signify this, the endings of the feminine and neuter forms must be spelled with *-я* and *-ьо*, respectively. The forms of this adjective are as follows:

	<i>masculine</i>	<i>feminine</i>	<i>neuter</i>	<i>plural</i>
<i>indefinite</i>	<b>СИН</b>	<b>СИН-Я</b>	<b>СИН-ЬО</b>	<b>СИН-И</b>
<i>definite</i>	<b>СИН-ИЯТ</b>	<b>СИН-ЯТА</b>	<b>СИН-ЬОТО</b>	<b>СИН-ИТЕ</b>

### 8.3a. Possessive pronominal adjectives

Like other forms with adjectival endings, the possessive pronominal adjectives can occur in both definite and indefinite variants. The definite form is used when the topic has been mentioned before, or is known in some way. Since that which is possessed is usually a known quantity to the possessor, these adjectives tend to occur most frequently in the definite form. If the information is new, however, or if the identity of that which is possessed is unspecified, then the indefinite form will be used. Here are examples, with the presumed meaning given below in italics.

#### Indefinite form

Деца́та не са мо́и.

The children are not mine.

*It is not known whether or not the speaker has children; all he says here is that the children in question are not his.*

Мо́и прия́тели, напри́мер,  
не и́скат да хо́дят на аеро́бика.

[Some of] my friends, for example,  
don't [like to] go to aerobics classes.

*The identity of the friends who don't do aerobics is not specified beyond the fact that they are among the group "friends of the speaker".*

**Definite form**

Тези деца не са мои.

These children aren't mine.  
[= aren't the ones that are mine.]

*The participants in the conversation are aware that the speaker has children; what he says here is that the children in question are not the ones we know to be his.*

Моите деца, например,  
изобщо не могат да чакат.

My children, for example,  
can't wait at all.

*For the speaker, the fact that the children are his is a given and therefore known; the new information is about their inability to wait.*

**8.5a. Negative expressions, continued**

The negative form of the conjunction и "and" is **ни́то**, which also exists in a more colloquial variant, **ни**. Its most frequent use is as an intensifier. The examples below illustrate the affirmative intensifier use of **и**, and the parallel negative usage of **ни́то** / **ни**. Note that in the affirmative sentence, the English translation specifies this intensification by means of the adverb "even". The negative sentence, however, has no way to express the parallel intensification, since only one negative is allowed in English.

Тя знае много езици.  
Знае и български.  
Той не знае ни една дума  
български.  
Не разбира ни́то дума.

She knows many languages.  
She even knows Bulgarian.  
He doesn't know a word of Bulgarian.  
He doesn't understand a single word.

**8.6a. Word order rules and the future tense**

Word order rules involving the future particle **ще** (*Fut.*) are similar in many ways to those involving the negative particle **не** (*Neg.*) and the conjunction **да** (*Cnj.*). These otherwise unrelated words share three important characteristics:

- they are unaccented
- they may begin a sentence or a clause
- they must be followed directly by the sequence "clitic(s) plus verb" (or the verb itself if no clitics are present)

Therefore, these particles are designated by a capitalized abbreviation. This designation opposes them both to fully accented words (such as *verb*, designated all in lower case) and to true clitics (such as the short form direct object pronoun *DIR*, designated all in upper case). Examples of word order in the future tense, with

numbering cumulative across lessons, are given below. Note the similarity to word order in negative constructions and да-phrases. Note also that the negative future marker **няма да** also follows the same rules by virtue of its second member, **да**.

### Simple future tense

Regardless of the place of **ще** in the sentence, a pronoun object of a verb in the future tense must be placed between the particle **ще** and the verb form.

(18) **Аз**

<b>ще</b>	<b>го</b>	<b>па́зя.</b>
<i>Fut.</i>	<i>DIR</i>	<i>verb</i>

 I will guard it.

(19) 

<b>Ще</b>	<b>му</b>	<b>помо́гна</b>
<i>Fut.</i>	<i>IND</i>	<i>verb</i>

<b>да</b>	<b>ги</b>	<b>зане́се.</b>
<i>Cnj.</i>	<i>DIR</i>	<i>verb</i>

 I'll help him carry them.

### Similarity of future tense and negated present tense

When pronoun objects are present, the word order of future tense and negated present tense sentences is identical. The only difference is that the clitic pronoun is accented after the negative particle but not after the future particle.

(20) 

<b>Ще</b>	<b>го</b>	<b>изпра́тя.</b>
<i>Fut.</i>	<i>DIR</i>	<i>verb</i>

 I'll accompany him.

vs.

(21) 

<b>Не</b>	<b>го́</b>	<b>изпра́щам.</b>
<i>Neg.</i>	<i>DIR</i>	<i>verb</i>

 I'm not accompanying him.

(22) 

<b>Ще</b>	<b>му</b>	<b>помо́гна.</b>
<i>Fut.</i>	<i>IND</i>	<i>verb</i>

 I'll help him.

vs.

(23) 

<b>Не</b>	<b>му́</b>	<b>помо́гам.</b>
<i>Neg.</i>	<i>IND</i>	<i>verb</i>

 I'm not helping him.

### Negated future tense

Pronoun objects after negated future verbs are treated exactly as pronoun objects after **да**. The notation reflects this by separating the negative future marker **няма да** into the stressed word **ня́ма** (*neg.*) and the conjunction **да** (*Cnj.*). Compare the similarity with the да-phrase in example (19) above.

(24) 

<b>Ня́ма</b>	<b>да</b>	<b>го</b>	<b>отста́пя</b>	<b>на ни́кого.</b>
<i>neg.</i>	<i>Cnj.</i>	<i>DIR</i>	<i>verb</i>	<i>indirect obj.</i>

 I won't give it up to anyone.

- (25) Няма да му каже.  
*neg. Conj. IND verb* She won't tell him.

### Simple questions in the future tense

To form a question in the future tense, add the interrogative particle **ли** immediately after the verb, as in other questions. The placement of object pronouns is not changed. These rules also apply to embedded questions.

- (26) Ще успее ли да го купи?  
*Fut. verb INT Conj. DIR verb* Will he manage to buy it?
- (27) Ще ми помогнеш ли?  
*Fut. IND verb INT* Will you help me?
- (28) Питай го ще дойде ли.  
*verb DIR Fut. verb INT* Ask him if he is coming.
- (29) Не знаем ще можем ли да дойдем.  
*Neg. verb Fut. verb INT Conj. verb* We don't know whether or not we'll be able to come.

### Negated questions in the future tense

Questions formed from negative futures are more complex. The particle **ли** comes between the two components of the negative future marker **няма да**. In word order terms, the accented word **няма** functions as a verb; therefore it is normal that it should be followed directly by the interrogative particle.

Pronoun objects continue to follow the conjunction **да**, which is also the norm for them. Note that this rule does not allow anything to come between **да** and the verb except a pronoun object. Thus, if the subject of the verb is expressed, it is placed *after* **няма ли** but *before* **да**.

- (30) Няма ли да дойдеш утре?  
*neg. INT Conj. verb* Aren't you going to come tomorrow?
- (31) Няма ли да ѝ помогнеш?  
*neg. INT Conj. IND verb* Won't you help her?
- (32) Няма ли някой да седне тук?  
*neg. INT subject Conj. verb* Won't someone sit down here?
- (33) Няма ли да го питаш ще дойде ли?  
*neg. INT Conj. DIR verb Fut. verb INT* Aren't you going to ask him whether or not he is coming?

<b>8.7a. The particles се / си with verbs</b>
---

The particles **се** and **си** can function either as reflexive objects of the verb, or as integral components of a verb's meaning. In either case, they obey the word order rules for direct and indirect object pronouns, respectively.

The addition of **се** to a verb always creates a new verb, one in which the change of meaning is not directly predictable. The addition of **си** to a verb is optional (but frequent), and the change in meaning is usually the same: the often untranslatable overtone of greater involvement and intimacy.

There are a few instances, however, where the particle **си** does change the meaning sufficiently to create a new verb. One of these is the perfective form of the verb **почивам** (perfective **почина**). This verb means "rest", and in the imperfective can be used either with or without **си**. For example:

Вие как **почивате**?

What do you do on vacation?  
[= How do you rest?]

Сегá **си** **почивам** хубаво -- четá  
един ромán.

I'm having a nice rest -- I'm reading  
a novel.

In the perfective, however, the verb has two different meanings. **Почина си** continues to mean "rest", but **почина** alone is a euphemism for "die", or "go to one's eternal resting place." The particle **си** in this instance functions to distinguish these two meanings.

Other verbs where the **си** can change the meaning are **лягам** (perfective **лэгна**). Without **си**, the verb means "lie down", but with **си**, it usually means "go to bed." The verb **спомням си** "remember, keep a memory of" occurs only with the particle **си** attached. In this sense, exceptionally for the system, it is like a **се**-verb.

Лéкарят **казва** на **пациэнта**  
-- **Легнэте**, **ще** **ви** **преглéдам**.

The doctor says to the patient:  
"Lie down, and I'll examine you."

Мáйката **казва** на **детéто**  
-- **Легни си**, **мнóго си** **уморéн**.

The mother says to the child:  
"Go to bed, you are very tired."

Ние **си** **спомняме** **добрóто** **стáро**  
**врéме**.

We remember the good old days.

### 8.10. Plural of masculine monosyllabic nouns, continued

Most masculine monosyllabic nouns add the ending **-ове** in the plural. A few, however, simply add **-е**. This plural ending is always accented. Except for **мъж** and **княз**, the nouns which form their plurals in this way also all take the article in **-ят**. The accent in the definite form is not predictable.

Three relatively common nouns have the irregular plural ending **-ища**. They also take the article in **-ят**.

<i>singular indefinite</i>	<i>singular definite</i>	<i>plural</i>	<i>(meaning)</i>
мъж	мъж-ът	мъж-е́	man, husband
княз	княз-ът	княз-е́	prince
крал	крал-ят	крал-е́	king
цар	цар-ят	цар-е́	emperor
ко́н	ко́н-ят	ко́н-е́	horse
път	път-ят	път-ища́	way, road
сън	сън-ят	сън-ища́	dream, sleep
край	край-ят	край-ища́	end

There are also several common nouns which, although they are monosyllabic, take the plural ending **-и**. Two have a fleeting vowel and the article in **-ят**, and three are unremarkable (at least in the singular).

Finally, several masculine nouns form the plural with **-а**, and one forms its plural with **-я**. The first of these endings is always accented.

<i>singular indefinite</i>	<i>singular definite</i>	<i>plural</i>	<i>(meaning)</i>
ла́кът	ла́кът-ят	ла́кт-и	elbow
но́кът	но́кът-ят	но́кт-и	nail [finger/toe]
зъ́б	зъ́б-ът	зъ́б-и	tooth
фи́лм	фи́лм-ът	фи́лм-и	film
го́ст	го́ст-ът	го́ст-и	guest
кра́к	крак-ът	крак-а́	leg, foot
ли́ст	ли́ст-ът	ли́ст-а́	leaf [on a tree]
но́мер	но́мер-ът	но́мер-а́	number, No.
госпо́дин	госпо́дин-ът	господ-а́	Mr., gentleman
бра́т	бра́т-ът	бра́т-я	brother

Note that the noun **госпо́дин** loses its “singular” ending **-ин** in the plural. The noun **ли́ст** in the meaning “sheet of paper” has the plural which is more regular for a monosyllabic noun: **ли́стове**.

### 8.11. Conjoined phrases

Often speakers wish to emphasize the connection (or lack thereof) between words or phrases. To do this, Bulgarian simply repeats the conjunctions. Note the difference from English, where a paired set of conjunctions must be used:

и ... и	both...and
или ... или	either...or
ни ... ни	neither...nor

For example:

Тя знае и английски, и български.	She knows both English and Bulgarian.
Той не знае нито английски, нито български.	He knows neither English nor Bulgarian.
Или ще дойда, или няма да дойда.	Either I'll come or I won't.

Finally, there is a striking difference between English and Bulgarian in the construction of phrases such as "John and I" or "he and Emily". To refer to a pair of persons one of whom is being mentioned for the first time, speakers of English simply join the proper name and the singular pronoun by the conjunction "and".

Bulgarians, however, refer to the *pair* with a pronoun, and add the proper name as part of a prepositional phrase. The literal translation of such phrases, therefore, would be (in highly awkward English) "We with John", "They with Emily". This usage occurs in both subject and object positions. For example:

Ние с Патриша често ходим на екскурзии.	Patricia and I often go on excursions.
Те с Йво ще ходят на цирк.	S/he and Ivo are going to go to the circus.
Това наистина е важно за нас с Дейвид.	It's really important for David and me.

(The object pronoun form нас "us" will be learned in Lesson 10.)



### 8.12. Conjoined adjectives

When two nouns of different gender are modified by the same adjective, the form of the adjective depends on whether or not the nouns refer to something that can be counted. If so, then the adjective is in the plural. If not, then the adjective agrees with the first of the two nouns. For example:

Мóите бáба и дýдо живéят  
на сéло.

My grandmother and grandfather live  
in the village.

Слáга тóпъл чáй и млякó  
на мáсата.

She puts hot tea and milk on the  
table.

When the same noun is modified by two different adjectives, it retains the singular form, even though it is clearly plural in meaning. For example:

Тóй знáе и бýлгарски и  
английски език.

He knows both Bulgarian and English  
[languages].

Червénата и зелénата тóпка са  
пó-хýбави от жýлтата.

The red and green balls are nicer than  
the yellow one.

(The comparison of adjectives, as in пó-хýбав “nicer”, will be learned in Lesson 10.)



Downtown Smolyan, central Rhodopes

### **SAMPLE SENTENCES**

1. Първи януари е първият ден на годината. Той е почивен ден.
2. Иво е ученик от осми клас. Емили е ученичка от седми клас. Единайсети е последният клас.
3. Нашата първа кола е волга. Втората ще е рено.
4. Човек трудно научава първия чужд език. Вторият и третият са лесни.
5. Тая и Петър живеят в десети блок, на третия етаж, в апартамент петдесет и седем.
6. Топлото прясно мляко е полезно за здравето.
7. Ти сънуваш ли цветни сънища?
8. Всички пътища водят към Рим.
9. От младите листа на лозата в България правят сарми.
10. Учителката раздава на учениците листовце хартия.
11. Учениците правят номера на младата учителка.
12. Нищо не го интересува. Никъде не иска да ходи.
13. Нямам никакви познати в България.
14. Тук никой на никого не пречи.

## SENTENCES FOR TRANSLATION

1. Will you help them? You won't help them? Why not?
2. Where do your friends live? Mine live in Nadezhda 181, entrance B, 7th floor.  
They don't like living on the seventh floor; they prefer the top [= last] floor.
3. Which month of the year is December? Is it the first or the last? The twenty-first day of December is the first day of winter.
4. Will you tell me where your colored pencils are? I want the blue one. Does Ivo have it? Will he put it on the table now, or will he keep it in the red bag?
5. No one knows who is coming today. No one ever knows who is coming, or when.
6. Where are the blue books and the red dictionaries? I don't see anything at all here. I know that they are somewhere but I don't know where. Who can know?
7. Will you ask them when they are leaving? I won't forget them. No one can forget them.
8. Either she knows Bulgarian or she doesn't. If she knows it now, will she forget it tomorrow?
9. Everyone remembers the good old times. Will we remember them? Won't we forget them?
10. Don't put either elbows or feet on the table! Nobody anywhere does that.

## READING SELECTION

### Аз обичам да пътувам

Том: Последните почивни дни прекарах в Сoфия. Искам да видя и други интересни места. Не можеш ли да предложиш нещо интересно за следващата събота?

Васил: Можем да отидем на Витоша. Това е любимото място на много хора в Сoфия.

Том: Вече бях там. Предпочитам да е далече от Сoфия. Аз обичам да пътувам. Казват, че в Родопите е много интересно. Можем да отидем там.

Васил: Това е добра идея. Освен това имам приятели в Смолян. Те ще ни покажат града.

Том: Ако искам да гледам градове, ще остана в Сoфия. Интересува ме природата.

Васил: Не се бой, никой няма да те заключи в апартамент. Ще можеш много да се разходиш в природата. Можеш да видиш и истински елен или сърна. Не ти пожелавам да видиш истински гладен вълк. Вълците не разпознават любителите на природата и ги третират като обикновени хора.

Том: Значи в събота взимаме влака и отиваме в Смолян, нали?

Васил: Не го взимаме, защото до там няма влак. Можем да отидем с директен автобус до Смолян или с влак до Пловдив, а след това с автобус. Няма да е хубаво да пристигнем в Смолян много късно.

Том: Няма ли да пътуваме много дълго?

Васил: Няма. Няма да прочетеш и един вестник и ще бъдем там.

Том: Знам как ти четеш вестници. Ти четеш до последната буква.

Васил: Нищо подобно. Дори няма да реша кръстословицата. А от Пловдив до Смолян автобусите са почти през един час.

Том: А има ли интересни неща в Пловдив?

Васил: Разбира се, особено в стария град.

Том: Вече започвам да съжалявам, че няма да имаме време да го видим.

Васил: Ще го оставим за друг път.

## GLOSSARY

аеробика	aerobics	и ... и	both...and
американски	American ( <i>adj.</i> )	изобщо	in general, at all
апартамент	apartment	изпращам /	send off, see off,
баба	grandmother	изпратя	accompany
баща	father ( <i>see L. 10</i> )	изстивам /	grow/become cold
блок	apartment building	изстина	
боя се	fear	или ... или	either...or
брат ( <i>pl. братя</i> )	brother	интересувам	interest
буква	letter (of alphabet)	истински	real, true
важен	important	княз ( <i>pl. князе</i> )	prince
ваш	your, yours	кого	whom
византийски	Byzantine	комплекс	complex
вода	lead, take	кон, -ят ( <i>pl. коне</i> )	horse
втори	second	контролен	control ( <i>adj.</i> )
вход	entrance	контролна работа	exam, quiz
вълк ( <i>pl. вълци</i> )	wolf	контролно	exam, quiz
гост ( <i>pl. гости</i> )	guest	край ( <i>pl. краища</i> )	district
гълтам	swallow	крак, -ът	leg
гълтам лекарство	take medicine	( <i>pl. крака</i> )	
девети	ninth	крал, -ят	king
директен	direct	( <i>pl. кралé</i> )	
довидане	goodbye	кръстословица	crossword puzzle
домашно	homework	кубински	Cuban
допълнение	addition, supplement	към	toward
дори	even	лакът, лакътят	elbow
дълго	a long time	( <i>pl. лакти</i> )	
дъх	breath, wind	леден, -ена	ice ( <i>adj.</i> ), frozen
дядо ( <i>pl. in L. 10</i> )	grandfather	лекарство	medicine
европейски	European	любим	favorite
екскурзия	excursion	любител	lover, fan
елен	deer, stag	лягам си /	go to bed
етаж	floor [of a multi-story building]	легна си	
животно	animal	манастир	monastery
жилищен	residential	матура	matriculation [exam]
жилищен комплекс	block of apartments, residential district	мия	wash
жълт	yellow	мой	my, mine
заклочвам /	lock	моравски	Moravian
заключача (-иш)		мъж, -ът	man, husband
зелен	green	( <i>pl. мъже</i> )	
зъб, -ът ( <i>pl. зъби</i> )	tooth	мъжки	male, masculine
		надяжда	hope
		напоследък	lately
		например	for example
		нас	us ( <i>see L. 10</i> )

Осми урок / Lesson 8

наш	our, ours	познат	acquaintance
негов	his	полезен	useful
неин, нейна	her, hers	полезно за	good for one's health
нетърпение	impatience	здравето	
ни	not, neither	получавам /	receive, get
ни ... ни	neither... nor	получа (-иш)	
никак	not at all	понякога	sometimes
никакъв	none, no kind of	посаждам / посадя	seat, plant
никога	never	почивам си /	rest
никого	no one ( <i>object</i> )	почина си	
никой	no one ( <i>subject</i> )	почивен	rest ( <i>adj.</i> )
никъде	nowhere	почивен ден	day off, holiday
нищо	not, neither	почина	die
нищо подобно	not a single word	почти	almost
нокът, нокътят	nothing	православен	Orthodox [religion] ( <i>adj.</i> )
( <i>pl.</i> нокти)	nothing of the sort	права номера на	play dirty tricks on
номер ( <i>pl.</i> номера)	nail (on hand or foot)	преглеждам /	examine
някак	number, size	прегледам	
някакъв	somehow	предлагам /	proffer, propose
някога	some sort	предложа (-иш)	
някой	some time	през	( <i>distributive</i> ) see p. 151
някъде	someone	през седмица	every other week
	somewhere	пресен, прясна	fresh
		реча (-иш)	bother
		прибирам /	gather, collect
		прибера	
		прибирам се /	arrive home
		прибера се	
		притеснявам /	worry, cause concern to,
		притесня	embarrass
		програма	program
		проявявам /	appear, show
		проявя	
		проявявам интерес	take an interest in
		към	
		път, -ят	way, path
		( <i>pl.</i> пътища)	
		раздавам / раздам	give out, distribute
			( <i>conj. in L. 9</i> )
		разказвам /	relate, tell
		разказа (-еш)	
		разпознавам /	distinguish, discern
		разпозна	
		разхождам се /	walk around, take a walk
		разходя се	
		решавам /	solve
		реша (-иш)	
		решавам	do a crossword
		кръстословница	puzzle
		рилски	Rila ( <i>adj.</i> )
обед ( <i>or</i> обяд)	lunch		
обикновен	usual		
обирам / обера	plunder, pick		
онази	that ( <i>feminine</i> )		
онези	those		
онзи	that ( <i>masculine</i> )		
онова	that ( <i>neuter</i> )		
осемнайсети	eighteenth		
осми	eighth		
особено	especially		
оставам / остава	leave		
от	than		
отстъпвам / отстъпя	step back, yield,		
	give up		
пазя	guard, protect		
пети	fifth		
писмо	letter		
по пътя	along the way		
по-хубав	nicer, prettier		
	( <i>see L. 10</i> )		
повярвам	believe, give credence		
подобен	similar		
поемам / поема	take, take up		
поемам [си] дъх	catch one's breath		
пожелавам /	wish		
пожелая			

седми	seventh	успявам / успея	succeed
син (синя, синьо)	blue	филм (pl. филми)	film, movie
следващ	next	хартия	paper
софийски	of Sofia ( <i>adj.</i> )	храня	feed, nourish
списание	magazine	цар, -ят (pl. царé)	tsar, emperor
спомням (си) / спомня (си)	recall	чакам с нетърпение	await eagerly
средновековне	Middle Ages	чета до последната	read every last word
съжалявам / съжаля	regret, be sorry	буква	
сън (pl. сънища)	dream	четвърти	fourth
сън, -ят	sleep	чий, чия, чие, чий	whose
сърна	deer, doe	чужд	foreign, alien
твóй	your, yours ( <i>singular</i> )	шести	sixth
техен, тяхна	their, theirs	щó	what
тичам	run	януáри	January
топка	ball		
трети	third		
третирам	treat		
турист	tourist		
уморен	tired		



Courtyard of Rila Monastery

## CULTURAL COMMENTARY

### Housing

Most people in larger cities live not in self-standing houses, but in apartment buildings. This is especially the case in the capital city, Sofia, which is surrounded by large complexes of apartment buildings. Each of these large units is called a **жилищен комплекс**, and has an overall name, such as "Nadezhda" (Надежда). Although there are streets among the buildings, addresses refer not to the streets but to the numbers of the buildings (which can be in the hundreds). Each building usually has several entrances which are labeled in alphabetical order (А, Б, В, Г, etc.), and many floors. The numbers of the apartments do not necessarily correspond to the floors, but since there are only two to three apartments on each floor (accessible from that entrance, that is), people usually give just the floor as part of the address. It is crucial, however, especially in the case of very large apartment buildings, to know the correct entrance.

### School system: exams

Written quizzes and exams taken by students in school are called **контролни работи**. The term **изпит** "examination" refers only to qualifying examinations of the sort that determine one's future. One of these is the "matura" (**матура**), taken at the end of secondary schooling. Most Bulgarians, when they hear the word **изпит**, however, think of University entrance examinations. These examinations are extremely difficult and competitive; it is often said, only partly in jest, that the hardest part of university education is being admitted.

### Food and drink: milk

Yogurt (**кисело мляко**) is such a staple of the Bulgarian diet that Bulgarians often add the adjective **прясно** "fresh" to describe what in western countries is simply "milk". Bulgarians always heat fresh milk before drinking it. Sometimes they let it cool first but more often they drink it hot; the general belief is that hot milk is very healthful.

### Geography: Rila

One of the many picturesque mountain areas in Bulgaria is that called Rila (**Рила**), located to the south of Sofia. It is a favorite excursion spot for both locals and foreigners, not only for the mountain sports of hiking and fishing, but because of the Rila monastery (**Рилският манастир**) nestled among the mountains. The monastery was founded in the 11th century and has been destroyed and rebuilt many times since. One tower now remains from the 12th century, but the interest is the present structure, built in the 19th century on older models. This includes a large Byzantine-style church in the center of a courtyard, with monastery cells surrounding it on all sides. The whole monastery is colorfully painted and decorated. A hotel has been built outside the monastery walls, but it is sometimes possible to sleep in the monastery itself.

### Geography: the Rhodopes

The Rhodope mountains are very rugged, and wild animals roam freely; hunting is a popular sport. Settlements in the Rhodopes are small; the central city, Smolyan (**Смолян**), is a recent creation. It consists of three large villages, each of which has retained its original character to a considerable extent. Two of these, Ustovo (**Устово**) and Raykovo (**Райково**), are now equivalent to suburbs. The central village, formerly called Pashmakli (**Пашмакли**), is now "city center". There are no direct train lines to Smolyan; one can only travel there by bus.

### Geography: Plovdiv

Plovdiv (**Пловдив**, ancient Philipopolli) is the second largest city in Bulgaria. A number of fine Roman ruins are to be seen there, and the old city has been restored in 19th-century style. It is situated on the main road between Sofia and Istanbul, Turkey.

### Travel: trains and buses

Long-distance travel in Bulgaria is accomplished by train and bus. The train lines are run by the state, but long-distance bus travel is now carried out by a number of private companies. Most towns are serviced by one or more bus lines.



## LESSON 9

### **DIALOGUE**

#### Слава Бóгу, вие сте тóка!

// Владимир и Веселин вървят бързо по коридора. Като минават вагоните, Веселин ги брои: два̀сет и трети, два̀сет и втори, два̀сет и първи, два̀сети, деветна̀сети... //

Веселин: Най-после дойдохме! Осемна̀сети! Влез, Владимире, в нашето купе, и седни малко. Понед да изядеш едно кеба̀пче и да изпиеш една ракия.

Камен: Ура! Кеба̀пчетата пристигат! Кой са моите?

Веселин: Ето ги твоите, ето и за другите.

Таня: Вече започвам да се притеснявам. Слязохте и никакъв ви няма.

Джули: Слава Бóгу, вие сте тóка. Не са важни кеба̀пчетата, важното е, че не сте останали там в Шумен.

Камен: Как да не са важни кеба̀пчетата!?

Милена: Кеба̀пчетата не са достатъчно солени! Някой има ли сол?

Таня: Аз имах сол тóка някъде... Не я виждам.

Надка: Мамо, Камен пипа солницата сутринта.

Камен: Аз само посолех пу̀канките и я оставих на място.

Таня: Ето я солта. Намерих я. В чантата е. Заповядайте, госпожо.

Камен: М-м-м. Много хубави кеба̀пчета! Наядох се. Няма да ям до утре сутринта.

Таня: Няма ли да вечеряш довечера?

Камен: Може би. Ще видим.

Таня (на Веселин): Кеба̀пчетата са найстина много вкусни. Благодаря ви!  
(на Владимир): И на нашия гост, за неговата помощ.

Веселин: Да, много ти благодаря, Владо. Ето, вземи моите кеба̀пчета. Давам ти ги в знак на благодарност!

Владимир: Ти не си ли гладен?

Веселин: Няма значение. Важното е, както казва Джули, че не съм останал там в Шумен.

## BASIC GRAMMAR

### 9.1. The verbs *да́м* and *я́м*

The verbs *да́м* “give”, *я́м* “eat” (and all perfective verbs formed from them), are slightly irregular in the present tense. All forms but the 1<sup>st</sup> singular follow the e-conjugation. The stem is *дад-* and the accent is on the theme vowel. The 1<sup>st</sup> singular, by contrast, contains only the initial consonant plus [-ам] (*д + ам* > *да́м*, *й + ам* > *я́м*). The imperative forms are also irregular. Here are the full conjugations of these verbs:

	<i>singular</i>	<i>plural</i>	<i>singular</i>	<i>plural</i>
1 <sup>st</sup> person	я́м	яд-ём	да́м	дад-ём
2 <sup>nd</sup> person	яд-ёш	яд-ёте	дад-ёш	дад-ёте
3 <sup>rd</sup> person	яд-ё	яд-а́т	дад-ё	дад-а́т
imperative	я́ж	я́ж-те	да́й	да́й-те

### 9.2. Aorist tense, continued

The aorist tense is formed by adding the aorist endings (learned in Lesson 6) to the aorist theme vowel. The aorist theme vowel for most *и*-conjugation verbs is *-и-*. For comparison, here are the present and aorist tense forms of the verbs *хо́дя* and *бро́я*:

	PRESENT	AORIST	PRESENT	AORIST
1 <sup>st</sup> singular	хо́д-я	хо́д-их	бро-я́	бро-и́х
2 <sup>nd</sup> singular	хо́д-иш	хо́д-и	бро-и́ш	бро-и́
3 <sup>rd</sup> singular	хо́д-и	хо́д-и	бро-и́	бро-и́
1 <sup>st</sup> plural	хо́д-им	хо́д-ихме	бро-и́м	бро-и́хме
2 <sup>nd</sup> plural	хо́д-ите	хо́д-ихте	бро-и́те	бро-и́хте
3 <sup>rd</sup> plural	хо́д-ят	хо́д-иха	бро-я́т	бро-и́ха

For most *и*-conjugation verbs, therefore, and for all *а*-conjugation verbs, the present and aorist theme vowels are the same. This means that the 3<sup>rd</sup> singular forms are identical. However, context is usually sufficient to indicate which meaning is intended.

An important group of verbs forms the aorist with two different theme vowels: these verbs have -e- in the 2<sup>nd</sup> and 3<sup>rd</sup> singular, and -o- in other persons. Most of these verbs also have a different accent in the aorist from that of the present. As examples of this type, here are the present and aorist conjugations of **четá** and **да́м**.

	PRESENT	AORIST	PRESENT	AORIST
1 <sup>st</sup> singular	чет-á	чѐт-оx	да́м	да́д-оx
2 <sup>nd</sup> singular	чет-ѐш	чѐт-е	дад-ѐш	да́д-е
3 <sup>rd</sup> singular	чет-ѐ	чѐт-е	дад-ѐ	да́д-е
1 <sup>st</sup> plural	чет-ѐм	чѐт-оxме	дад-ѐм	да́д-оxме
2 <sup>nd</sup> plural	чет-ѐте	чѐт-оxте	дад-ѐте	да́д-оxте
3 <sup>rd</sup> plural	чет-áт	чѐт-оxа	дад-áт	да́д-оxа

All prefixed forms of these verbs form the aorist tense in exactly the same manner. The aorist forms of the verb **я́м** are parallel to those of the verb **да́м**.

Two very important members of this group are the motion verbs **до́йда** and **оти́да**. They are noteworthy because they have different accentual patterns. The accentuation of **до́йда** is the reverse of other verbs in this class: it has stem stress in the present and end stress in the aorist. The accent of **оти́да** does not change from present to aorist. Here are the present and aorist conjugations of these two verbs:

	PRESENT	AORIST	PRESENT	AORIST
1 <sup>st</sup> singular	до́йд-а	дойд-оx	оти́д-а	оти́д-оx
2 <sup>nd</sup> singular	до́йд-еш	дойд-ѐ	оти́д-еш	оти́д-е
3 <sup>rd</sup> singular	до́йд-е	дойд-ѐ	оти́д-е	оти́д-е
1 <sup>st</sup> plural	до́йд-ем	дойд-оxме	оти́д-ем	оти́д-оxме
2 <sup>nd</sup> plural	до́йд-ете	дойд-оxте	оти́д-ете	оти́д-оxте
3 <sup>rd</sup> plural	до́йд-ат	дойд-оxа	оти́д-ат	оти́д-оxа

### 9.3. Feminine nouns in a consonant

Most nouns ending in a consonant are masculine (**вля́к**, **трамва́й**, etc.), and most nouns ending in -a are feminine (**кни́га**, **библиотéка**, etc.). However, a certain number of nouns ending in a consonant are also feminine (**со́л**, **но́щ**, **помо́щ**, **ѐсен**, **прóлет**, etc.). For these nouns, the "rhyming principle" does not work. The student must learn the fact of feminine gender when learning each of these nouns, and must remember that all adjectives, demonstrative pronouns, and articles which occur with them must be marked as feminine. For example:

Да́й ми солта́, мо́ля.	Give me the salt, please
Благодаря́ за ва́шата по́мощ.	Thank you for your help.
Есента́ е злата́на.	Autumn is golden.
През пролетта́ цветя́та цъфтя́т.	Flowers bloom in the spring.
Чета́ “Хиля́да и една́ но́щ”.	I’m reading “1001 Nights”. *

(\* The noun но́щ appears in the singular here because the title is a fixed expression; normally the plural would occur after a complex number ending in 1.)

All feminine nouns take the definite article -та. Note that when added to a feminine noun ending in a consonant, this article is *always* accented, and that when added to a feminine noun ending in -а it is *never* accented.

#### 9.4. Past active participles as adjectives

Past active participles are adjectives formed from verbs. They describe the state that results after the verbal action they refer to has taken place. For instance, the adjective минал “last, past” is the past active participle of the verb мина “pass”.

All Bulgarian verbs can form a participle indicating that an action has been carried out. This participle is used to form several compound verb tenses, which will be learned in later lessons. The focus in this lesson is on the use of the participle as a predicate adjective.

The endings of this participle are given below. It is often called the “L-participle” because its characteristic mark is the consonant -л-, which occurs immediately before the gender-marking endings.

<i>masculine</i>	<i>feminine</i>	<i>neuter</i>	<i>plural</i>
-л	-ла	-лю	-ли

When these participles modify nouns, they function exactly as adjectives (only certain of these participles can occur in this position). In this usage, they are usually definite. For example:

Миналата седмица беше много трудна.	Last week [= the past week] was a very difficult one.
Остаталото ядене ще сложа в хладилника.	I’ll put the leftover food in the refrigerator.

A much more frequent use of these participles is as predicate adjectives. In this usage, they retain more of their verbal meaning. Examples:

Ядене не е остáнaло.	There isn't any food left.
Вáжното е, че не стé остáнали в Шúмен.	The important thing is that you didn't remain in Shumen.
Вáжното е, че не сáм остáнал в Шúмен.	What's important is that I didn't remain in Shumen.

The last two translations of the predicative participle *остáнал* render it as a verbal tense. This is partly because of the meaning of the verb *остáна*, and partly because the most common usage of the L-participle is indeed within the compound tense called the “past indefinite”. Even within a verbal tense, however, the participle formally continues to function as an adjective: it takes the same endings all adjectives take, and follows the same agreement rules. In meaning, it is both adjectival and verbal. It is a verb because it describes a state which is the result of a verbal action; and it is an adjective because it applies that state to the description of a person or thing.

In the case of the above example, the state is that of “remaining in Shumen”. Both speakers are describing a person by noting that the present state of “remaining in Shumen” does not apply to him. The participle form must agree with the subject of the sentence. When the speaker, a male, is referring to himself, the participle must have the masculine ending. When someone else refers to him with the polite form *вúе*, however, the participle must have the plural ending.

The complete rules for forming the L-participle will be learned in Lesson 16, and the past indefinite tense will be studied in more detail in Lessons 16 and 21.

### 9.5. Word order of object pronouns

When a single verb occurs with two objects, one is a direct object and one is an indirect object. If both objects are expressed by pronouns, the indirect object pronoun must precede the direct object one. These two object pronouns must occur together, in this sequence, adjacent to the verb. Here are two examples:

Сегá ти го дáвам.	Now I'm giving it to you.
Ще им ги дáвам.	I'll give them to them.

### 9.6. Time expressions: time of the day

Following are the names of the portions of the day, the adverbs locating an action within that time frame, and the greeting appropriate to that time of day. Upon taking leave of someone, one says *довúждане* during the day but *лéка нóщ* at night.

Девети урок / Lesson 9

<i>time period</i>	<i>adverb of time</i>	<i>greeting</i>	<i>(meaning)</i>
сúтрин	сúтрин, сутринта	добро úтро!	morning
обя̀д	на обя̀д	до̀бър де́н!	noon
следобед	след обя̀д, следобед	до̀бър де́н!	afternoon
вече́р	вече́р, вечерта	* до̀бър вече́р!	evening
но́щ	през но́щта	* до̀бър вече́р!	night
полуно́щ	в полуно́щ		midnight

\* Although the word **вече́р** is usually feminine, it is masculine in the fixed expression **до̀бър вече́р**. Note the accent of **до̀бър** in these fixed expressions.

Usually, the definite forms of **сúтрин** and **вече́р** refer to a particular morning or evening, and the indefinite forms refer to the general idea of morning or evening. But the definite forms can also be used with the general meaning. For example:

*specific*

Сутринта́ ймам срéща в 9 ч. I have an appointment at 9 this morning.

Вечерта́ ще оти́да да го ви́дя. I'll go see him this evening.

*general*

Сúтрин ста́вам ра́но, а вече́р ля́гам къ́сно. I get up early and go to bed late.

Сутринта́ оти́вам ра́но на ра́бота, а вечерта́ се приби́рам уморе́н като кúче. I go to work early in the morning and come home at night tired as a dog.

The chart below gives the relative terms for the time of day, looking both forward and back from the vantage point of "today":

<i>- 2 days</i>	<i>- 1 day</i>	<i>NOW</i>	<i>+ 1 day</i>	<i>+ 2 days</i>
о̀нзи де́н	вче́ра	дне́с	у́тре	дру́ги де́н
	вче́ра сутринта́	сутринта́	у́тре сутринта́	
	вче́ра следобед	(дне́с) следобед	у́тре следобед	
	сно́щи	та́зи вече́р / * до́вече́ра	у́тре вече́р	
	ми́налата но́щ	та́зи но́щ	дру́гата но́щ	

\* Be careful to distinguish the adverb **до́вече́ра** "this evening", which refers to the forthcoming evening of the same day, from the prepositional phrase **до вече́ря** "until/before supper". Note also that **до́вече́ра** can be used only in an anticipatory sense. Once one is speaking in the present, one must use **та́зи вече́р** in the meaning "this evening".

**9.7. Time expressions: days and months**

Names for the days of the week are formed from several roots, although the “counting” principle is evident in several of them. Names of the months of the year are, as in English, derived from Latin.

*Days of the week:*

понеделник	Monday	четвъртък	Thursday
вторник	Tuesday	петък	Friday
сряда	Wednesday	събота	Saturday
		неделя	Sunday

The word for “week” is *седмица*.

*Months of the year:*

януари	January	юли	July
февруари	February	август	August
март	March	септември	September
април	April	октомври	October
май	May	ноември	November
юни	June	декември	December

The word for “month” is *месец*.

Days of the week are preceded either by the preposition **в** or by a modifier; and months of the year are preceded by the preposition **през**. When the date is given, the preposition **на** is used. For example:

Хайде да ходим на Витоша в неделя.	Let's go to Vitosha on Sunday.
Ходим на Витоша всяка неделя.	We go to Vitosha every Sunday.
Обикновено ходим на морето през [месец] август.	We usually go to the seashore in [the month of] August.
Ще тръгнем на 15-и август.	We'll leave on August 15.

**N.B.: Neither the days of the week nor the months of the year are capitalized in Bulgarian!**

### 9.8. Time expressions: seasons of the year

The four seasons (годишните времена) are as follows:

пролет	spring	есен	fall
лято	summer	зима	winter

All four names of the seasons can be preceded by the preposition **през**, in which case they are used with the definite article. **Пролет** and **есен** are feminine nouns, with definite forms **пролетта**, **есента**. With these two, the preposition **на** can also be used, in which case they are used in the indefinite form, and are written together with the preposition as one word. All four names can also appear without the preposition. In this case, **есен** and **пролет** can be used either with or without the article, but **лято** and **зима** must always be used with the article.

In theory, the definite forms refer to the season just ahead (or just past) and the indefinite forms refer to general time. In practice, however, they are used more or less interchangeably. For example:

(През) пролетта цветята цъфтят. Напролет съм някак по-весел.	In spring, the flowers bloom. For some reason, I'm happier in the spring.
(През) лятото ще ходим на морето. Лятото ще бъдем там, а не тук.	This summer, we'll go to the seaside. In the summer we'll be there, not here.
Гроздето зрее (през) есента. Наесен децата ще започнат училище.	Grapes ripen in the autumn. This autumn, the children will start school.
През зимата времето ще е студено. Зимата е студена.	It will be cold this winter. It's cold in the winter.

### 9.9. Time expressions: years, and numbers beyond 100

To speak of the years in Bulgarian, one needs to form numbers in the hundreds and thousands. These numerals are:

100	стó	600	шестстотин
200	двéста	700	сéдемстотин
300	трíста	800	óсемстотин
400	чéтиристотин	900	дéветстотин
500	пéтстотин	1000	хилйáда



Years are referred to by ordinal numbers. The year 1975, for example, is reckoned as the one thousand nine hundred and seventy-*fifth* year. Note that only the final number takes the ordinal form. Thus:

хиляда деветстотин седемдесет и пет-а годин-а      1975

Years are preceded by the preposition *през*. When years are written with numerals, the abbreviation *г.* (for *година*) follows. Sometimes the *-a* of the ordinal is added after the numeral, and sometimes it is omitted.

<i>през</i> 1975 г.	<i>in</i> 1975
<i>през</i> 1975-а г.	( <i>same</i> )

### 9.10. Time expressions: "next" and "last"

To refer to time periods just past or just ahead, Bulgarians use the words *следващ* "next" or *минал* "last". Both are participial forms functioning as adjectives; they must therefore agree with the nouns they modify. If the time period they refer to functions as the subject of the sentence, masculine forms will have the subject ending. Usually, however, they are used in adverbial phrases, and masculine forms will therefore have the object ending. The definite form is almost always used.

*subject usage, subject case*

Миналият месец беше много студен, а предишният не толкова.	Last month was very cold, but the month before not so much.
--	---

*adverbial usage, object case*

Следващата седмица ще ходим там.	We'll go there next week.
Той беше във Варна миналия месец.	He was in Varna last month.

If the preceding or coming time periods are not the ones that are immediately past or ahead, respectively, the modifiers *предшнен* "previous" or *предстоящ* "forthcoming" are used.

### 9.11. Conjunctions: като vs. както

The conjunctions *като* and *както* are both translated roughly "as". The difference in meaning is that *като* refers to simultaneous actions, while *както* expresses a relationship of similarity. The conjunction *като* also means "when".

Като минава вагоните, Веселин ги брои. As he passes through the cars, Veselin counts them.

Важното е, както Джули казва, че не съм останал в Шумен. The important thing is that, as Julie says, I didn't remain in Shumen.

Той закъснява както винаги. Пак ще изпусне влака! He's late, as always. He's going to miss the train again!

Another difference between them is that **като** can also function as a preposition with a noun object following, whereas **както** can only be followed by a full phrase containing a verb.

### 9.12. Prepositions

A number of prepositions have idiomatic meanings when they function as a part of time expressions. Here is a review of the commonest of these:

в	неделя	on Sunday
на	15(-и) август	on August 15 <sup>th</sup>
през	август	in August
през	лято	during the summer
през	1975 г.	in 1975
през	деня	during the day
през	нощта	at night
по	обяд	around noon

## EXERCISES

I. Rewrite the following sentences in the past tense, changing any adverbs of time to *вчера*, and changing the aspect as necessary.

1. Следобед научаваме новите думи.
2. Нанка раздава на пътниците по една рисунка.
3. Кучето скача на леглото.
4. Вие днес получавате отговор на писмото.
5. Децата са гладни и затова проявяват нетърпение.
6. Пътниците слизат един след друг от влака.
7. Сутринта съм свободна и отивам на кино.

II. Rewrite the following sentences, changing plural to singular.

1. Прекарахме приятни вечери с моите приятели.
2. В хотелите има свободни стаи.
3. Топло е. Отвори вратите и прозорците!
4. Приятелките на Таня знаят и други хубави песни.
5. Днес ученичките и учениците ще получат колети.
6. Тенджерите, чайниците и лъжиците са на масите.
7. В тези квартали има болници.
8. През юни нощите са кратки, а дните са дълги.

III. Rewrite the following sentences, changing all underlined nouns to the appropriate pronouns.

1. Нали си добро момче, Камене, отстъпи папагала на Нанка.
2. На Нова година родителите раздават на децата подаръци.
3. Димитър и Милена носят на свекървата снимки.
4. Дейвид предлага вестника на Джули.
5. Бойко поднася кафето на гостите.
6. Няма ли да покажете на Боб къщата?
7. Ангел съобщава на Дейвид новините.

## ADDITIONAL GRAMMAR NOTES

### 9.2a. Aorist tense, continued

#### Optional stress shifts in the aorist

All verbs whose aorist theme vowel is the same as the present theme vowel have identical forms in the 3<sup>rd</sup> singular present and 3<sup>rd</sup> singular aorist. Some speakers of Bulgarian will shift the stress to the theme vowel in the aorist form to emphasize the fact that the form means "past" and not "present". This stress shift is acceptable only in non-prefixed forms. The possible forms, therefore, are:

	<i>present</i>		<i>simple aorist</i>		<i>prefixed aorist</i>		
<i>1<sup>st</sup> singular</i>	хóд-я		хóд-их	or	ход-íх		разхóд-их се
<i>3<sup>rd</sup> singular</i>	хóд-и		хóд-и	or	ход-í		разхóд-и се

Many speakers do not shift stress at all, and those who do will usually vacillate between stem stress and end stress in the aorist forms.

This stress shift is possible with all non-prefixed verbs which have the aorist theme vowel *-и-* or *-а-* (thus it applies also to certain of the aorist forms to be learned in subsequent lessons). However, none of the sentences, dialogues and reading selections in this textbook will exemplify this optional accentuation.

#### Aorist in *-ох*, continued

Verbs which form the aorist in *-ох* all belong to the *e*-conjugation. Their 1<sup>st</sup> singular present forms (the dictionary form) end in a consonant preceded by *-а*. With a very few exceptions (which will be noted below), they all have end stress in the present. This fact can obscure the presence of an alternating stem vowel. since the *-я-* alternant appears only when the vowel is accented. Certain verbs of this group, therefore, have the stem vowel *-e-* throughout the present tense, but an alternating vowel in the aorist. The verbs *секá* and *облекá* are given as examples; the verb *съблекá* is conjugated according to the same format.

	<i>PRESENT</i>	<i>AORIST</i>	<i>PRESENT</i>	<i>AORIST</i>
<i>1<sup>st</sup> singular</i>	сек-á	сяк-ох	облек-á	обляк-ох
<i>2<sup>nd</sup> singular</i>	сеч-éш	сеч-е	облеч-éш	облеч-е
<i>3<sup>rd</sup> singular</i>	сеч-é	сеч-е	облеч-é	облеч-е
<i>1<sup>st</sup> plural</i>	сеч-ém	сяк-охме	облеч-ém	обляк-охме
<i>2<sup>nd</sup> plural</i>	сеч-éте	сяк-охте	облеч-éте	обляк-охте
<i>3<sup>rd</sup> plural</i>	сек-át	сяк-оха	облек-át	обляк-оха

Note the shift of the stem-final -к in these verbs to -ч whenever the theme vowel (either present or aorist) is -е. Note also that not every verb of this class with stem-final -к has an alternating vowel. The aorist tense of текá, for instance, is тéкох.

The motion verb отíда is one of the few verbs within this class with no shifting stress. The other three are also motion verbs: вля́за, сля́за, and изля́за. Thus, the aorist of вля́за is вля́зох. The 3<sup>rd</sup> singular forms of these verbs are alike in present and aorist: both are влéзе. There is no optional stress shift to the end in the aorist forms of this group.

### 9.3a. Feminine nouns in a consonant

Because these nouns end in a consonant, there is always a sequence of [consonant + т] in the definite form. If this sequence contains [т + т], *both* consonants are pronounced. This is done by lengthening the “т” sound.

It is not always possible to know which nouns ending in a consonant will be feminine; most must be learned. Because all nouns ending in the suffix -ост are feminine, their gender is predictable and they have no need of special marking. Other feminine nouns ending in a consonant will be marked as feminine in glossary listings, in the following manner:

вéчер, -та́

### 9.5a. Word order of object pronouns

If a verb takes two objects and both are pronouns, the indirect object must precede the direct one. This sequence (*IND-DIR*) obeys all the word order rules learned earlier:

- it *cannot* begin a sentence
- it *must* occur directly adjacent to the verb
- if **ли** is present, it must *follow* this particle
- if **ще**, **да** or **не** is present, it must be placed *between* this particle and the verb

Examples are given on the next page, with the numbering cumulative across lessons. The rules are straightforward, but it will take a great deal of practice before their implementation feels natural. Because unaccented words are pronounced together with the following (or preceding) word, they are harder to decipher when heard, and harder to produce quickly if one must plan one’s sentence consciously. The more unaccented words there are strung together, the more concerted attention it is necessary to pay.

- (34) 

Давам	ти	ги.
<i>verb</i>	<i>IND</i>	<i>DIR</i>

 I give them to you.
- (35) 

Сегá	ти	ги	давам.
	<i>IND</i>	<i>DIR</i>	<i>verb</i>

 Now I'm giving them to you.
- (36) 

Даваш	ли	ми	ги?
<i>verb</i>	<i>INT</i>	<i>IND</i>	<i>DIR</i>

 Are you giving them to me?
- (37) 

Не	ти	ги	давам.
<i>Neg.</i>	<i>IND</i>	<i>DIR</i>	<i>verb</i>

 I'm not giving them to you.
- (38) 

Ще	ти	ги	даде	ли?
<i>Fut.</i>	<i>IND</i>	<i>DIR</i>	<i>verb</i>	<i>INT</i>

 Will he give them to you?
- (39) 

Няма	да	ти	ги	даде.
<i>neg</i>	<i>Сnj.</i>	<i>IND</i>	<i>DIR</i>	<i>verb</i>

 He won't give them to you.

### 9.6a. Time expressions: periods of the day

There is a relatively close fit between English and Bulgarian as concerns words for the periods of the day. Several non-correspondences should be noted, however. First, Bulgarians use **сутрин** to refer to the earlier part of the morning, usually until about 9:00 or (at the latest) 10:00. The period between that and 12:00 noon is usually called **преди обяд**.

The corresponding expression, **след обяд**, can mean either the early afternoon, or the entire afternoon. For the idea "noon", Bulgarians invariably say **обяд**, but for the idea "midnight" they can say either **полунощ** or **12 часа през нощта**. Finally, the early hours of the morning when one is still usually asleep can also be referred to as part of the night.

в чéтири часá през нощта	at 4 in the morning
в чéтири часá сутринта	[same]

Second, the words for "noon" and "evening" are similar to the words for the meals eaten at those times:

<i>time of day</i>	обяд	noon	вечер	evening
<i>meal</i>	обед	lunch	вечеря	supper

The word **обяд** is used with both meanings, but the word **обед** means only "lunch".

Adjectives referring to times of the day are in general derived directly from the word for that time by addition of the suffix **-ен**. In a few cases, the stem contains the suffix **-ш-**, and, in one instance, the stem is different.

<i>time of day</i>	<i>stem</i>	+ ен >	<i>adjective</i>
с-úтрин	утрин-	+ ен- >	úтринен, úтринна
обяд	обед-	+ ен- >	обеден, обедна
следобед	следобед-	+ ен- >	следобеден, следобедна
вечер	вечер-	+ ен- >	вечерен, вечерна
нощ	нощ-	+ ен- >	нощен, нощна
днес	днеш-	+ ен- >	днешен, днешна
вчѐра	вчѐра-ш	+ ен- >	вчѐрашен, вчѐрашна
утре	утре-ш-	+ ен- >	úтрешен, úтрешна
снощи	снощ-	+ ен- >	снощен, снощна

These adjectives are used frequently in phrases such as **днешен ден** “today”, **обедно време** “noontime”, **нощно време** “nighttime”, and the like.

Similar adjectives are formed from the adverb **сега** and the future form **бѐде**: these mean “present” and “future”, respectively. They are used to refer to time periods in general and to two of the verbal tenses already learned (the names of other verbal tenses will be learned later):

сегашно време	present tense
бѐдеще време	future tense

### 9.7a. Time expressions: days of the week

Calendars in Bulgaria begin the week with Monday (as opposed to most countries in the West, where they begin with Sunday). The fact that Monday is the first day of the week can be seen from the names for Tuesday (**вторник**), Thursday (**четвъртък**) and Friday (**петък**), which contain the stems of the words 2<sup>nd</sup>, 4<sup>th</sup> and 5<sup>th</sup>, respectively. The fact that Wednesday (**сряда**) is considered the middle day of the week can be seen from its name, which is a variant form the word **средá** “middle”.

The names for the other three days have a different origin. The word for Saturday (**сѐбота**) comes from the word “sabbath”; and the word for Sunday (**недѐля**) comes from an old Slavic word meaning “no-work”. The name for Monday (**понеделник**) means simply “that which comes after Sunday”. Finally, the word for “week” (**сѐдмица**) contains the number 7, corresponding to the seven days of the week.

**9.10a. Adverbs with time expressions**

The conventions “B.C.” and “A.D.” are expressed in two different ways. The cutoff point (the birth of Christ) is expressed either as *новата ера* “the new era” or *Рождество Христово* “the birth of Christ”. The phrases are:

преди н.е.	or	преди Р.Хр.	B.C.
от н.е.	or	след Р.Хр.	A.D.

Although the phrase *слéдващата годи́на* “next year” exists, the adverb *догоди́на* is used much more frequently in this meaning.

To focus on the length and duration of a period of time, the modifier *цял/цели* “entire, all” is used. It is sometimes used with the preposition *през*, but more frequently it occurs without a preposition. Like all adjectives, this modifier has both definite and indefinite forms. In theory, definite forms refer to a particular time period and indefinite ones to generalized situations.

In the case of *цял*, however (as in the case of the seasons), this distinction is being lost. Today Bulgarians use both forms in both meanings (to refer to a particular time period, or to state a general observation). Context is usually sufficient to tell which is meant.

Днес цял / целия ден ще четá, а вечерта ще изведá кучето на разходка.	I'll read all day long, and in the evening walk the dog.
Цяла / цялата сутрин го няма.	He hasn't showed up the entire morning.
Цяла / цялата вечер ще слушаме музика.	We'll listen to music the whole evening.

If the preposition *по* is present, only the indefinite form of *цял* can be used. Conversely, if duration is expressed with the preposition *през*, only the definite form (either of *цял* or of a noun) can be used. For example:

По цял ден приказва по телефона.	She talks on the phone all day. [= a whole day at a time]
Някои чакат по цели седмици.	Some people [have to] wait for weeks [at a time].
През целия ден ще съм заёт. Следí го през цялото време какво прави.	I'll be busy the whole day. She watches what he's doing the whole time.
Ще бъдем там през целия месе́ц.	We'll be there the whole month.
Работя през деня, а спя през нощта́.	I work in the daytime and sleep at night.



**9.13. Subject inversion**

The normal word order in Bulgarian, as in English, is “subject - predicate”:

The kebabs	aren't important.
Кебапчетата	не са важни.
<i>subject</i>	<i>(negated) predicate</i>

English, in fact, must obey this word order rule. Only with certain sentences can one reverse the order of subject and predicate. Furthermore, in order to do so, one must usually reformulate the sentence considerably, often changing its meaning somewhat. Consider the sentences above, in which “the kebabs” is the subject, and “aren't important” is the predicate. Here are two ways one can invert the order of subject and predicate in this sentence in English. Note that each makes fairly complex changes in word order, and that the second sentence even splits the old predicate into two different clauses:

What's important is not the kebabs.  
*(old predicate, negated) old subject*

It's not the kebabs that are important.  
*(negation) old subject subordinating conjunction old predicate*

Bulgarian, however, can reverse the order of subject and predicate of any sentence, and can do so without making any other changes in the sentence. This process is called “subject inversion” because the placement of the subject is inverted with respect to the normal word order. The effect of this shift is to focus more attention on the subject. The first of the sentences given below is neutral. The second suggests that while the kebabs themselves aren't important, perhaps something else is.

Кебапчетата	не са важни.	The kebabs aren't important.
<i>subject</i>	<i>predicate</i>	

Не са важни	кебапчетата.	The kebabs aren't important...
<i>predicate</i>	<i>subject</i>	

### **SAMPLE SENTENCES**

1. -- Моля, дай ми ръкавиците.  
-- Няма да ти ги дам. Те са мръсни.
2. -- Водата в чайника ври. Искаш ли чай?  
-- Да, донеси ми го в стаята.
3. Търговецът купува стоката на едро. Продавам му я евтино.
4. Късно е. Филмът по телевизията вече е минал.
5. Ангел не е тук. Заминал е за Варна.
6. Легнал е да спи. Изпитът е свършил.
7. Слънцето грее през деня, а луната през нощта.
8. Ще те видя през другата седмица.
9. През следващата година той ще учи български.
10. Цял ден спя, защото работя цяла нощ.
11. Вечер не е много работоспособен. Вечер гледаме телевизия.
12. По обед магазините са затворени. Ще позвъним по телефона на обед.  
Бабата спи следобед.
13. През зимата слънцето залязва рано следобед, а през лятото -- късно вечер.
14. Довечера ще слушаме музика. Утре сутринта заминаваме.
15. Вече е обедно време, а моят обед още не е готов.
16. Много трудно намерихме добра учителка по английски за детето.
17. Кой ви даде адреса на този лекар?
18. Камен сутринта изяде две ябълки, три сандвича с кашкавал и един сладолед. И сегя пак е гладен. Страшен апетит има това дете.

## SENTENCES FOR TRANSLATION

1. All the knives, forks and spoons are in the cupboard. Will you give them to me? And where is the salt? Please give it to me also.
2. Marina has classes in the morning from 9 to 12. At noon she goes home for lunch. In the afternoon she works in the library from 2 to 4, and then she listens to music until dinnertime. In the evening after dinner she studies several more hours. Then she says "Good night" to everyone and goes to bed.
3. Has Ivo left? There's no sign of him anywhere. Last Friday he was here, but apparently this week he is traveling.
4. My birthday is next Tuesday. When is your birthday? I prefer to have a birthday in the fall. And you?
5. We came at 2:00 and went into the library. The girl there gave us each a book, and we read the books for two hours. We waited one more hour, and finally we left the library and went to the movies.
6. Julie got off the train, walked around the station a bit, and then got on again. She counted all the cars of the train, and then she counted them again.
7. She received his letter on July 5<sup>th</sup>, 1983, and read it during the night. The next day everyone asked her what was in the letter. "Nothing," she answered. His second letter came on August 31<sup>st</sup> of the following year. She also read it during the night, but on the next day, September 1<sup>st</sup>, 1984, no one asked her what was in the letter. Apparently everyone had forgotten. "I can give it to them," she thought. "Then they will remember." But she didn't give it to anyone.
8. 1968 was a very important year. Many people remember it very well.
9. Yesterday Marin bought 235 pencils and 547 notebooks. Apparently he wants to become a wholesale merchant. Will he sell them to us cheap?
10. "Don't eat all the fruits at once, please. Oh, did you eat them already?"  
"Yes, we certainly ate our fill."

## READING SELECTION

### Кореспонденция - (7)

14 ноември, Сан Франциско

Здравей Бойко,

Питаеш какво ни интересува. С една дума отговорът е лесен: всичко. Това ще е първото пътуване на децата в Европа. Готовим се за него с всички сили. Патриша прочете вече много книги за Европа. Искаме децата да запомнят това пътуване.

Патриша много обича и старата, и новата архитектура. Може да стои с часове в някоя барокова църква. В последно време архитектурата интересува и Емили, но засега я привлича предимно европейското средновековие. Подарихме ѝ няколко албума, но тя предпочита да пътува, а не да четене. Главно я интересуват обаче животните. Никой не ги обича повече от Емили. Тя има костенурка и хамстер. Не зная кой ще ги гледа, докато сме в България.

Нашите синове имат общи спортни интереси. Майкъл, както и Йво, плува, лови риба. Миналата неделя ходихме двамата за риба. Аз обичам да ходя пеша, за да си почивам от работата в болницата. Често излизаме на разходка.

Чакам с нетърпение твоите предложения. Поздрави вкъщи,

Роберт

25 ноември, София

Драги Боб,

Радвам се да получа толкова бързо отговор. Това е твоето четвърто писмо. Виждам голям напредък в твоя български език. Дадох писмото на моите приятели да го видят. Никой не може да повярва, че учиш български без учител.

В България идете да видите Рилския манастир, средище на българската средновековна култура. Той е високо в Рила, на два часа път с кола от София. Това е мъжки манастир. Аз имам приятели там и мога да уредя да спим в манастира, а не в хотела. Сигурно ще е интересно да видите отблизо живота на истински православен манастир. От манастира можете да правите излети наоколо. Водата в рилските реки е чиста и много студена. Пъстървата такава вода обича. На Рила Майк ще може да хване истинска пъстърва. Рилският манастир има интересна византийска архитектура.

Йво праща специални поздрави на Емили. Той се радва, че тя обича животните, и много иска да ѝ покаже нашия таралеж. Таралежът живее под леглото на Йво и плаши Яна.

Всичко хубаво,

Бойко

**GLOSSARY**

адрес	address	други ден	the day after tomorrow
албум	album, picture-book	евтин	cheap, inexpensive
апетит	appetite	едър	large
април	April	ера	era
бароков	baroque ( <i>adj.</i> )	есен, -та	fall, autumn
благодарност	thanks, thankfulness	живот	life
бог	god, God	залязвам / заляза	set [of the sun]
Боже	Oh God, Oh my God	заминавам /	leave, depart
бъдещ	future ( <i>adj.</i> )	замина	
бъдеще време	future tense	запomniaм /	remember
весел	happy, gay, lively	запomnia	
вечер, -та	evening	запomnia	
вечер, вечерта	in the evening	засега	at present, for now
вечерен	evening ( <i>adj.</i> )	зима	winter
вечерям	eat dinner	златен	golden
време ( <i>pl.</i> времена)	verbal tense	знак	sign
вря	boil ( <i>intransitive</i> )	значение	meaning
вторник	Tuesday	зря	ripen
вчера	yesterday	извеждам / изведá	take out, lead away
вчера следобед	yesterday afternoon	извеждам кучето	walk the dog
вчера сутринта	yesterday morning	на разходка	
вчерашен	yesterday's	изяждам /	eat up
главен	main, chief	изям (-ядеш)	
главно	mainly	както	as
гледам	look after	квартал	district, living area
годишен	yearly, annual	костенурка	turtle
годишните времена	seasons [of the year]	кратък	short
готвя се	prepare, get ready	култура	culture
грея	warm, heat [up]	лек	light, easy
грозде	grapes ( <i>collective</i> )	лека нощ	good night
давам / дам (дадеш)	give	ловя	catch
двеста	two hundred	ловя риба	fish, catch fish
деветстотин	nine hundred	луна	moon
декември	December	лято ( <i>pl.</i> летá)	summer
Ден на благодарността	Thanksgiving Day	май	May
днешен	today's	месец	month
днешен ден	this very day	минал	past
добро утро	good morning	може би	maybe
добър вечер	good evening ( <i>fixed accent</i> )	мръсен	dirty
довечера	this evening	н.е. = новата ера	(see p. 184)
докато	while, until		

Девети урок / Lesson 9

на ёдро	wholesale	през ноцта	at night
наёсен	in the fall	през 1975 г.	during 1975
наоколо	around, round about	привличам /	attract, draw
напрёдък	progress, gain	привлекá (-чеш)	
напрóлет	in the spring	приказвам	talk, converse
научавам /	learn	приятен	pleasant
науча (-иш)		прóлет, -та	spring
наяждам се /	eat one's fill,	пуканка (sg. rare)	[piece of] popcorn
наям се (-ядеш се)	gorge on	пъстърва	trout
ноёмври	November	работоспособен	efficient, productive
нощ, -та	night	Р.Хр. = Рождество Христово	
нощен	night (adj.)	разходка	walk, stroll
нощно време	nighttime	рано	early
няма значение	it doesn't matter	река	river
		риба	fish
обеден	lunch, noon (adj.)	родител	parent
обедно време	lunchtime	рождество	Christmas
обяд	lunch, noon	ръкавица	glove
онзи ден	day before yesterday		
осемстотин	eight hundred	с всички сили	with all one's strength,
останало	remaining, left,		full tilt
	left-over	с една дума	in a word
от н.е.	A.D.	с часовé	for hours [on end]
от Р.Хр.	A.D.	сандвич	sandwich
отвътре	from within	свекърва	mother-in-law (of wife)
		сегашен	present-day, current
пак	again	сегашно време	present tense
папагал	parrot	сéдемстотин	seven hundred
песен, -та	song	сека (-чеш)	cut
(pl. песни)		сигурно	surely, certainly
пéтстотин	five hundred	сйн, -ът	son
пéтък	Friday	(pl. синове)	
пеша	on foot	скачам /	jump
пипам	touch, handle	скóча (-иш)	
плаша (-иш)	frighten	слава	glory
плувам	swim	слава Бóгу	thank God
подарявам / подаря	give (away), give a	след обяд	afternoon, after lunch
	present	след Р.Хр.	A.D.
позвънявам /	call	следобеден	afternoon (adj.)
позвъня		слънце	sun
полунощ	midnight	слънцето грée	the sun is shining
пóмощ, -та	help	снощен	last night's
поне	at least	снощи	yesterday evening,
понеделник	Monday		last night
посолявам / посоля	salt	сол, -та	salt
преди н.е.	B.C.	солén	salted
преди Р.Хр.	B.C.	солница	salt shaker
предимно	primarily	специáлен	special
предишен	previous	спóртен	sports (adj.)
предложéние	proposition,	срédище	center
	suggestion	средновековен	medieval
предстоящ	forthcoming,	среща	meeting, appointment
	impending	сряда	Wednesday
през деня	in the daytime		

## Девети урок / Lesson 9

ста́я	room	ха́мстер	hamster
сто́ка	goods, commodity	хва́щам / хва́на	grasp, seize, catch
стра́шен	terrible, fearful	хиля́да (pl. хиля́ди)	thousand
су́трин, -та́	morning	хо́дя за ри́ба	go fishing
су́трин, сутринта́	in the morning	хо́дя пеша́	go for a walk, walk [not ride]
та́зи ве́чер	this evening	хоте́л	hotel
та́зи но́щ	tonight	Христо́в	Christ's
тарале́ж	hedgehog	цъфтя́	bloom
тека́ (-чеш)	flow	четвъртък	Thursday
триста́	three hundred	че́тиристотин	four hundred
търго́вец	merchant	шестстотин	six hundred
урежда́м / уредя́	arrange, settle	ю́ни	June
у́тре ве́чер	tomorrow evening	я́дене	food, meal
у́тре сутринта́	tomorrow morning	я́м, ядеш	eat
у́трешен	tomorrow's		
у́тринен	morning ( <i>adj.</i> )		
у́тро	morning		
февруа́ри	February		

### **CULTURAL COMMENTARY**

#### **School systems: first day of school**

School in Bulgaria always begins on September 15th. Children who begin first grade on that date are honored with small gifts.

#### **Religion**

Bulgarians belong to the Eastern Orthodox church, called in Bulgarian **правосла́вна църква**. During the Ottoman occupation, the church was administered from Constantinople by the Greek bishopric. The independent Bulgarian exarchate was established in 1870-71. Many Bulgarians today are practicing Orthodox Christians, and the cultural heritage of Orthodoxy has been very important in Bulgarian history.

Although it was technically possible to practice religion openly during the socialist regime, it was extremely difficult to do so without surrendering the possibility of social or professional advancement. Christmas was not celebrated, and the main winter holiday was New Year's. Christmas is now celebrated once more, but it has become a habit for many to think of the general holiday period as "New Year's."



## LESSON 10

### **DIALOGUE**

#### А виѐ жѐнен ли сте?

Ангел: Аз съвсѐм забравих, че имам домати в чантата. От нашата градина. Много вървят с кебапчетата. Заповядайте!

// Всички взимат по един домат и благодарят. //

Ангел: Вземете още. Страхотни домати, а Дейвид?

Дейвид: Да, ароматни са.

Ангел: Вземете, де! Вземете още по един. Аз имам много.

Джули: Взех един, стига толкова. Благодаря!

Надка: Мамо, Камен взе втори домат!

Ангел: Браво, моето момче, радвам се, че ти е по вкуса.

Владимир: Много вкусно. Благодаря ви много за всичко! А сега да си вървя. Брат ми сигурно се чуди къде изчезнах.

Веселин: А, значи, Георги ти е брат. Виждам, че прилича на тебе. Той по-голям ли е от тебе, или по-малък?

Владимир: По-голям е. С пет години. Той е женен, има вече две деца.

Камен: Като мене и Надка, нали? Едно момче и едно момиче?

Владимир: Да, точно. Само че техните са по-малки от вас.

Камен: Коё е по-голямо? Момчето ли?

Владимир: Да. Синът им стана на четири години, а дъщеря им е на две.

Камен: Чичо, ти често ли ходиш у тях? Кажй ни за тях! Момчето има ли си стая?

Таня: Камене, мълчи. Пусни човека да си тръгне. Няма нужда всичко да знаеш.



Владимир (на Таня): Оставете го да пита, не се притеснявайте. Аз не бързам.

(на Камен): Племенниците ми живеят в една стая с родителите си. Но тяхната стая е голяма и светла. Децата нямат своя стая.

Камен: Татко не ни дава да имаме отделни стаи. Той има кабинет, но никога не си е вкъщи. Не разбирам защо не мога да спя в неговия кабинет. Кабинетът му е голям и светъл.

Таня(на Камен): Камене, нали чу какво ти казах? Стига толкова!

(на Владимир): Мъжът ми работи извън София, и често пътува. Вярно е, че рядко го виждаме.

Веселин: И аз постоянно пътувам. Миналия месец пропуснах световното първенство по футбол покрай тези пусти командировки. Все ме няма вкъщи.

Дейвид: А вие женен ли сте?



Theater, downtown Varna

## BASIC GRAMMAR

### 10.1. Aorist tense, continued

Verbs of the *e*-conjugation form the aorist tense according to several different types. Those verbs whose stem ends in the consonant *-н-*, such as *ста́н-а*, *срѣщн-а* or *вѣрн-а*, all take the aorist theme vowel *-а-*. Verbs whose stems end in *-ш* or *-ж* also take the aorist theme vowel *-а-*. Before this theme vowel, these stem-final consonants appear as *-с* and *-з*, respectively. Here are the present and aorist conjugations of these two types. Representing the first is the aorist of *ста́на*, and representing the second is the aorist of *пи́ша*.

	PRESENT	AORIST	PRESENT	AORIST
1 <sup>st</sup> singular	ста́н-а	ста́н-ах	пи́ш-а	пи́с-ах
2 <sup>nd</sup> singular	ста́н-еши	ста́н-а	пи́ш-еши	пи́с-а
3 <sup>rd</sup> singular	ста́н-е	ста́н-а	пи́ш-е	пи́с-а
1 <sup>st</sup> plural	ста́н-ем	ста́н-ахме	пи́ш-ем	пи́с-ахме
2 <sup>nd</sup> plural	ста́н-ете	ста́н-ахте	пи́ш-ете	пи́с-ахте
3 <sup>rd</sup> plural	ста́н-ат	ста́н-аха	пи́ш-ат	пи́с-аха

The second type (*пи́ша*, aorist *пи́сах*) also includes *ка́жа* (aorist *ка́зах*). These are the verbs which have been identified in glossary lists according to the format

пи́ша (-еши)

in order to differentiate them from verbs whose stems also end in *-ш* or *-ж* but which belong to the *и*-conjugation, and are identified in glossary lists according to the format

пу́ша (-иши).

Note that *only* in the former group, the *e*-conjugation verbs, is the *-ш* (or *-ж*) shifted to *-с* (or *-з*) in the aorist. Since this group of verbs is much smaller than the other, the student should learn the few verbs which belong to it. S/he can then predict that all other verbs whose stems end in *-ш* or *-ж* will belong to the *и*-conjugation.

A third type includes verbs whose 1<sup>st</sup> singular ends in *-я* preceded by *-и* or *-у*. These verbs have *no* theme vowel: the aorist endings are added directly to the verb root. In the verbs *взѐма*, *поѐма* and *приѐма*, which also belong to this group, the stem-final consonant *-м-* is dropped in the aorist. Representing this type are the aorist conjugations of *пи́я* and *взѐма*, with the present given alongside for comparison:

	PRESENT	AORIST	PRESENT	AORIST
1 <sup>st</sup> singular	пѝ-я	пѝ-х	взѐм-а	взѐ-х
2 <sup>nd</sup> singular	пѝ-еш	пѝ	взѐм-еш	взѐ
3 <sup>rd</sup> singular	пѝ-е	пѝ	взѐм-е	взѐ
1 <sup>st</sup> plural	пѝ-ем	пѝ-хме	взѐм-ем	взѐ-хме
2 <sup>nd</sup> plural	пѝ-ете	пѝ-хте	взѐм-ете	взѐ-хте
3 <sup>rd</sup> plural	пѝ-ят	пѝ-ха	взѐм-ат	взѐ-ха

### 10.2. Long form pronoun objects

Bulgarian has two types of pronoun objects, "long" and "short". The short forms were learned in Lessons 5 and 7. The long forms are given below, together with the short forms for comparison. The primary usage of the long form pronoun objects is after prepositions.

	Direct object		Indirect object	
	short	long	short	long
1 <sup>st</sup> singular	ме	мѐне	ми	на мѐне
2 <sup>nd</sup> singular	те	тѐбе	ти	на тѐбе
3 <sup>rd</sup> sing. feminine	я	нѐя	ѝ	на нѐя
3 <sup>rd</sup> sing. masculine	го	нѐго	му	на нѐго
3 <sup>rd</sup> sing. neuter	(= masc. form)		(= masc. form)	
1 <sup>st</sup> plural	ни	на́с	ни	на́с
2 <sup>nd</sup> plural	ви	ва́с	ви	на́с
3 <sup>rd</sup> plural	ги	тя́х	им	на́с

Here are examples of the use of these forms after prepositions. For the use of the comparative degree of adjectives, see below.

Тѝй пѝ-голя́м ли е от тѐбе?  
 Като мѐне и На́дка, нали́?  
 Техните са пѝ-ма́лки от ва́с.  
 Кажѝ ни за тя́х!

Is he older than you?  
 Like me and Nadka, right?  
 Theirs are younger than you.  
 Tell us about them!

### 10.3. Short form possessive constructions

Bulgarian also has long and short ways of expressing possession. The long forms are мѝй, тѝѝй, etc. (similar in usage to English "my", "your", etc.). The short form possessives are identical to the short form indirect object pronouns.

The short form possessives are more frequently used, especially if the relationship between possessor and possessed is a close one. In this usage, the noun which is possessed *must* be in the definite form, and the short form possessive pronoun follows *immediately* after the definite article. The possessive forms express the identity of the possessor (in 3<sup>rd</sup> singular, this also includes the gender).

The rule requiring short form possessives to follow immediately after the definite article also applies when the possessed noun is modified by an adjective.

Синът им е на четири години. Познаваш ли сината им?	Their son is four years old. Do you know their son?
Кабинетът му е голям и светъл. Мъжът ми работи много.	His office is big and light. My husband works a lot.
Плѐменниците ми живеят в една стая.	My nieces/nephews live in the same room.
Голямата ми чанта е там.	My big bag is over there.

Only nouns of family relationship are exempt from this rule. When these nouns occur in the singular before a short form possessive, they must be in the indefinite form, except for *мъж* "husband" and *син* "son", which *do* take the definite article before the possessive short form. For example:

Дъщеря им е на две години. Брат ми идва сега. Жената ви къде работи? Сестра ѝ рисува много добре.	Their daughter is two years old. My brother is coming along now. Where does your wife work? Her sister draws very well.
--	--

*but:*

На колко години е синът им? Мъжът ви къде работи?	How old is their son? Where does your husband work?
--	--

All plural forms with short-form possessives are definite, however. Compare the difference between singular and plural in the following:

Сестра ми заминава за Варна. Сестрите ми са много заети.	My sister is leaving for Varna. My sisters are very busy.
---	--

#### 10.4. The usage of *свой* and *си*

Bulgarian, like all Slavic languages, has a separate category of reflexive possessive forms whose function is to indicate that the possessor of the object noun and the subject of the sentence are the same. These forms are translated variously -- "his", "his own", "my", "my own", etc.

If the subject and the possessor are the same, then these possessive forms -- **свѳѳй** (long) or **си** (short) -- *must* be used. Although it may seem evident from the context who the possessor is (as is the case in most English sentences), if a form other than **свѳѳй/си** is used, a Bulgarian will necessarily conclude that the possessor is someone other than the subject. For example:

Possessor of the diary:

Тѳѳя пѳѳше в днѳѳвника си.	She is writing in her diary.	<i>the writer</i> <i>another female</i>
Тѳѳя пѳѳше в днѳѳвника ѳѳ.	( <i>same</i> )	

If the possessed noun is the subject of the sentence, the modifier **свѳѳй/си** cannot be used. Here are examples in which the English "their"/"their own" is rendered by different Bulgarian possessive forms. In the first and third sentences, the reflexive forms **свѳѳй** and **си** mark the noun possessed by the subject of the sentence. In the second sentence, however, the possessed noun is the subject; therefore the modifier **тѳѳехен** must be used in place of **свѳѳй**.

Плѳѳемениците ми живѳѳят в еднѳѳа стѳѳя с родителите си.	My niece and nephew live in the same room as their parents.
Но тѳѳяхната стѳѳя е голяма и хѳѳбава.	But their room is nice and big.
Децаѳѳта нѳѳямат свѳѳбя стѳѳя.	The children do not have their own room.

Note also that the English translation uses "their" in the first two instances above, and "their own" in the third. This is because in the first two cases the identity of the possessor is obvious and the idea of possession is not central to the meaning of the sentence. In the third, however, the identity of the possessor is what the sentence is about. Therefore, the emphatic "own" is added.

The contrast between Bulgarian and English lies in the fact that English speakers may choose whether or not (through the addition of the word "own") to introduce the extra idea of reflexivity. But Bulgarian speakers do not have a choice -- they are obliged to mark every possessed object for the identity of the possessor. When translating into Bulgarian, therefore, always verify whether the possessor and the subject are identical or different, and choose the appropriate possessive form accordingly.

**10.5. The particle **си** with verbs, continued**

Speakers of Bulgarian frequently add the particle **си** to a verb, thereby giving the verb a meaning of greater involvement and intimacy. It is difficult to translate this added meaning precisely, since in most cases it depends on the verb itself; sometimes it is not even possible to express this added distinction in English.

## Десети урок / Lesson 10

When added to motion verbs, for instance, the particle **си** suggests that the speaker is moving towards "his/her own space". This can mean "go home", "return to where one came from" or simply to "move off in one's own undefined direction". The destination is not necessarily "home", but is rather the very loosely defined idea of "space one is attached to at the moment". Here are several examples (note that none of the several possible translations states explicitly that "home" or "back" is the intended destination):

А сегá да си вървя́.

And now I'll be off.  
And now I'll get moving.  
And now I need to move on.

Пусни́ човéка да си тръгне́!

Let the man get going!  
Let the man leave!  
Let the man get on his way!

When added to verbs of state or possession, the particle **си** increases the sense of connectedness between possessor and possessed:

Момчéто има ли си стáя?

Does the boy have his own room?  
Does the boy have a room to himself?

Тóй има кабинет, но нiкогá  
не си е вкъщи́.

He has a study, but he's never home.  
He has a study, but he never spends  
any time in it.

### 10.6. Comparative and superlative degree of adjectives

Comparison of adjectives in Bulgarian is straightforward. The comparative degree (equivalent to "more + *adjective*" in English) is formed by prefixing **пó-** to the adjective, and the superlative degree (equivalent to "most + *adjective*" in English) is formed by prefixing **на́й-** to the adjective. The comparative and superlative degree of adverbs is formed in the same manner.

Each of these particles is accented. Comparative and superlative forms, therefore, each have *two* accents. The hyphen joining the particle and the adjective is a required part of Bulgarian spelling.

Тóй пó-голя́м ли е, или  
пó-ма́лък?

Is he older or younger?

Сестра́ ми е на́й-ма́лката.  
Пише́те пó-чéсто!

My sister is the youngest.  
Write more often!



Бащата на Лиляна не е стар. Lilyana's father is not old.  
 Моят баща говори с твоя дядо. My father is talking with your grandfather.

Nicknames for male persons also frequently end in -o. Plurals of these names are formed with -овци, but they are rarely encountered.

<i>proper name</i>	<i>nickname</i>	<i>proper name</i>	<i>nickname</i>
Владимир	Влад-о	Александър	Саш-о
Димитър	Митк-о	Петър	Петъ-о

### 10.8. Prepositions

(a) The preposition *y* means "at the home of" or "among". Be careful to differentiate this from *при*, which means "at, with, in the presence of" (wherever that person may be at the moment). For example:

Ела у дома!	Come over to the/our house!
Стои при мене!	Stay by me!
Отиват у вас на гости.	They're going over to visit you.
Отивам при него за съвет.	I'm going to him for advice.
Завеждам децата у учителката (на гости).	I'm taking the children over to their teacher's house.
Завеждам децата при учителката.	I'm taking the children to see the teacher.
Певецът предизвиква възторг у публиката.	The singer enraptured [= evoked rapture in] the audience.

(b) The prepositions *от* and *с* are used in phrases of comparison as follows:

Камен е по-голям от Надка.	Kamen is older than Nadka.
Той е по-голям с две години.	He is older by two years.
Тя е най-малка от всичките.	She is the youngest of all.

(c) When used after verbs of communication, the preposition *за* means "about".

Кажете ни за тях!	Tell us about them!
Носи съобщение за колет.	She has got a notice about a package.



## EXERCISES

I. Replace the underlined nouns or phrases by the appropriate pronouns.

1. Слушай баща си, той на лошо няма да те научи.
2. Камене, слушай родителите си като Надка.
3. У Милена и Димитър всеки ден има гости.
4. Кажй на Ангел да пише по-често на майка си за Дейвид.
5. А на мама и татко няма ли да дадеш бонбон?
6. Съседът благодарй на бояджията за хубавата му работа.
7. Учителката пита децата за писателите.

II. Fill in the blank with an appropriate possessive pronoun.

1. Знаеш ли, къде е жена           ?
2. Сутрин той разговаря с кучето           .
3. Едното писмо е за мене, а другото за сестра       . Аз прочитам първо                           , а после                           .
4. Петър казва: “Запознайте се, това е жена           .” Иван казва: “Жена            сигурно знае за мене. Ние сме стари приятели.” Петър казва: “Аз често разказвам на жена            за тебе.”
5. В неделя Тания и сестра        водят                            деца на цирк. Тания казва на сестра           : “                           деца много се разбират с                           .”
6. Боб получава честитки от                            приятели и от приятелите на Патриша.                            приятели живеят в Бостън, а                            в Чикаго.
7. Две съседки разговарят. Едната казва: “Моля те, пусни                            котка да поиграе с                            деца в градината.”

III. Rewrite each sentence in the past tense, replacing всеки ден or сегá with вчера.

1. Боряна всеки ден пише писма на приятелките си.
2. Децата пият всеки ден топло мляко на закуска.
3. Всеки ден след вечеря ти взимаш кучето да го разходиш.
4. Писмото е готово. Сегá го пукам в пощенската кутия.
5. Камен и Надка всяка сутрин казват на майка си “добро утро”.
6. Сегá чуваме училищния звънец.
7. Сегá влакът пристига на гара София.

## ADDITIONAL GRAMMAR NOTES

### 10.1a. Aorist tense, continued

Verbs like **пи́ша** and **ка́жа** shift the stem-final consonant in the aorist form. This consonant shift is the same one that was seen between certain perfective and derived imperfective aspect forms. (Derived imperfectives will be discussed in more detail in Lesson 18.)

<i>consonant:</i> ш or ж		<i>consonant:</i> с or з	
<i>perfective</i>		<i>imperfective</i>	<i>aorist</i>
опи́ш-а		опис-вам	опис-ах
разка́ж-а		разка́з-вам	разка́з-ах

The verbs **кѣпя** “bathe” and **ка́пя** “drip, leak” belong to the *e*-conjugation, and form their aorists with the theme vowel *-а-* (**кѣпах**, etc. and **ка́пах** etc.). Their 1<sup>st</sup> singular present forms, in *-я*, are irregular.

Verbs whose 1<sup>st</sup> singular ends in *-я* preceded by *-у* or *-и* (e.g. **пи́я**, **чу́я**) lack a theme vowel in the aorist. This group also includes verbs in *-ая* if they have at least two syllables preceding the ending. Thus, **копа́я** and **позна́я** belong to this group, as seen below (only 1<sup>st</sup> singular and 1<sup>st</sup> plural forms are given). The verb **зна́я**, whose aorist will be learned in the next lesson, does *not* belong to this group.

	PRESENT	AORIST	PRESENT	AORIST
1 <sup>st</sup> singular	копа́я	копа́х	позна́я	позна́х
1 <sup>st</sup> plural	копа́ем	копа́хме	позна́ем	позна́хме

### 10.2a. Long form pronoun objects

Short form pronouns have different shapes for indirect and direct objects. Long form pronouns, however, function like nouns. The object form alone has the meaning “direct”, and the object form preceded by **на** has the meaning “indirect”.

	<i>direct</i>	<i>indirect</i>
Noun object	Ка́мен	на Ка́мен
Pronoun object	ме́не	на ме́не

Third-person long form pronoun objects are similar to the possessive adjectives; this similarity can help the student remember them.

<i>pronouns</i>	3sg her не-я	3sg him/it него	3pl them тях
<i>possessive adjective (f.)</i> <i>possessive adjective (m.)</i>	3sg her(s) не-йна не-ин	3sg his/its него-ва него-в	3pl their(s) тях-на тех-ен

The long form reflexive pronoun, себе си, always appears with long and short forms together. This usage will be studied in more detail in Lesson 11. The pronouns мене and тебе are sometimes written and spoken without the final syllable. There is no difference in meaning. For example:

Ще дойдеш ли с мѐн?

Will you come with me?

### 10.3a. Word order in short form possessive constructions

Short form indirect object pronouns express relationship in two ways. They can be added to a noun, (e.g. брат му “his brother”), or they can depend on a form of the copula съм in predicative sentences. In the latter instance, indirect object pronouns follow the copula directly. This sequence (COP-IND) then follows the word order rules learned in Lesson 5: it must occur adjacent to the predicate (immediately before it if possible), and it must occur immediately after the negative or interrogative particles. Note that IND also applies to си in its meaning “verbal additive signifying greater intimacy”, and that the same word order rules apply.

As in the case of all word order examples, numbering of the following examples is cumulative across lessons.

- (40) Тѝ      си      ми      стар познат.  
subject   COP   IND   pred. noun  
You are an old acquaintance of mine.
- (41) Тѝ      са      му      верни приятели.  
subject   COP   IND   pred. noun  
They are my faithful friends.
- (42) Вѝе      не      стѝ      му      приятел.  
subject   Neg.   COP   IND   pred. noun  
You're not his friend.
- (43) Нѝе      никога      не      смѝ      си      вкъщи.  
subject   Neg.   COP   IND   pred. adverb  
We're never at home.

**Word order with 3<sup>rd</sup> singular copula**

If the copula form is 3<sup>rd</sup> singular, however, the word order is reversed. The sequence, to which the above rules also apply, is *IND-3<sup>rd</sup>COP*. Special care must be taken to learn this difference! Examples are given below.

- (44) А, значи Геóрги 

ти	е	брат.
<i>IND</i>	<i>3<sup>rd</sup>COP</i>	<i>pred. noun</i>

  
*subject* Oh, that means Georgi is your brother.
- (45) Познавам я, тя 

ми	е	колежка.
<i>IND</i>	<i>3<sup>rd</sup>COP</i>	<i>pred. noun</i>

  
*subject* I know her -- she is my colleague.
- (46) Тóй никога 

не	си	е	вкъщи.
<i>Neg.</i>	<i>IND</i>	<i>3<sup>rd</sup>COP</i>	<i>pred. adverb</i>

  
*subject* He's never at home.

The above rule will take on great importance when the student learns the past indefinite tense in Lesson 16, for it will also govern the ordering of pronoun objects with respect to the verbal auxiliary.

**Word order in negative interrogative sentences**

When both negative and interrogative particles are present, either the copula OR the indirect object short form pronoun, whichever is first in sequence, is placed between them. It is important to remember that only *one* clitic can occur in this position. Examples are give below; this word order rule will be drilled in greater detail in Lesson 13.

- (47) Тí 

не	си	ли	му	приятел?
<i>Neg.</i>	<i>COP</i>	<i>INT</i>	<i>IND</i>	<i>pred. noun</i>

  
*subject* Aren't you his friend?
- (48) Тóй 

не	ти	ли	е	приятел?
<i>Neg.</i>	<i>IND</i>	<i>INT</i>	<i>3<sup>rd</sup>COP</i>	<i>pred. noun</i>

  
*subject* Isn't he your friend?

**10.4a. The usage of свóй and си**

When the possessor is other than 1<sup>st</sup> or 2<sup>nd</sup> person, Bulgarians must specify whether it is equivalent to the subject of the sentence or not: in the first case they must use *свóй* / *си*, and in the second case they must use a non-reflexive possessor. When the possessor is 1<sup>st</sup> or 2<sup>nd</sup> person, Bulgarians theoretically have the option to use either reflexive or non-reflexive possessors.

In practice, however, they almost always use *свóй* / *си*. If they are using a short form possessive, *си* is chosen almost exclusively. If a speaker uses a long form possessive, s/he will tend to use *свóй* unless s/he wishes to place special emphasis on the possessive relationship, in which case s/he will use *мóй*, *твóй*, etc.

**10.9. Kinship terms**

All societies have terms for family relationships. Much of the Bulgarian terminology is organized in a manner similar to that of English. The following chart gives some of the major kinship terms:

	<i>male</i>	<i>female</i>	<i>generic</i>
<i>parent</i>	баща́	ма́йка	родите́л
<i>parent (affectionate)</i>	та́тко	ма́ма	
<i>child</i>	си́н	дъщеря́	дете́
<i>sibling</i>	бра́т	сестра́	
<i>grandparent</i>	ба́ба	дя́до	
<i>grandchild</i>	вну́к	вну́чка	*
<i>spouse</i>	мъ́ж	жена́	
<i>spouse (generic)</i>	съпру́г	съпру́га	*
<i>niece/nephew</i>	племе́нник	племе́нница	*
<i>cousin</i>	братовче́д	братовче́дка	*
<i>fiancé</i>	годе́ник	годе́ница	*
<i>newlywed, groom/bride</i>	младоже́нец	младоже́нка	*
		бу́лка	
<i>parent-in-law of wife</i>	свекъ́р	свекъ́рва	
<i>parent-in-law of husband</i>	тъ́ст	тъ́ща	
<i>parents of couple</i>	сва́т	сва́тя	
<i>step-parent</i>	вто́ри баща́	вто́ра ма́йка	
		мащеха́	

\* The feminine term is used exclusively for females, but the masculine term can refer either to a male person or to the general concept. For instance, the form **вну́ци** (plural of the masculine form **вну́к**) can refer either to grandchildren in general, or to a specific group of grandchildren at least one of whom is male. The plural form **вну́чки** refers to a group of grandchildren who are all female.

In the case of nieces, nephews and fiancés, the plural forms are ambiguous. **Племе́нници**, for instance, is the plural of both **племе́нник** (meaning either "nephew" or the general category "sibling's child") and **племе́нница** ("niece"). Note, by the way, that the plural form **съпру́ги** refers exclusively to females; the corresponding masculine plural is **съпру́зи**.

The terms **сва́т** and **сва́тя** refer to the relationship which obtains between the parents of a young married couple. They continue to bear this relationship to each other (and to use these terms for each other) throughout their lives. Wives and husbands use separate terms to refer to the parents of one's spouse.

The names for "uncle" and "aunt" are complex. Many Bulgarians use only **ле́ля** for "aunt" and **чи́чо** "father's brother" or **вуйчо́** "mother's brother" for "uncle". The full set of terms will be presented in Lesson 22.

**10.10. Derivation: nouns in -ица, -джия, -джийка;  
possessive adjectives in -ов, -ев**

Nouns in -ица

The suffix *-иц-*, followed by the ending *-а*, forms feminine nouns of various sorts. There is often the overtone of something “smaller” or more delicate in some way. These nouns are usually formed from other nouns, but they can be formed from words of any class. For example:

<i>noun</i>	<i>stem</i>	+ иц-	›	<i>derived noun</i>	<i>(meaning)</i>
плéмен-ник	плéмен-н-	+ иц-	›	плéменниц-а	niece
господ-и́н	госпож-	+ иц-	›	госпóжиц-а	Miss
стран-á	стран-	+ иц-	›	стрáниц-а	page
вил-а	вил-	+ иц-	›	вѝлиц-а	fork
<i>adjective</i>	<i>stem</i>	+ иц-	›	<i>derived noun</i>	<i>(meaning)</i>
хубав	хубав-	+ иц-	›	хубави́ц-а	beauty
<i>numeral</i>	<i>stem</i>	+ иц-	›	<i>derived noun</i>	<i>(meaning)</i>
сéдем	седм-	+ иц-	›	сéдмиц-а	week

The suffix *-иц-* is normally used to form neutral words such as the above. In certain cases, however, it is used to form emotionally loaded words, which are of masculine gender. Here is an example of one such noun, which is formed from the stem of the verb *пия* plus the suffix *-ан-*:

То́й е голя́м пия́ница.

He's quite the drinker.

Nouns in -джия, -джийка

The suffix *-джий-* is borrowed into Bulgarian from Turkish, where it has numerous meanings. One of these, that denoting profession, has been borrowed into Bulgarian as well. Some of the Bulgarian nouns formed with this suffix have neutral meaning, but others are felt as ironic in varying degrees.

In masculine nouns, the suffix is followed by the ending *-а* (resulting in the spelling *-джия*). Feminine nouns can also be formed by adding the suffix *-к-*, again followed by the ending *-а* (resulting in the spelling *-джийка*). These nouns designate a female practitioner of the profession in question.

In the chart below, the first three nouns have neutral meaning, and the second three have what is often called “expressive” (emotionally charged) meaning.

<i>noun</i>	<i>meaning</i>	<i>stem</i>	+ джий(ка) ›	<i>derived nouns</i>	<i>meaning</i>
по́ща	mail	пощ-а-	+ джий(ка) ›	по́щаджи-я по́щаджий-ка	letter-carrier
бо́я	paint	бой-а-	+ джий(ка) ›	бо́яджи-я бо́яджий-ка	painter
сто́п	stop	стоп-а-	+ джий(ка) ›	сто́паджи-я сто́паджий-ка	hitchhiker
дво́йка	failing grade	двойк-а-	+ джий(ка) ›	дво́йкаджи-я дво́йкаджий-ка	high school dropout
кавга́	quarrel	кавг-а-	+ джий(ка) ›	кавгаджи́-я кавгаджи́й-ка	brawler
че́йндж	currency exchange office	чейндж-а-	+ джий(ка) ›	че́йнджаджи-я че́йнджаджий-ка	unofficial money-changer

### Possessive adjectives in -ов, -ев

The suffix **-ов-** appears in numerous family names. It is by origin a possessive suffix. The surname **Сто́йков**, for instance, refers to those who are part of the family of someone named **Сто́йко**. Similarly, the surname **Бо́яджи́ев** refers to those who are part of the family of someone known as a **бо́яджи́я** (a painter). This same suffix is also used to derive adjectives from nouns. This suffix is usually **-ов-**, but after certain consonants it is **-ев-**.

<i>noun</i>	<i>stem</i>	+ ов- / ев- ›	<i>derived adj.</i>	<i>(meaning)</i>
слѣ́нц-е	слѣ́нч-	+ ев- ›	слѣ́нчев	sunny
грозд-е	грозд-	+ ов- ›	гроздов	grape
портока́л	портокал-	+ ов- ›	портока́лов	orange
баро́к	барок-	+ ов- ›	баро́ков	Baroque
Хри́ст	Христ-	+ ов- ›	Христо́в	Christ's
не́г-о	нег-	+ ов- ›	не́гов	his

**10.11. Consonant shifts in derivation**

Certain stem-final consonants are frequently replaced by other consonants before certain derivational suffixes. These replacement patterns are not random, but occur according to predictable patterns. Here are some examples:

<i>consonant</i>	<i>replacement</i>
- г -	- ж -

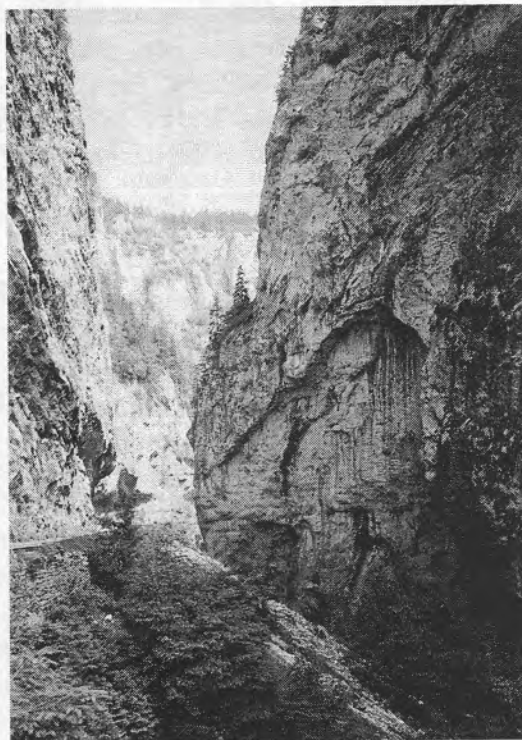
КОЛÉГ - а	КОЛÉЖ - ка
КНИГ - а	КНИЖ - ка
СНЯГ	СНЕЖ - ѝнка

<i>consonant</i>	<i>replacement</i>
- ц -	- ч -

ЛЪЖИЦ - а	ЛЪЖИЧ - ка
-----------	------------

<i>consonant</i>	<i>replacement</i>
- к -	- ч -

УЧЕНИК	УЧЕНИЧ - ка
ВНУК	ВНУЧ - ка
ЕКЗОТИК - а	ЕКЗОТИЧ - ен
МЛЯК - о	МЛÉЧ - ност
ЗНАК	ЗНАЧ - ёние



Gorge in the Rhodope Mountains  
(southern Bulgaria)



## **SAMPLE SENTENCES**

1. Ма́йка му мно́го го обича. И то́й мно́го обича ма́йка си. Не́говата ма́йка е добре́.
2. Та́ня ка́зва, че мъжът ѝ често пътува. Та́ня мо́ли мъжа́ си да не пътува често. Не́йният мъж често не си́ е вкъщи.
3. Каж́и на тво́ята жена́, че ча́кам у́тре сутринта́ да ми се оба́ди.
4. То́й ка́зва на жена́ си на дру́гия де́н да му позвъни́ по телефо́на.
5. Тя́ жена́ ли му е на не́го? Не́, те́ не са́ же́нени.
6. Това́ жена́ му ли е? Не́, това́ е не́гова братовче́дка.
7. Запозна́йте се, жена́ ми. Мо́ята жена́ е адвокát.
8. Лиля́на си има́ три деца́. Лиля́на и Младе́н си има́т три деца́.
9. Иди́ си, къ́сно е вече́.
10. Мо́ят свát често боледу́ва. Синът ми е же́нен за на́й-голя́мата му дъщеря́. То́й има́ три дъщеря́ от първия́ си бра́к.
11. Ка́мен и На́дка са бра́т и сестра́.
12. Свекърва́ ми и ма́йка ми са добри́ приятелки. Те́ заедно во́дят вну́ците си на разхо́дка. Мо́ите деца́ обичат сво́ите ба́би.
13. Те́ са бли́зки приятелки. Купу́ват си дрехи́ от еди́н и съ́щ магази́н.
14. Тя́ прика́зва все́ едно́ и съ́що, отка́кто я позна́вам.
15. Вижда́м, че те́ има́т едни́ и съ́щи грешки́ в контро́лното.
16. Деца́та ста́наха на де́сет годи́ни.
17. Вече́ зна́м. Ка́заха ми за това́ още́ в Бълга́рия.
18. Дими́тър чу́ от приятели́те си последи́ните новини́.
19. Бага́жът не бе́ше мно́го и затова́ Та́ня взе́ ма́лката ча́нта.
20. -- Какво́ пра́ви баща́ ти в моме́нта?  
-- Бояди́сва пре́дната врата́.
21. Еди́н и съ́щ бояджи́я им бояди́сва къ́щите.

### **SENTENCES FOR TRANSLATION**

1. Mother called the painter on the phone but he wasn't at home. Tomorrow she will ask him, "When will you come to paint our house?" Our neighbors are painting their own house, but we don't want to paint ours.
2. Come with us to the movies! Or maybe you prefer to go with them? Probably, because they'll go in their car, but we will walk. Ivo and I always walk to the movies. We talk about the film, and we also talk about you and Marina!
3. Last night Lilyana told me about her mother. Her mother went to America last year, and met her American aunts and uncles. She took her youngest daughter with her, but her older children didn't go. They stayed home with their father.
4. Where's Marin? He left [to go home]. His father is ill, and he wants to stay with him.
5. My brother wrote me from Plovdiv -- he's coming tomorrow. But I have no room in my apartment, because all my cousins are staying with me. Can he sleep at your place? You are my closest friend, and you are also a good friend of his.
6. Nadka put her red pencils into her bag but left her blue pencils on the floor. Her mother asked, "Nadka, why did you put only some pencils in your bag?" Nadka said, "My blue pencils are bigger than my red pencils". Her older brother Kamen then said, "No, they are smaller. And I of course know because I am two years older than you."
7. Her uncle drinks a lot. If she goes to see him, he will want her to sit and drink with him. For that reason, she goes to her grandmother's more often than she goes to her uncle's. With her grandmother, she drinks only tea.
8. "Do you know Sabina?"  
"Yes, of course. She is my colleague. I have been working with her for more than three years. Her younger sister Boryana is also our colleague, but she works in a different office and I see her rarely. Yesterday I invited her to come have dinner with us."

**READING SELECTION**

Кореспонденция - (8)

29 декември, Сѳфия

Драги Патриша и Бѳб,

Тѳкмо сегѳ полѳчихме писмѳто на Бѳб и бѳрзам да отговѳря. Децѳта го донѳсоха веднѳга след закѳска. Покрай прѳзниците пѳщата обѳче рабѳти осѳбено бѳвно. Данѳ тѳзи честитка за Нѳвата годѳна пристѳгне наврѳме понѳ за слѳдващата Нѳва годѳна.

Пожелѳваме ви от сърце мнѳго здраве, радѳсти и успѳх във всѳчко!

Нѳе нѳмаме прѳзник като вѳшия Дѳн на благодарността, но Бѳдни вѳчер, навечѳрието на Кѳледа, е мнѳго вѳжен прѳзник за нѳс.

Тогѳва е послѳдният дѳн от кѳледните пѳсти и затѳвѳ пригѳтвихме сѳмо пѳстни гѳзби: бѳб, зѳле, туршиѳ, ѳрехи, сушѳни плодовѳ. На мѳсата слѳжихме от всѳчко по мѳлко, за да родѳт и догодѳна нѳвите, лѳзѳта и градѳните. Нѳе с Бѳйко изпѳихме по еднѳ чѳша вѳно и за вѳше здраве. За Бѳдни вѳчер гѳсти не кѳнихме, празнѳвахме, кѳкто обикновѳно, в тѳсен семѳен крѳг.

Тѳзи Нѳва годѳна съвпѳдна с крѳгла годѳшнина от нѳшата свѳтба с Бѳйко. Затѳвѳ покѳнихме мнѳго блѳзки роднѳни на гѳсти. Бѳйко посрѳщна родѳтелите си на гѳрата и ги докѳра тѳк с колѳта. Стѳнахме мнѳго (сѳмо братовчѳдите ни са сѳдем дѳши) и затѳвѳ нѳе със свекѳрва ми вѳче пѳчнахме да шѳтаме. Тѳ ще направѳ бѳницата с кѳсмѳтите. Бащѳ ми ще дѳйде след рабѳта зѳедно с Бѳйко: тѳ рабѳтят в еднѳ и сѳща бѳлница и на Нѳва годѳна ѳмат дежѳрство. Дѳдо Мрѳз ще донесѳ на всѳчки децѳ подарѳци. Бѳбите и дѳдовците, лѳлите и чѳчѳвците се гѳтвят за сурвакарите и събѳрат нѳви лѳскави монѳти. Накрѳтко Нѳва годѳна обещѳва да бѳде вѳсела и шѳмна, нѳщо че пак нѳма снѳг.

Мнѳго се радѳваме на вѳшите писмѳ. Пишѳте ни пѳ-чѳсто.

Вѳша

Калина

**GLOSSARY**

аромáтен	aromatic	данó пристíгне наврéме	let's hope it gets there on time
бáница	banitsa (baked pastry)	двóйка	"2", failing mark in school
бáница с късмéти	banitsa with small fortunes in it	двóйкаджия, -ийка	high school dropout ( <i>intensifying particle</i> )
барóк	Baroque	де	on duty
благодаря	thank, pay gratitude	дежýрен	duty
блízък	close ( <i>adj.</i> )	дежýрство	diary
блízки са	they are close friends	докáрвам / докáрам	drive to, bring to
бóб	beans	дрéха	article of clothing
боледúвам	be ill	дрéхи	clothes, clothing
бонбóн	candy	дъщeря	daughter
боя	paint	дядо ( <i>pl.</i> дядовци)	grandfather
бояджия, -ийка	house painter; paint or dye merchant	Дядо Мрáз	Jack Frost
боядисвам	paint, dye, color	Дядо Кóледа	Santa Claus
брáво	bravo	едíн и същ	[one and] the same
брáк	marriage	жéнен, -ена	married
бúлка	bride	за	about
Бъдни вéчер	Christmas Eve	завéждам / заведá	take somewhere, lead
в еднá стáя с	in the same room as	закúска	breakfast
вác	you ( <i>direct object</i> )	запознáвам се / запознáя се	meet, get acquainted
вéрен, вярна	true, faithful	звънjá по телефóна	telephone
вярно е, че...	it's true that...	извън	out of, outside
вíла	pitchfork	изчéзвам / изчéзна	disappear
вíлица	fork	кавгá	quarrel, dispute
внúк	grandson	кавгаджия, -ийка	quarrelsome person, brawler
внúчка	granddaughter	кáня	invite
всé	always, constantly	кáпя (-еш)	drip, leak
всé ме нýма	I'm never there	кнížка	booklet; driver's license
всé óще избíрам	I'm still looking	колéга	colleague
всé еднó и същó	[it's] always the same thing	Кóледа	Christmas
втóра мáйка	stepmother	кóледен	Christmas ( <i>adj.</i> )
втóри бащá	stepfather	колéжка	female colleague
вúйчо ( <i>pl.</i> вúйчовци)	uncle (mother's brother)	командирóвка	business trip
възтóрг	delight, rapture	копáя	dig
вървúя с	go well with	кóтка	cat
вървúя си	get going	крéг, -ът	circle
вярно <i>see</i> вéрен		крéгъл	round, circular
годенíк	fiancé	крéгла годíшнина	decade anniversary
годенíца	fiancée		
годíшнина	anniversary		
данó	let's wish, if only		

Десети урок / Lesson 10

кутия	box	поканвам / покания	invite
късмет	fortune, luck	покрай	because of
лѳзе (pl. лѳзя)	vineyard	портокал	orange
лѳскав	shining, bright	портокалов	orange (adj.)
мѳщеха	stepmother	пѳст	Lent; fast
мѳне	me (direct object)	пѳстен	Lenten, pertaining to fasting
младѳжѳнец	bridegroom, newlywed	пѳстойнен	constant
младѳжѳнка	bride, newlywed	пѳстойнно	constantly
млѳчност	milkiness	пѳчвам / пѳчна	begin, start
монѳта	coin	пѳщаджия, -ийка	letter carrier, postman
мрѳз	frost, chill	пѳщѳнска кутѳя	mailbox
мѳлча (-иш)	be silent, fall silent	пѳщѳнски	postal
навечѳрие	the eve of; vigil	пѳзник	holiday
най-	most... (superlative degree particle)	пѳзнувам	celebrate
най-мнѳго	the most	пѳрѳден	front, anterior
най-разлѳчни нещѳ	all sorts of things	пѳредизвѳквам / предизвѳкам	provoke, defy
накрѳтко	in short, briefly	пѳредизвѳквам	enrapture
нас	us (direct object)	вѳзтѳрг у	prepare
неѳго	him (direct object)	пригѳтвям / пригѳтвя	accept
неѳя	her (direct object)	приѳмам / приѳма	look like, resemble
ниѳва	[corn]field	прилѳчам	skip, let pass
нищо, че нѳма	it doesn't matter if there isn't any	пропѳскам / пропѳсна	public
Нѳва годѳна	New Years	пѳблика	let, allow; drop
обѳждам се / обѳдя се	call on the phone, get in touch with	пѳскам / пѳсна	mail a letter
обѳщѳвам / обѳщѳя	promise	пѳскам писмѳ	empty
осѳбен	special, particular	пѳст	[these] blasted business
отгѳварѳям / отгѳвѳря	answer	пѳсти	trips
откѳкто	[ever] since	командирѳвки	championship
откѳлѳкѳто	than	пѳрвенствѳ	joy
пѳвѳц	singer	радѳст	bear, give birth to, be fruitful
петѳца	"5" (second-best mark in school)	рѳждам / рѳдя	converse
писѳтел (ка)	writer	разгѳварѳям	different, various
пияница	drunkard, tippler	разлѳчен	take for a walk
плѳменник	nephew	разхѳждам / разхѳдя	relative
плѳменница	niece	рѳдки see рѳджѳк	rare
пѳ-	more... (comparative degree particle)	родѳна see рѳждам	rarely
пѳ-голѳям	older	рѳджѳк, рѳдки	in-law
пѳ-мѳлѳжѳк	younger	рѳджѳко	wedding
пожелѳвам от сѳрцѳ	send heartfelt wishes	сѳвѳт (or сѳвѳтя)	father-in-law (to wife)
поигрѳвам / поигрѳя	play for a while	сѳвѳтѳба	world (adj.)
		сѳвѳкѳр	light (adj.)
		сѳветѳвен	own (adj.)
		сѳвѳтѳл	
		сѳвѳй	

Десети урок / Lesson 10

семéен	family, domestic	тáща	mother-in-law (to husband)
сестра́	sister	тя́х	them ( <i>direct object</i> )
слъ́нчев	sunny	у	at the home of
снежи́нка	snowflake	у дома́	at home, at one's house
сре́щам / сре́щна	meet	у́мен	smart, intelligent
ста́вам / ста́на	become, get to be	учи́лищен	school ( <i>adj.</i> )
ста́ваме мно́го	there gets to be a lot of us	учи́лищен звъне́ц	school bell
(синъ́т им)	(their son)	фу́тбол	soccer
ста́на на че́тири	has turned four	че́йндж	currency exchange office
сти́га то́лкова	that's enough	че́йнджаджия,	unofficial money changer
сто́п	stop-sign; hitchhiker	-и́йка	happy ( <i>in greeting</i> )
стопа́джия, -и́йка	hitchhiker	че́стит	Happy New Year
сурвака́р	survakar (New Year's wassailer)	че́стита Но́ва	
суше́н	dried	Го́дина	
съве́т	advice	че́ститка	greeting card
съвпа́дам / съвпа́дна	coincide, concur	чи́чо ( <i>pl.</i> чи́човци)	uncle (father's brother)
съпру́г, съпру́га	spouse	чу́вам / чу́я	hear
сърце́	heart	ше́стица	"6" (best mark in school)
та́тко ( <i>pl.</i> та́тковци)	dad	ше́там	do housework; be active
тебе́	you ( <i>direct object</i> )	шу́мен	noisy
те́сен семе́ен кръ́г	immediate family		
турши́я	pickles; pickled vegetables		
та́кмо	just, exactly		
та́кмо сегá	just this minute		
та́ст	father-in-law (to husband)		



New Year's in downtown Veliko Tarnovo

## **CULTURAL COMMENTARY**

### **Families: kinship terms; living quarters**

Bulgarians maintain contact with extended families, as seen by the complex system of family-relationship names. Young urban Bulgarians no longer distinguish all the different terms for “brother-in-law” or “sister-in-law”, and some have also begun to confuse certain of the terms for “uncle” and “aunt”. If the particular relationship exists in one’s own family, however, it is likely that the correct word will be used (and that the younger generation will learn it). When one marries, the appropriate terms for parents-in-law are always used.

Living quarters in Bulgaria (and especially in Sofia) are crowded. If a family has more than one child, it is almost unheard of that each child would have his or her own room. Often, in fact, the children of a family will share the only bedroom while the parents sleep in the living room.

### **Sports**

As in other European countries, soccer is called “football” (футбол), and is by far the most popular spectator sport.

### **Forms of address: surnames**

Many Bulgarian surnames contain the suffix *-джий-*, which is of Turkish origin and indicates professional affiliation. Today, of course, this means only that someone among one’s ancestors once practiced that profession. The parallel with English “Smith” or “Miller” is an obvious one.

### **School system: grading**

Grades in school range from 6 (the equivalent of an A) down to 2, which is a failing grade. A grade of 6 (шестіца) or 5 (петіца) is regarded with pride; other grades are not mentioned unless necessary.

### **Traveling: currency**

Formerly, it was possible to change currency only in banks and officially-sponsored tourists offices. Now, private offices for currency changing abound. The exchange rate varies among them, but usually only slightly. One is advised to change money in one of these offices (and to obtain a receipt). It is not advisable to change money on the street.

### **Food and drink: fasting; banitsa; holiday customs connected with food**

Fasting is part of the Eastern Orthodox religion. Most religious adherents abstain from eating meat every Friday (and some do so on Wednesday as well). The most important fasting periods of the Orthodox calendar, however, are the periods preceding Christmas and Easter. There are three general forms of fasting. According to the mildest type, one abstains from eating the flesh of creatures (meat or fish), but is allowed to eat that which they produce (that is, eggs and milk). According to the intermediate type of fast, one can eat only things that grow from the ground, on trees or on vines. The most rigid type is a total fast.

Постни гóзби are dishes that are allowed during the fasting period. Examples (according to the intermediate type) are vegetables, fruits, nuts, beans and wine; or (according to the mild type) the above plus dishes such as yogurt soup, fried eggs or banitsa. On the final evening of the Christmas fast, Бѣдни вѣчер, it is believed that to focus one’s attention on these foods is to encourage the earth to be fertile during the coming year. According to one folk custom, the male and female heads of the household go out to visit each fruit tree at Christmastime. The male carries an ax and threatens to cut each tree down, but the female stops him and encourages the tree to grow and be fruitful.

Banitsa (баница) is a baked pastry filled with white cheese and eggs. On New Year’s, a special banitsa is baked with fortunes (късмѣти) in it, and sliced so that a fortune, foretelling his or her luck for the coming year, is within each family member’s portion. Traditionally, the fortunes are small pieces of cornel branch, each with a bud, cut in different shapes. The cook who bakes the banitsa keeps a list of which shape corresponds to which fortune, and reads it out as the fortunes are discovered. Alternatively, one can write fortunes on small slips of paper and bake them in the banitsa.

**Holiday customs: Christmas and New Year's**

It is the accepted norm to send greetings on New Year's. The phrase **честита Нова година** ("Happy New Year") is often abbreviated to **ЧНГ**. New Year's day itself is the day dedicated to Saint Vasil; it is customary to pay visits to friends and relatives on the afternoon of New Year's day.

The popular name for Christmas is **Кóледа**; the word is a survival from pre-Christian times. The religious name is **Рождество**, which is a word from the church ritual meaning "birth". It refers not to any birth, but only to the birth of Christ. The term for Christmas Eve, **Бъдни вечер**, is related to that of the **бъдник** or Yule log.

**Dyado Mraz (Дядо Мрáz)**, literally "Grandfather Frost", is the Bulgarian functional equivalent of Santa Claus. He brings children presents which they have requested in advance.

Another New Year's custom connected with cornel wood is that of "surva" (**сърва**) or "survakane" (**сурвакане**); it is practiced with great enjoyment on the morning of New Year's day. Using decorated branches of cornelwood called "survachki" (**сурвачки**) that have been purchased in advance, young children strike their elder relatives lightly on the back. As they do so, the "survakari" (**сурвакари**) -- i.e., the children -- chant the following tune:

**Сърва сърва година, весела година  
Живо здраво догодина, догодина, до ами́на.**

These relatives in turn give the children shiny new coins, which they have been collecting in advance. Since Bulgarian children usually do not receive allowances or spending money, this New Year's money is a special treat.



New Year's in Sofia, near the University



## LESSON 11

### **DIALOGUE**

#### Хайде да се чукнем за младоженците!

Владимир: Аз да вървя, че ме чакат. Паk заповядайте на гости в нашето купе.

Димитър (на Веселин): Е, кажете де! Жéнен ли сте?

Веселин: Още не съм.

Ангел: А-а! Ерген си, значи. Няма ли да се жениш?

Веселин: Един ден може и да се ожéня. Всé още избирам.

Ангел: Каквó тóлкова избираш?

Димитър: Ожени се! Няма да съжالياваш. Виж ме мене! Ние сме младоженци. Жéнени сме съвсém отскóро.

Джули: Честито! Да сте живи и здрави!

Ангел: Хайде да се чукнем за младоженците. За много години! Жалко, че нямаме шампанско, но и ракията ще свърши работа.

Джули: Когá бéше сватбата?

Милена: Преди две седмици. След това ходихме на сватбено пътешествие на морето. Беше много хубаво -- топло, слънчево, весело. Видяхме и приятели. Една вечер ходихме на кино. Гледахме някаква комедия. Умряхме от смях. Много добре си починахме.

Димитър: А сегá отиваме при майка ми в Сóфия. На Милéна свекървата. Не сé познават още. Ще се срéцнат за първи път.

Милена: Вчéра се обадохме по телефона да й кажем кога пристигаме. Сигурно ще ни чака на гарата.

Таня: Амá как така майка ви не дойде на сватбата? Болна ли бéше?

Ангел: Къде ще живеете? В Сѳия или във Върна?

Димитър: Във Върна. Няма да стоим дълго в Сѳия. Ще поразходя женá си из Сѳия. После се връщаме.

Камен: Мáмо, Нáдка не íска да ми върне мѳлива. Кажí ÿ, че е мѳй. Не é нéин!

Надка: Твѳите мѳливи ти ги дáдох всíчките. Тíя са си мѳи.

Таня: Не сé кáрайте, децá. Мѳливи íма за всíчки. Няма да се занимавам сáмо с вáс.

Джули: Хáйде, децá, елáте да ви почетá, а пѳк вíе пѳсле ще ми попéете.

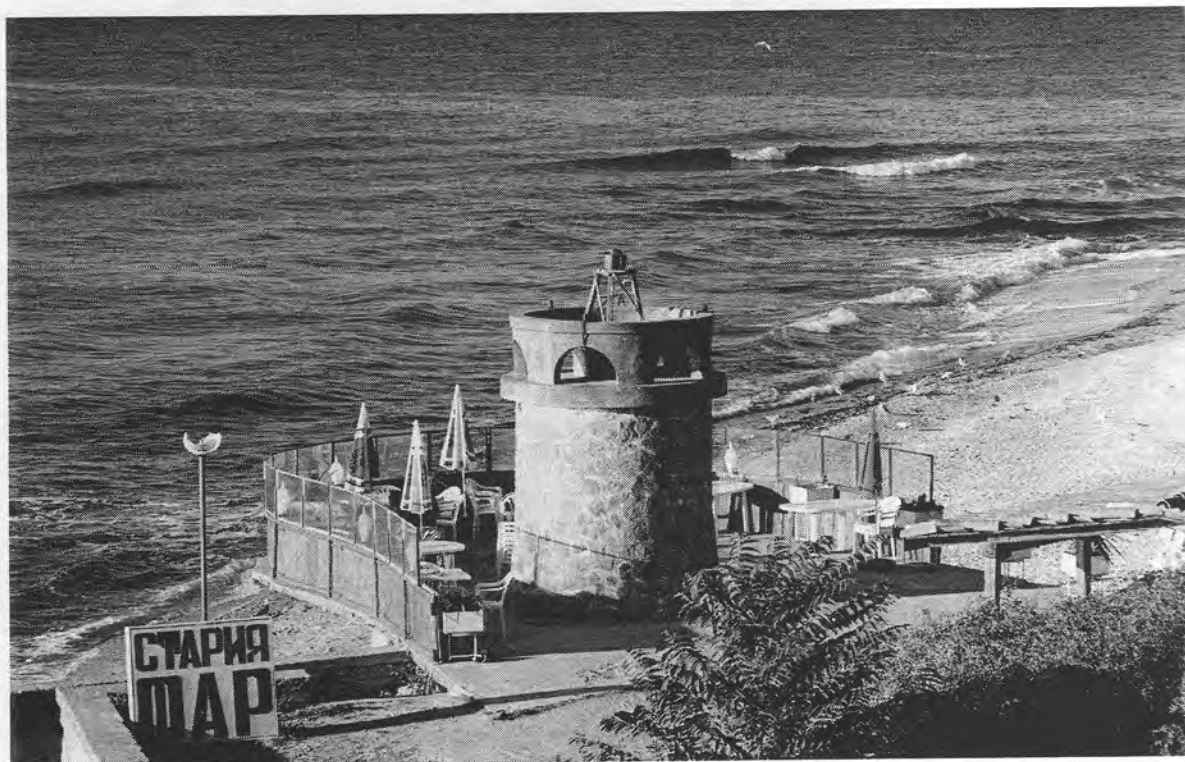
Камен: Áз вчéра пях, днec Нáдка да пее.

Джули: Кой са нáй-любíмите ви кнíги?

Надка: Мéчо Пúх!

Камен: Ян Бибиán на лунáта!

Джули: Тогáва ще ви почетá и от двéте. Седнéте до мéне.



Seaside café "At the Old Lighthouse", Nesebăr

## BASIC GRAMMAR

### 11.1. Aorist tense, continued

A number of different verb types form the aorist with the theme vowel *-a-* (sometimes spelled *-я-*). Among these are all *и*-conjugation verbs which do not form the aorist with the theme vowel *-и-*. If the final stem consonant is *-ч*, *-ж*, or *-ш*, the theme vowel is spelled *-а* : *мълча́* (1sg. present) *мълча́х* (1sg. aorist). Otherwise it is spelled *-я-*.

In this verb group, the aorist theme vowel is always accented. Note that although the vowel in stressed *-а-/я-* in the present is pronounced as [ъ/йъ], stressed *-а-/я-* in the aorist is pronounced as [á] or [я́]. Thus 1sg. present *мълча́* is pronounced [мълчъ] but 3sg. aorist *мълча́* is pronounced [мълча́].

Nearly all *и*-conjugation verbs which form the aorist in *-ах* or *-ях* have end stress in both present and aorist. The one exception in this group is *ви́дя*, which has stem stress in the present and end stress in the aorist.

Below are the present and aorist tense forms of *вървя́* and *ви́дя*.

	<i>PRESENT</i>	<i>AORIST</i>	<i>PRESENT</i>	<i>AORIST</i>
<i>1<sup>st</sup> singular</i>	<i>върв-я́</i> [йъ́]	<i>върв-я́х</i> [я́х]	<i>ви́д-я</i>	<i>ви́д-я́х</i> [я́х]
<i>2<sup>nd</sup> singular</i>	<i>върв-и́ш</i>	<i>върв-я́</i> [я́]	<i>ви́д-иш</i>	<i>ви́д-я́</i> [я́]
<i>3<sup>rd</sup> singular</i>	<i>върв-и́</i>	<i>върв-я́</i> [я́]	<i>ви́д-и</i>	<i>ви́д-я́</i> [я́]
<i>1<sup>st</sup> plural</i>	<i>върв-и́м</i>	<i>върв-я́хмe</i>	<i>ви́д-им</i>	<i>ви́д-я́хмe</i>
<i>2<sup>nd</sup> plural</i>	<i>върв-и́те</i>	<i>върв-я́хтe</i>	<i>ви́д-ите</i>	<i>ви́д-я́хтe</i>
<i>3<sup>rd</sup> plural</i>	<i>върв-я́т</i> [йъ́т]	<i>върв-я́ха</i>	<i>ви́д-ят</i>	<i>ви́д-я́ха</i>

The verb *мо́га* also forms its aorist according to this pattern (even though it is an *е*-conjugation verb). Its stem is that of the 3sg. present, *мож-*. Thus: 1sg. present *мо́га*, 1sg. aorist *можáх*; 2sg. present *мо́жеш*, 2sg. aorist *можá*, etc.

Two other types form the aorist with the theme vowel *-я-*. One includes verbs which end in *-ея* in the present: the aorist stem of these verbs is formed by dropping the stem-final *-е*. The other includes certain common verbs whose stem-final consonant is *-р*, e.g. *умра́* and *спра́*. The present and aorist conjugations of *живе́я* and *умра́* are given below.

	PRESENT	AORIST	PRESENT	AORIST
1 <sup>st</sup> singular	живе́-я	жив-я́х	умр-а́ [ъ]	умр-я́х
2 <sup>nd</sup> singular	живе́-еш	жив-я́	умр-е́ш	умр-я́ [я]
3 <sup>rd</sup> singular	живе́-е	жив-я́	умр-е́	умр-я́ [я]
1 <sup>st</sup> plural	живе́-ем	жив-я́хме	умр-е́м	умр-я́хме
2 <sup>nd</sup> plural	живе́-ете	жив-я́хте	умр-е́те	умр-я́хте
3 <sup>rd</sup> plural	живе́-ят	жив-я́ха	умр-а́т [ът]	умр-я́ха

## 11.2. Emphatic and doubled pronouns

To place emphasis on a pronoun object, Bulgarians have two options. One is to use the long-form pronoun in either sentence initial or sentence final position. This places extremely high emphasis on the pronoun. For example:

Когó търсиш? Мéне ли  
търсиш?

Who are you looking for? *Me?*

Човéкът не търси мéне, а тéбе.

It's not *me* the man's looking for, but  
*you*.

Да́йте ми, мо́ля, ед́ин килогра́м  
кафе́. А на не́я полови́н  
ки́ло.

Please give me a kilo of coffee. And  
give *her* a half kilo.

-- На тéбе ли да го да́м?

"Is it *you* I should give it to?"

-- Не́, не́, да́йте го на не́го.

"No, no, give it to *him*."

The other option is to use both long form and short form objects together, e.g. мéне (long) + ме (short), or на мéне (long) + ми (short). Here are examples:

На мéне ми да́йте чéтвърт  
сала́м.

Give me a quarter-kilo of salami.

Не́го го ви́ждаме чéсто.

We see him often.

As the translations indicate, the doubled usage of pronoun objects carries considerably less emphasis. The meaning is somewhere in between that of the short form used alone (neutral) and the long form used alone (emphatic).

There are two possible types of word order in such sentences. In one (illustrated above), the doubled pronoun object begins the sentence and is followed immediately by the verb, with nothing intervening. When the verb occurs elsewhere in the sentence, however, the pronoun objects are separated. This is because each of

the two objects has its own word rules to obey. Long form objects usually stand at the beginning of the sentence, while short form objects must be directly adjacent to the verb. The following examples illustrate the joint action of these two rules:

На мене нищо не ми казва.	S/he doesn't [ever] tell me anything.
На него ще му кажеш ли?	Will you tell him?

### 11.3. "Experiencer" constructions

In Bulgarian, indirect pronoun objects appear in a number of very frequently used expressions. One is the "experiencer" construction, which conveys the idea that someone feels a particular way or is in a particular state. For instance:

Студено ми е.	I'm cold.	Ще ти стане топло.	You'll be [too] hot.
Беше ѝ добре.	She felt fine.	Много ми е лошо.	I feel terrible!
Не му е добре.	He's not well.		

The general meaning of all the above sentences is that the subject experiences a certain state. In English, the experiencer is the actual subject of the verb "be", "feel", etc. In Bulgarian, however, these sentences have no subject. The state is expressed by an adverb, and the identity of the experiencer is expressed by an indirect object pronoun. The basic verb is *съм*, although the verb *ставам / стана* can occur in the past and future tenses when the idea of "become" is present. The verb form is *always* 3<sup>rd</sup> singular.

When a present-tense state is expressed, the order of words is very rigid. This is because short form pronoun objects must stand directly before the 3<sup>rd</sup> singular copula *е*, and because they cannot begin a sentence. The only possible choice, therefore, is for either the adverb or the negative particle to begin the sentence.

<i>affirmative</i>	Добре ми е.	I'm fine.
<i>interrogative</i>	Добре ли ти е?	Are you OK?
<i>negative</i>	Не ми е добре.	I don't feel [so] good.

In the future or past tenses, when it is possible for the verb form to begin the sentence, two different word orders are possible:

<i>past</i>	Добре ми беше.	<i>or</i>	Беше ми добре.	I was fine.
	Добре ми стана.	<i>or</i>	Стана ми добре	I'm OK now. *
<i>future</i>	Добре ще ми бъде.	<i>or</i>	Ще ми бъде добре.	I'll be fine.
	Добре ще ми стане.	<i>or</i>	Ще ми стане добре.	I'll get better.

\* = I got better.

When these sentences are negated, however, only one word order is possible:

<i>present</i>	Не ми е добре́.	I'm not well.
<i>past</i>	Не ми беше добре́.	I didn't feel [so] good.
<i>future</i>	Няма да ми е добре́.	I won't be OK.

The doubled indirect object can also be used. When the identity of the experiencer is expressed as a noun, the doubled form *must* be used. For example:

<i>present</i>	На Калина не ѝ е добре́.	Kalina's not feeling so well.
<i>future</i>	На студентите добре́ ли ще им ста́не?	Will the students be OK?
<i>past</i>	На Стоян не му беше добре́.	Stoyan didn't feel good.

#### 11.4. Transitivity, reciprocity, and the particle *ce*

When the particle *ce* is added to a verb, it changes the meaning of that verb. Sometimes the change of meaning can only be rendered idiomatically, as in *ка́звам* (perfective *ка́жа*) "say, tell" vs. *ка́звам се* (imperfective only) "be named". Usually, however, one of several definable meanings is added. One of the most frequent of these added meanings is *intransitivity*.

A transitive verb is one that takes a direct object: it expresses the idea of an action which has a direct result on someone or something. An intransitive verb, by contrast, does not (and cannot) take a direct object. It simply expresses the fact that an action "happens". Here are examples of the same verbs used both transitively and intransitively. In each case, the particle *ce* makes the verb intransitive.

<i>transitive</i>	Връщам кни́гите в библиотéката.	I'm returning the books to the library.
<i>intransitive</i>	Връщам се ведна́га след това́.	I'm returning immediately after that.
<i>transitive</i>	Ма́йката събу́жда деца́та в 7 ч.	Mother wakes the children at 7 a.m.
<i>intransitive</i>	Деца́та се събу́ждат в 7 ч.	The children wake up at 7 a.m.
<i>transitive</i>	Няма да ви занима́вам с това́.	I won't bother you with this.
<i>intransitive</i>	Няма да се занима́вам са́мо с вас.	I can't be concerned only with you.

Another meaning the particle *ce* can add is that of reciprocity. Sometimes this is translated as an object of the sort "each other", and sometimes it is just understood from the context. The verbs in such sentences, of course, must be in the plural. Here are examples of the same verbs used transitively and with reciprocal meaning:

*transitive*

Ще го видим ли довечера?

Will we see him this evening?

*reciprocal*

Ще се видим ли довечера?

Will we see each other this evening?

*transitive*

Ние го срѣщаме често на улицата.

We meet him on the street often.

*reciprocal*

Ще се срѣщнат за пръв път.

They will meet for the first time.

If the verb is one which takes an indirect object, the reciprocal meaning is expressed with the particle *си*. For instance:

Хайде да си говорим на "ти".

Let's speak to each other as "ти".

### 11.5. Adverbs of direction and location

The adverb *къде* means "where" both as location and direction. For example:

*location*

Къде живееш?

Where do you live?

*direction*

Къде отиваш?

Where are you going?

If a more vivid sense of direction is desired, the directional adverb *накъде* is used.

*vivid direction*

Ти накъде?

Where are you off to?

Накъде отиваш?

(same)

Certain common adverbial compounds used in answer to this question also are formed with *на-*. Here are the base forms, followed by examples of usage.

горе up  
дóлу down

вън in  
вътре out

ляво left  
дясно right

Отивам нагоре.

I'm going up.

[... надóлу / наляво / надясно]

[...down/left/right]

Излизаме навън.

We're going outside.

Хайде да влезем навътре в гората.

Let's go deeper into the woods.

The adverb *откъде* means "from where?". This question is often answered by adverbs formed from *от-* plus the base forms given above. For example:

Откъде идва?

Where is he coming from?

Слиза отгоре.

He's coming down [from above].

Идва отдолу. Идва отляво / отдясно.	She's coming up [from below]. It's coming from the left/from the right.
Миризмата идва отвън. Някой излиза отвътре.	The smell is coming from outside. Someone's coming out [from inside].

Frequently, the на- and the от- adverbs are combined. For example:

Водата тече отгоре надолу. Ние пишем отляво надясно, а в арабските страни пишат отдясно наляво.	Water runs downhill [from up to down]. We write from left to right, but in Arabic countries they write from right to left.
--	---

The prefix в-, in the meaning of location, can also be added to certain of the above base forms. For example:

-- Къде е магазинът? -- Тука вляво.	"Where's the store?" "Here, on the left."
Вдясно от тебе са очилата ми. Подай ми ги, моля.	My eyeglasses are on your right -- give them to me, please.

### 11.6. Demonstrative pronouns: тоя

The pronoun тоя "this" is a variant form of този. Bulgarians use it frequently, especially in speech. The demonstrative оъзи "that" has similar variant forms. Here are both sets:

<i>masculine</i>	<i>feminine</i>	<i>neuter</i>	<i>plural</i>	<i>(meaning)</i>
ТО-ЗИ	ТА-ЗИ	ТО-ВА	ТЕ-ЗИ	this
ТО-Я	ТА-Я	Т-УЙ	ТИ-Я	(same)
ОУ-ЗИ	ОНА-ЗИ	ОНО-ВА	ОНЕ-ЗИ	that
ОУ-Я	ОНА-Я	ОН-УЙ	ОНИ-Я	(same)

The masculine form този is sometimes shortened to тѳз (in writing as well as in speech). The adverb така "thus" also has the variant form тѳй.

### 11.7. Social interactional formulas

The form of да which sometimes called "modal" appears in a number of formulaic expressions, especially those connected with congratulations or good wishes.



One of the most frequent of these is (in literal translation) "May you be alive and healthy!". It is often said to someone upon departure, roughly equivalent to the archaic English "Fare thee well", and is frequently used as an expression of congratulations, in the sense of "best wishes". The same phrase is used, although somewhat less commonly, with the imperative **бъди** (plural **бъдете**). For example:

Да сте живи и здрави!  
Бъдете живи и здрави!

May you be well and healthy!  
Be well and healthy!

The verb meaning "toast" (in the literal sense of touching glasses and drinking) is **чюкам се** (perfective **чюкна се**). It is introduced by either **да** or **хайте да**. Toasts themselves are usually expressed with the preposition **за**. For example:

Хайте да се чюкнем за  
младоженците!  
За много години!  
Наздраве!

Let's toast the newlyweds!

Here's to many [happy] years!  
Cheers! To your health!

### 11.8. Prepositions

(a) The preposition **из** refers to non-directional movement within a closed area. Students of other Slavic languages should pay particular attention to this meaning.

Ще разходя женá си из Сóфия.  
Ще пътуваме из Бългáрия.

I'll show my wife around Sofia.  
We're going to tour Bulgaria.

(b) The preposition **за** is used in toasts, either literal (when raising a glass) or metaphorical (general expression of good wishes).

За успех на изпита!

Here's to success on the exam!

## EXERCISES

I. Rewrite the following sentences, doubling the pronouns.

1. Ти ли ѝ каза за това?
2. -- Другата година библиотеката ще има ли тези списания?  
-- Не, няма да ги получаваме.
3. Нашите приятели благодариха ли им за помощта?
4. -- Задружно е. Няма ли да отворите тези прозорци?  
-- Не ги отваряме, за да не става течение.
5. Скоро ли го очаквате да дойде?
6. -- Нахрани ли децата?  
-- Нали знаеш, че аз никога няма да ги оставя гладни.
7. Ще го напиша когато имам време.

II. Compose negative and interrogative "experiencer" sentences as follows:

Model: Димитър (present tense) лесно  
Answer: На Димитър не му е лесно. На Димитър лесно ли му е?

- |    |               |                 |         |
|----|---------------|-----------------|---------|
| 1. | Калина        | (past tense)    | добре   |
| 2. | Студентите    | (future tense)  | трудно  |
| 3. | Децата        | (present tense) | забавно |
| 4. | Майка ми      | (past tense)    | лошо    |
| 5. | Камен и Надка | (future tense)  | студено |
| 6. | Лекарят       | (past tense)    | добре   |
| 7. | Баща му       | (present tense) | весело  |

III. Fill in the blank with *се* ONLY if the meaning requires it.

1. Те \_\_\_\_\_ оплакаха от него на учителката.
2. Другия месец ще \_\_\_\_\_ женим нашата малка дъщеря.
3. Качете \_\_\_\_\_ по стълбите, асансьорът не работи.
4. Вие Иван ли \_\_\_\_\_ казвате?
5. Младоженците ще ви \_\_\_\_\_ върнат парите, когато могат.
6. Те \_\_\_\_\_ ожениха преди пет години и имат две деца.
7. Джули и Дейвид ще \_\_\_\_\_ върнат в Америка в края на лятото.

## ADDITIONAL GRAMMAR NOTES

### 11.1a. Aorist tense, continued

The verb **спя́** (2sg. **спи́ш**) is irregular in that it spells the aorist theme vowel as **-a-** and not **-я-**. Its aorist is thus 1sg. **спáх**, 2sg. **спá**, etc. As in other verbs, the vowel in the **-я́** ending of the present tense is pronounced [ -йѣ́ ], while the **-á** ending of the aorist is pronounced [ -á ].

Verbs with monosyllabic stems in **-ая** (such as **лáя**, **знáя**) form the aorist with the theme vowel **-я-**. All prefixed forms of these verbs (except those of **знáя**) also form the aorist with **-я-**. Verbs in **-ая** with disyllabic stems (such as **копáя**), and prefixed forms of **знáя** (e.g. **познáя**), however, have no theme vowel in the aorist. Here are the present and aorist forms of **лáя** and **познáя**:

	<i>PRESENT</i>	<i>AORIST</i>	<i>PRESENT</i>	<i>AORIST</i>
<i>1<sup>st</sup> singular</i>	лá-я	лá-яx	познá-я	познá-х
<i>2<sup>nd</sup> singular</i>	лá-еш	лá-я	познá-еш	познá
<i>3<sup>rd</sup> singular</i>	лá-е	лá-я	познá-е	познá
<i>1<sup>st</sup> plural</i>	лá-ем	лá-яxме	познá-ем	познá-хме
<i>2<sup>nd</sup> plural</i>	лá-ете	лá-яxте	познá-ете	познá-хте
<i>3<sup>rd</sup> plural</i>	лá-ят	лá-яxа	познá-ят	познá-ха

### 11.2a. Emphatic and doubled pronouns

#### The pronoun **сéбе**

The reflexive pronoun **сéбе** occurs only in the doubled form, and only in the form **сéбе си**. This phrase expresses both direct and indirect object meanings.

- |   |  |
|---|--|
| -- Когó виждаш в огледалото?                              | "Whom are you looking at in the mirror?"                                   |
| -- Виждам сéбе си в него.                                 | "I see myself in it."  |
| -- На мене ли говориш?                                    | "Are you talking to me?"   |
| -- Hé, на сéбе си.  | "No, to myself."   |
| За сéбе си ако не сé погрижиш,<br>за когó ще се погрижиш? | If you don't look after yourself, then<br>who are you going to look after? |

#### Word order with doubled pronouns

Doubled pronoun phrases -- comprising a long form and a short form pronoun object -- are encountered very frequently in Bulgarian. The two pronouns mean

exactly the same thing, but since one of them is a clitic and the other a fully accented word, they are subject to very different word order rules.

Accented words can, in principle, occur anywhere in the sentence. The long form of a doubled object, however, almost always stands at the beginning of the sentence, although in certain instances it can also stand at the end of the sentence. Short form objects obey the rules already learned for clitics: they cannot begin a sentence, they stand immediately adjacent to the verb, and they follow directly the particles *да, ще* or *не*.

Combining these two sets of rules, one sees that the short object can directly follow the long one, if the sequence of objects is followed directly by the verb. More frequently, however, the verb occurs near or at the end of the sentence. Care must then be taken that both sets of word order rules are applied correctly. The following examples (with numbering cumulative across lessons) illustrate these rules. As clitics, the short form objects are identified in capital letters (*IND, DIR*). As fully accented words, the long form objects are identified in lower case letters (*indirect obj., direct obj.*)

- (49) На мене нищо никога не ми дава.  
*indirect obj. direct obj. Neg. IND verb*  
 She doesn't ever give me anything.
- (50) Нея ще я видиш ли?  
*direct obj. Fut. DIR verb INT*  
 Will you see her?
- (51) Хайде и на тях да им го покажем.  
*indirect obj. Conj. IND DIR verb*  
 Let's show it to them too.
- (52) Тя жена ли му е на него?  
*subject predicate INT IND 3<sup>d</sup>COP indirect obj.*  
 Is she his wife?

### 11.3a. "Experiencer" constructions

Experiencer constructions also occur frequently with doubled pronoun objects. The rules outlined above apply to them as well, of course.

- (53) На нея не ѝ е добре.  
*indirect obj. Neg. IND 3<sup>d</sup>COP*  
 She doesn't feel good.
- (54) На тях не им беше добре.  
*indirect obj. Neg. IND verb*  
 They didn't feel well.

- (55) На тях *indirect obj.* няма да им бъде *neg. Conj. IND verb* *добре.*  
They won't feel well.
- (56) На него *indirect obj.* *добре* ли ще му стане? *INT Fut. IND verb*  
Will he get better?
- (57) *Добре* ли му беше *INT IND verb* *на Иван?* *indirect obj.*  
Were things OK [in the end] for Ivan?

### 11.4a. Transitivity, reciprocity, and the particle *се*

A large number of verbs can occur both in the transitive form (accompanied by a direct object) and the intransitive form (accompanied by the particle *се*). For some verbs, the intransitive is the more neutral of the two, and in this case the transitive variant takes on a more causative meaning. The same is true of certain reciprocal verbs. Here are examples of usage, with the more neutral intransitive variant given first.

*intransitive*

Синът ми *се* жени скоро.

My son is getting married soon.

*transitive*

Скоро ще жени *си* синът.

Soon I'll be marrying off my son.

*intransitive*

Ще *се* разходим из София.

We'll stroll around Sofia [and see the sights].

*transitive*

Ще разходя *си* жена из София.

I'm going to take my wife around Sofia [and show her the sights].

*reciprocal*

Не *се* карайте, деца.

Don't fight, children.

*transitive*

Не ме карай да те чакам.

Don't make me wait for you.

Certain reciprocal verbs can retain the *се* and still occur with a seemingly transitive meaning. In these cases, the object is a prepositional phrase. For example:

Утре ще *се* срещнем с него.

We'll meet him tomorrow.

Той *се* кара често с нас.

He argues with us often.

Several verbs are particularly interesting in this regard. One is *интересувам*, whose transitive usage is as in English. When used intransitively, it adds *се* and

takes the preposition *от*. The verb *оплаквам* “mourn” is similar: in the intransitive version (with the meaning “complain”) it adds *се* and takes the preposition *от*.

The verb *сещам се* “remember, call to mind” also belongs to this category. Although this verb is transitive in English, in Bulgarian it is an intransitive verb marked by *се*. Like other verbs of mentioning, thinking etc., it takes an object with the preposition *за*. For the transitive meaning, the related verb *подсещам* “remind” is used. For all these verbs, examples of which are given below, the intransitive version is the one more commonly encountered.

*intransitive*

Интересувам се от средновековието. I’m interested in the Middle Ages.

*transitive*

Интересува ме средновековието. The Middle Ages interest me.

*intransitive*

От какво се оплаквате? What are you complaining about?

*transitive*

Жив да го оплачеш. It makes your heart bleed to see him.  
(literally: it’s as if you mourn him alive.)

*intransitive*

По цели месеци не се сеща за майка си. For months at a time he won’t remember [to think of] his mother.

*transitive*

Ако не го подсетя, няма и по телефона да ѝ се обади. If I don’t remind him, he won’t get in touch with her even by phone.

### 11.5a. Adverbs of direction and location

There are numerous adverbs of location which are formed either with the prefix *от-* (and to a lesser extent, *на-*), or without a prefix altogether. These usages are idiomatic. For example:

Чётните номера на къщите са отляво, а нечётните -- отдясно. The even-numbered houses are on the left, and the odd-numbered ones on the right.

Той седи отляво (от лявата ми страна). He’s sitting on my left (on my left side).

Вътре гори огън -- ела вътре. There’s a fire inside -- come on in.

Навътре в гората има много ягоди. There are a lot of strawberries in the woods.

Боли́ ме отвѣ́тре, като чу́вам  
таки́ва неща́.                      It pains me [inside] to hear such things.

Деца́та си игра́ят вѣ́н.                      The children are playing outside.  
Деца́та си игра́ят отвѣ́н.                      (same)  
Деца́та си игра́ят навѣ́н.                      (same)

Perhaps the most frequently used of these is the idiomatic formula *го́ре-до́лу*, which corresponds to English "more or less":

Така́ го́ре-до́лу ми́сля и аз.                      That's more or less what I think, too.

### 11.5b. The noun *пѣ́т*

The noun *пѣ́т* "time" occurs in expressions like "the first time", "the second time", "every time", "some time" and the like. The plural is *-и*. There is no quantified form: the plural is used after numbers and other quantifiers.

This noun usually occurs in the indefinite form, although the definite form is possible if the speaker has a specific "time" in mind. As in other adverbials of time formed from masculine nouns (e.g. *миналия ме́сец*), the definite *object* form is used.

Все́ки пѣ́т, кога́то я ви́ждам, забра́вям да ѝ ка́жа за те́бе.	Every time I see her I forget to tell her about you.
За пѣ́рви пѣ́т ще во́дим деца́та в Евро́па.	We're taking the children to Europe for the first time.
После́дния пѣ́т, кога́то се видя́хме, бе́ше през деке́мври.	The last time we got together was in December.
Ще ми́на няко́й пѣ́т да си поприка́зваме.	I'll drop by some time so we can have a chat.
Ние́ се видя́хме са́мо еди́н пѣ́т, и то закра́тко.	We met only once, and for a very short time at that.
Два́ пѣ́ти, три́ пѣ́ти, няма значе́ние ко́лко пѣ́ти звѣ́ня по телефо́на и все́ не мо́га да го наме́ря.	Twice, three times, it doesn't matter how many times I call, he's never there.

**11.7a. Social interactional formulas**

Another way to express congratulations is with phrases containing the adjective **честит**. If the occasion is not specified, one uses the adverbial form. If the occasion is specified, the adjective **честит** modifies the noun signifying it. For example:

Честита Нова година!	Happy New Year!
Честит рождён ден!	Happy birthday!
Честита Баба Марта!	Happy first day of spring!
Честит празник!	Happy holiday!
Честито!	Congratulations!

The greeting for one who has just arrived is composed of the adverb **добре** and the L-participle of the verb **дойда**. This phrase, which means literally “well come”, must carry the adjectival ending appropriate to the person(s) being welcomed.

<i>greeting</i>	<i>(meaning)</i>	<i>addressee</i>
Добре дошл-и!	Welcome!	a group or a single person spoken to as <b>вие</b>
Добре дошл-а!	Welcome!	a female spoken to as <b>ти</b>
Добре дош-ъл!	Welcome!	a male spoken to as <b>ти</b>
Добре дошл-о!	Welcome!	a child, animal or neuter object

The imperative form **заповядай** (plural **заповядайте**) is used on a number of occasions. It is said on moving aside to let someone pass, on handing someone something (either as a gift or as a purchase), on extending an invitation, or on asking someone in. Examples below are given in the plural form; of course, the singular is used in speaking to someone addressed as **ти**.

Заповядайте, минете.	After you.
Ето, заповядайте.	Here [you are].
Заповядайте на гости у нас.	Come by and see us [sometime].
Заповядайте!	Come in!

**11.9. Definiteness and numbers**

Numbers can be used in the definite form when the group they refer to is spoken of as a specified, known unit. If the unit is 1, the definite form usually signals a contrast between “the one” and “the other”. In the plural, **едни(те)** is used in the sense “some, certain ones”.

Of course, numbers higher than 1 cannot distinguish singular and plural. Definite articles for these numbers are either **-та** (any number form ending in **-а**) or **-те**. For numbers 4 and higher the accent shifts to the definite article.



Here is a synopsis of the forms and their accentuation, followed by examples.

<i>number</i>	<i>masculine</i>		<i>neuter</i>	<i>feminine</i>	<i>(plural)</i>
1	едѝн-иѝят		еднѝ-то	еднѝ-та	еднѝ-те
2	<i>personal</i>	<i>non-personal</i>	двѝ-те		
	двѝама-та	двѝа-та			
3	трѝма-ата		трѝ-те		
4	четирѝма-та		четирѝ-те		
	etc.		etc.		

Еднѝта вратѝ е отворѝна, а другѝта не ѝ.

One of the doors is open, and the other one isn't.

Еднѝте влизѝт, а другѝте излизѝт.

Some come in, and others go out.

Разхѝжда ме по еднѝ крѝви ѝлицѝ.

He's taking me down some crooked streets.

А вѝе двѝамата, елатѝ след 1 час.

As for you two, come back in an hour.

Трѝте женѝ чѝкат на опѝшка.

The three women are waiting in line.

Товѝ бѝше през петдесетте години.

That was during the 50s.

When definite numbers are preceded by the conjunction **и**, the meaning is "all of..." (or, in the case of the number 2, "both"). For example:

И двѝамата мъже идѝват да ни помѝгнат.

Both men are coming to help us.

Ще почѝта и от двѝете кнѝги.

I'll read a bit from both of the books.

Ще дѝйдѝт и трѝмата.

All three of them will come.

И трѝте яйцѝ са развалѝни.

All three eggs went bad.

The ordinal number **пѝрѝви** can also appear without the final **-и** in certain idiomatic expressions. The form without the **-и** is spelled differently: the sequence **-ѝр-** is replaced by the sequence **-рѝ-**. For example:

Ще се срѝцнат за прѝв пѝт.

They will meet for the first time.

**11.10. The conjunction че, continued**

The conjunction **че** often suggests a mild degree of causality. In such instances, it is best left untranslated into English, since the English conjunction "because" would convey too much of a causal relationship. For example:

Хайде, че съм гладен!  
Аз да вървя, че ме чакат.

Let's go! I'm hungry!  
I'm on my way; they're waiting for me.

NOTE: A comma is **nearly always** written before **че**, regardless of either the meaning, or the spoken form, of the sentence.

**11.11. The particle де**

The particle **де** suggests increased interaction in conversation, often verging on impatience.

Кажй де! Жéнен ли си?  
Хайде де! Да тръгваме!

So tell me! Are you married [or not]?  
Come on! Let's get going!



## SAMPLE SENTENCES

1. Лиляна се плаши от мишки. Младен ѝ казва: Не се плаши, няма нищо страшно.
2. Малките деца вярват в Торбалан и се плашат от него.
3. -- Ох, как ме стресна!  
-- Не се стряскай, аз съм.
4. Камен и Надка не се разбират много добре: те се разбират като куче и котка.
5. Двамата братя карат колите си по един и същ начин.
6. Не се сещам каква песен можем да изпеем. Подсети ме за някоя хубава песен.
7. Спомням си доброто старо време.
8. Спомняш ли си колко струва един трамваен билет в София?
9. Ако не закуси, след обед ще му стане лошо.
10. На Лиляна ѝ става лошо в самолет.
11. Камене, лошо ли ти е? Защо си толкова блед?
12. И двамата бяхме болни. Сега на мене ми е по-добре, а той още не може да става от леглото.
13. На мене ми е ясно за какво става дума, на тебе ясно ли ти е?
14. На нея все ѝ е студено, а на него му е горещо. Той отваря прозореца, тя го затваря.
15. Накъде ме водиш? Там няма път.
16. Вървиш наляво до пресечката, после завиваш.
17. Пътятката е тясна: отляво има планина, а отдясно -- пропаст.

### **SENTENCES FOR TRANSLATION**

1. How is your father? I saw him yesterday and he wasn't so well then. What is the matter with him?
2. Boris and Marina don't speak to each other any more. They are always fighting. Things aren't going very well for them. I wanted to help them but I couldn't. Could you?
3. Will you wake up on time, or do you want me to wake you up? Don't complain if I wake you earlier than you want. It's better than waking up too late.
4. Congratulations on your new house! May you live there many long and happy years!
5. Ivan is cold, can you give him his jacket please? The children were cold before, but then their mother brought them their jackets and now they are no longer cold.
6. The students are all upset [feeling bad], because they have an exam tomorrow. Last night they were so cold they couldn't study. Today they will help each other study, though.
7. Are you all right? You say you're OK, but I'm worried about you. You say you are going to the left and then you go to the right, and you say you are going up and then you go down.
8. I don't understand. He sold you the kebabs for ten leva, but he sold me kebabs for fifteen leva. I don't want to complain to everyone, but to you I'll complain!
9. Your friends had a lot of fun last night -- they watched a film, saw many of their favorite actors, and died laughing. Why couldn't you watch the film with them? Were you really ill? Are you better now?
10. There are so many new places to visit -- I'm interested in all of them. But I am most interested in the mountains. I always feel great in the mountains. My sister does too -- we both are happy when we are in the mountains.

## READING SELECTION

### Кореспонденция - (9)

7 януари

Драги Боб,

Ние сме, както винаги през зимната ваканция, на гости за няколко дни у моите родители. Дойдохме веднага след Нова година. Родителите ми са вече стари и единствената им радост в живота са любимите внуци. Като повечето стари хора не искат да променят навиците си и да дойдат да живеят при нас. Много им се молихме, но не можахме да ги убедим. Къщата им тук е, разбира се, несравнимо по-голяма и удобна от нашия апартамент в София. Но на нас ще ни е приятно те да са по-близо до нас. И ние на тях ще можем повече да помагаме, и те на нас. Яна и особено Йво са много привързани към своите баба и дядо: като малък Йво прекара три години в Смолян при тях. Явно, докато са здрави (да чука на дърво), ще са тук, пък после ще видим.

Майка ми е много доволна, че сме на гости в Смолян. Шета от сутрин до вечер из къщи. Вчера ни прави баница, она ден -- кокоска с кисело зеле. Дъже не се сеща да се оплаква от здравето си.

Ние с баща ми тия дни постегнахме къщата -- знаеш как са старите къщи, в тях все има по нещо счупено.

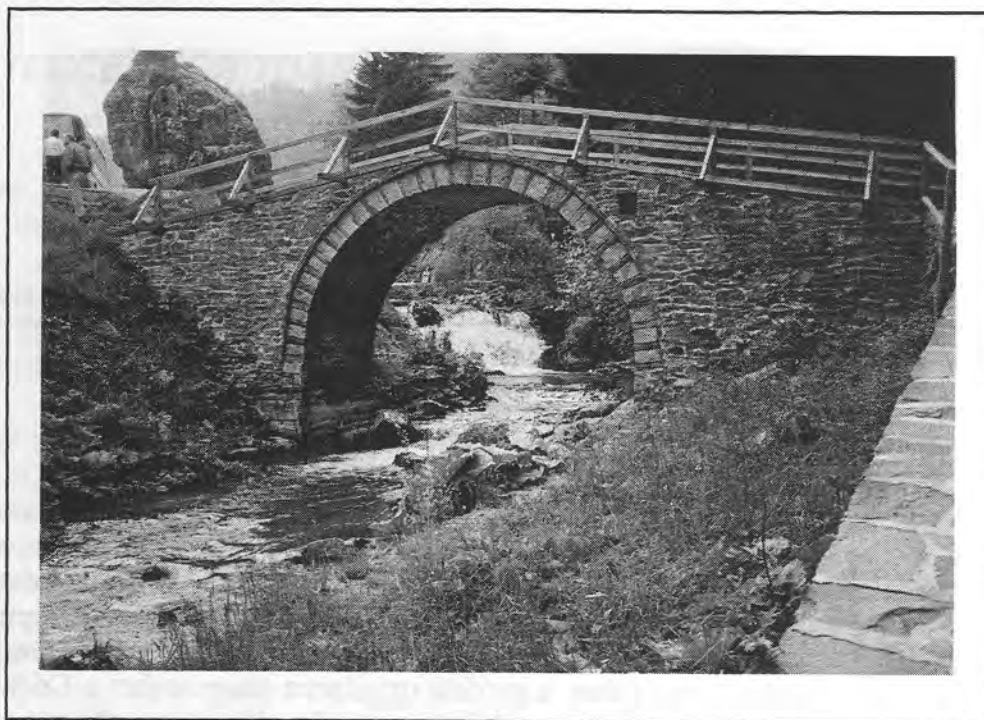
Тук климатът е суров, а къщата на родителите ми няма, разбира се, парно отопление. Калина е зиморничава и все ѝ е студено. Вчера дъже ѝ стана лошо, но днес ѝ е по-добре. Докато беше студено, държахме децата повече вътре. Днес обаче времето омекна и те излязоха навън. Яна направи голям снежен човек с нос от морков, а Йво си играе с кучето на двора. Още три дни и ще се връщаме в София. Може би там ще ни чака писмо от вас.

На тебе и на семейството ти пожелавам да сте живи и здрави.

Сърдечни поздрави,

Бойко

P.S. Пращам тази картичка да видите колко са хубави родните ми Родопи.



23 януари

Драги Бойко,

Няма да повярваш, но днес получихме едновременно вашите писма от 29 декември и 7 януари. Много благодарим за хубавите картички. Патриша се ка̀ни да пише отделно на Калѝна в отговор на новогодишната честитка. Родопите изглежда найстина заслужават да ги посетим за няколко дни. Какви интересни места има там? В България аз чух от колегите само за зимния курорт Боровец, но дали има смисъл да отидем до там, щом ще бъдем в България през лятото?

Въобщѐ, защо не ми разкажеш повече за планините в България? Аз видях само Витоша. Много е хубава. Ходих до там цели два пъти. Единия път, както сигурно си спомняш, се качихме с тебе и с Йво на Черни връх. А няколко дни по-късно ме водиха да вечеряме на Копитото. Изгледът към нощна София от ресторанта беше чудесен.

В едно от предишните си писма ти ми писа за Рила. Ние с Патриша вече твърдо решихме да посетим Рилския манастир.

Четохме за нестинарите в Странджа. Как мислиш, по кое време да отидем, за да ги видим?

Ето че пак те затрупах с въпроси. Чакаме с нетърпение отговора ти.

Поздрави от всички ни

Боб

**GLOSSARY**

абонирам	subscribe	едновременен	simultaneous
ара́бски	Arab ( <i>adj.</i> )	ерге́н	bachelor
асансѳѳр	elevator	жа́лко	too bad, pity
Ба́ба Ма́рта	Granny March (har- binger of spring)	же́ня	marry off
билѳт	ticket	же́ня се	get married
бле́д	pale	жи́в	live, living, alive
вдя́сно	on the right	жи́в да го	it makes your heart bleed
вля́во	on the left	опла́чеш	to see him
врѳх, врѳхѳт	summit; tip	за	to ( <i>in a toast</i> )
( <i>pl.</i> врѳховѳ)		за какѳѳ стѳва	what's the matter, what's
врѳщам се /	return, go back	ду́ма	it about
вѳрна се		за мно́го годи́ни	many happy returns
вѳлше́бник	magician, wizard	за да	in order to ( <i>conjunction</i>
вѳн	out	за да не стѳва	<i>of purpose</i> )
вѳобще́	in general	тече́ние	so there won't be a draft
вѳпрѳс	question	заба́вен	amusing, fun
вѳтре	in, inside	закра́тко	for a short while
го́ре	up	заку́свам / заку́ся	eat breakfast
го́ре-до́лу	more or less	занима́вам	interest, occupy
горѳщ	hot	занимавам се с	be occupied with
горя́	burn	заслужа́вам /	deserve, be worth
да сте жи́ви и	here's to your life	заслу́жа (-иш)	
здра́ви	and health	затру́пвам /	cover up, bury under;
да́же	even	затру́пам	pile up
дали́	whether, if; ( <i>question</i>	затру́пвам с	burden with questions
дали́ има́ смѳсъл?	<i>particle</i> )	вѳпрѳси	
	does it make any	зи́мен	winter ( <i>adj.</i> )
	sense?	зи́мен куро́рт	ski resort
		зимѳрничав	sensitive to the cold
дво́р	yard	и то	at that
де́сен, дя́сна	right	игра́я на дво́ра	play in the yard
до́лу	down	игра́я си	play around
добре́ дошла́	welcome ( <i>to female</i> )	из	around, throughout
добре́ дошли́!	welcome ( <i>to a group</i>	из кѳщи	around the house
	<i>or a formal</i>		( <i>fixed phrase</i> )
	<i>acquaintance</i> )	изпя́вам / изпе́я	sing [to the end]
добре́ дошѳл	welcome ( <i>to male</i> )	има́ смѳсъл	it makes sense
добро́то ста́ро вре́ме	the good old days	интересу́вам се от	be interested in
дошѳл	come		
дѳрво́ ( <i>pl.</i> дѳрва́)	wood	ка́к така́	how is it that, how can
дѳржа́ (-иш)	hold, keep	ка́ня се	that be
дя́сна <i>see</i> де́сен		ка́рам се	plan, intend
		ка̀то ма́лък	scold, quarrel
еди́нствен, -ена	single, only		when he was little

Единайсети урок / Lesson 11

качвам се по стълбите	climb the stairs	о́ня	that ( <i>variant of о́нзи</i> )
кли́мат	climate	опа́шка	tail; line, queue
кога́то	when ( <i>conjunction</i> )	опа́квам /	mourn, lament
коко́шка	hen, fowl	опа́ча (-еш)	
коме́дия	comedy	опа́квам се /	complain, grumble
куро́рт	resort	опа́ча се (-еш)	
ля́я	bark	отв́н	from outside
ля́в ( <i>pl. ле́ви</i> )	left, Left	отго́ре	from above
мече́	bear cub	отдо́лу	from below
Ме́чо Пу́х	Winnie the Pooh	отдя́сно	from the right
миризма́	smell, scent	отля́во	from the left
ми́шка	mouse	отопле́ние	heating
мо́же	it's possible	отско́ро	(since) quite recently
		очи́ла ( <i>pl. only</i> )	eyeglasses
		пара́	coin
		па́рен	steam ( <i>adj.</i> )
		па́ри	money
		па́рно отопле́ние	central heating
		пе́я	sing
		пла́ша се (-иш)	be frightened, fear
		по́вечето	the majority
		погри́жвам се /	take care of, look after
		погри́жа се (-иш)	
		пода́вам / пода́м	hand, pass, reach
		(-даде́ш)	
		поприка́звам	have a chat
		попя́вам / попя́я	sing a little
		поразхо́ждам	take for a brief stroll
		посеща́вам /	visit
		посе́тя	
		постя́гам / постя́гна	tighten, fasten; prepare,
			fix up
		почи́там, почета́	read for a bit
		пресе́чка	intersection
		привя́рзан	tied, bound, attached
		проме́ням /	change
		проме́ня	
		пропа́ст, -та́	abyss, cavern
		пъ́к	but, yet, and, while
		пъте́ка	(foot)path
		пътеше́ствие	trip
		ра́бота	job; matter
		рабо́тя	work, be in operation
		разва́лен	spoiled, rotten
		разхо́дка из града́	city tour
		реша́вам /	decide
		реша́ (-иш)	
		ро́ден	one's own, native
		ро́дно мя́сто	birthplace
		сала́м	sausage
на́вик	habit		
навъ́н	outside ( <i>directional</i> )		
навъ́тре	inside ( <i>directional</i> )		
наго́ре	up ( <i>directional</i> )		
надо́лу	down ( <i>directional</i> )		
надя́сно	to the right		
наздра́ве	cheers, to your health!		
накъ́де	to where		
наля́во	to the left		
нахра́нвам / нахра́ня	feed		
не рабо́ти	it's out of order		
несравни́м	incomparable		
нестина́р	fire-dancer		
нестина́рство	fire-dancing, fire-walking		
нече́тен	odd-numbered		
новогоди́шен	New Year's		
новогоди́шна	New Year's greeting		
чести́тка			
но́с, -ът ( <i>pl. носове́</i> )	nose		
ня́ма ни́що стра́шно	there's nothing to be afraid of		
оба́ждам се по телефо́на	call on the phone		
огледа́ло	mirror		
оже́нвам / оже́ня	marry		
оже́нвам се / оже́ня се	get married		
оме́квам / оме́кна	soften, grow milder		
она́я	that ( <i>variant of она́зи</i> )		
они́я	those ( <i>variant of онéзи</i> )		
ону́й	that ( <i>variant of онова́</i> )		



Единайсети урок / Lesson 11

самолёт	airplane	тоя	this (variant of този)
свѣтбен, -ена	wedding (adj.)	туй	this (variant of това)
свѣтбено	honeymoon	тъй	thus (variant of така)
пѣтешѣствие			
сѣбе си	oneself (reflexive object form)	убеждавам / убедя	persuade (see L. 14)
семѣйство	family	удобен	convenient/comfortable
сѣщам се / сѣтя се	recall, come to mind, think of, remember	умирам / умра	die
смисъл	sense, meaning	умирам от смях	die laughing
смях, смехът	laughter	хайде да се	let's have a toast
(pl. смехове)		чукнем	
снѣжен	snow (adj.)	чакам на опашка	wait in/on line
снѣжен човек	snowman	черен	black
спирам / спра	stop	честит празник	happy holiday
стоя	stay in one place	честит рожден ден	happy birthday
стриякам / стрѣсна	startle, scare	честито	congratulations!
стриякам се /	be startled, take fright	четвърт, -та	quarter
стрѣсна се		четен	even-numbered
стѣлба	step, ladder	чукам / чука	knock, clink
суров	severe	чукам на дърво	knock on wood
счупен, -ена	broken	чукам се /	clink glasses, toast
събуждам / събужда	wake	чука се	
събуждам се /	wake up, awaken		
събужда се		шампанско	champagne
такъв (такава,	such	ще свърши работа	that'll do the job
такова, такива)		щом	as soon as, since, as,
такива неща	such things		if, once
тая	this (variant of тази)	явен	open, obvious
твърд	hard, firm, steadfast	явно	clearly
твърдо решавам	firmly resolve	ягода	strawberry
тия	these (variant of тези)	яйце (pl. яйца)	egg
то	then (particle)	ясен	clear
торба	bag, sack	ясно ми е	I get it, it's clear



## **CULTURAL COMMENTARY**

### **Families: relationship patterns; residences**

The parent-child relationship in Bulgaria is a very close one. It is nearly unthinkable, for instance, that a mother will not be present at her son's wedding: only the most drastic of unforeseeable circumstances would prevent her attendance.

The grandparent-grandchild relationship is also very close. It is not uncommon for children to spend very long periods of time at the home of the grandparents. Sometimes this is from necessity, as the parents both must work and cannot look after their children properly. It is also, however, traditional to keep the tie between the generations alive in this way.

As a rule, there is a large difference between city residences and country ones. Those in the city are small, cramped, and often in large apartment buildings with no open space for children to play. Those in the country are frequently large and roomy, but they lack central heating (and sometimes even indoor plumbing).

### **Literature: children's books**

Many favorite children's books from other languages have been translated into Bulgarian, among them A. A. Milne's *Winnie the Pooh* (Мечо Пух) and L. F. Baum's *The Wizard of Oz* (Вълшебникът от Оз). There are also many fine children's books written in Bulgarian, one of which is *Jan Bibian on the Moon* (Ян Бибиан на луната), by the well-known author Elin Pelin (Елин Пелин, 1878-1949).

### **Geography: seaside and mountain resorts**

The Black Sea coast is a favorite vacation spot. There are many fine beaches, resorts and small tourist spots. Bulgarians speak of it simply as морето ("the sea"). The other favorite vacation spot is the mountains; there are numerous resorts. One of the best known (for both summer and winter sports) is Borovets (Боровец), in the northern Rila mountains. Another is Pamporovo (Пампорово) in the Rhodopes. Being within the city limits of Sofia, Vitosha mountain is not considered a resort. Nevertheless it has ski lifts and tourist hotels, which are frequently visited. The hotel at Kopitoto (Копитото) has a good restaurant and a fine view of the city. Hiking to the top of Vitosha, at Cherni vrăkh (Черни връх) is a favorite activity.

### **Geography: Strandzha**

The far southeastern corner of Bulgaria is called Strandzha (Странджа). One of the archaic folk customs formerly practiced there is that of "nestinarstvo" (нестинярство) or fire-walking. The fire-walkers (нестиняри) would be moved to state of ecstasy which would allow them to dance barefoot on live coals without getting burned. The custom is now recreated for tourists with a simulation of live coals.

### **Customs and beliefs: Baba Marta; Torbalan**

"Granny March" (Баба Марта) is the personification of the month of March; spring is said to begin on the first day of March. (For the custom of "martenitsi", see Lesson 13.)

Torbalan (Торбалан) is a mythical character in Bulgarian children's folklore. He carries a large sack (торбá), and is said to scoop up naughty children into his sack and carry them off.

## LESSON 12

### **DIALOGUE**

#### Защо габровците режат опашките на кóтките?

Веселин: Кóлко е часът? Кóлко óще има до Гóрна Оряховица?

Дейвид: Там ли ще слизате?

Веселин: Да. Там трябва да се прехвърля на друг влак, на влака за Гáброво.

Дейвид: Кажете ни нещо за фестивала. Какво става там?

Веселин: Мнóго е интересно и забавно. Гáбровци разправят мнóго вицове.  
Ще ви разкажа едн. Защо габровците режат опашките на кóтките?

Джули: Защо?

Веселин: За да не изстива стаята, като влизат и излизат през зимата.

Дейвид: Но това е ужасно!

Веселин: Защо?

Дейвид: Нали животните имат права! Няма ли при вас общество за защита на правата на животните? Трябва да има, на всяка цена!

Веселин: Това е виц. Знаете ли какво е виц?

Дейвид: Не ми харесват такива вицове.

Надка: Мамо, заболя ме гърлото!

Милена: Като седиш на течение, така е!

Таня: Камене, тебе боли ли те гърлото?

Камен: Нe, само момичетата ги боли.

Таня: Кажй ми, найстина ли ти е добре?

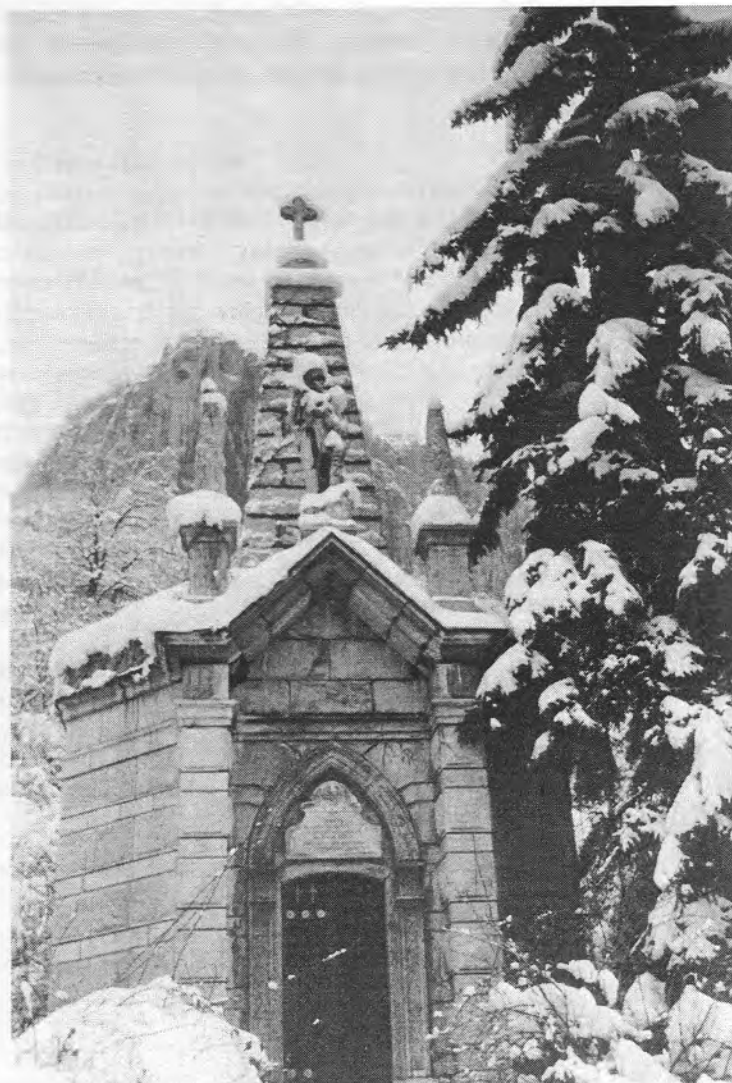
Камен: Добре ми е мамо, честна дума.

Дейвид: Кажете ми още нещо за фестивала. Какво правите? Само вицове ли си разправяте?

Веселин: Не знам точно, те всяка година измислят нещо ново. Миналата година организираха карнавално шествие. Вчера във Варна случайно срещнах един приятел от Габрово. Много се зарадвах да го видя. Само че той беше много зает. Поговорихме си с него за фестивала на крак, като вървахме по улицата. Чух от него, че сега подготвят големи изненади. Затова отивам да видя със собствените си очи. Защо не дойдете с мен? Самите ще видите. Сигурен съм, че много ще харесате фестивала.

Дейвид: Какво мислиш, Джули? Да отидем ли?

Джули: Може.



Monument to the April Uprising, Dryanovo Monastery  
near Veliko Tarnovo

## BASIC GRAMMAR

### 12.1. Aorist tense, conclusion

There is a small group of verbs whose aorist is irregular. The aorist theme vowel -a- is added to a stem which has lost its internal vowel. This group includes *берá* and all its prefixed forms, as well as *перá*, *дерá* and their prefixed forms. Below are the present and aorist tense forms of *перá* and *разберá*.

	PRESENT	AORIST	PRESENT	AORIST
1 <sup>st</sup> singular	пер-á	пр-áх	разбер-á	разбр-áх
2 <sup>nd</sup> singular	пер-эш	пр-á	разбер-эш	разбр-á
3 <sup>rd</sup> singular	пер-é	пр-á	разбер-é	разбр-á
1 <sup>st</sup> plural	пер-ém	пр-áхме	разбер-ém	разбр-áхме
2 <sup>nd</sup> plural	пер-ете	пр-áхте	разбер-ете	разбр-áхте
3 <sup>rd</sup> plural	пер-át	пр-áха	разбер-át	разбр-áха

### 12.2. Usage of the aorist tense

The Bulgarian aorist tense is used to convey the simplest, most straightforward of past tense meanings: the fact that an action happened. It is formed freely from verbs of both aspects. The crucial factor in determining which aspect to use is the meaning desired, and the degree of boundedness associated with that meaning. Consider the following narration, in which the aorist verb forms are underlined:

- |   |   |
|---|---|
| -- Тí каквó <u>пράви</u> вчэра?   | “What did you do yesterday?”  |
| -- <u>Учих</u> чéтири чáса,<br>а пóсле <u>пíх</u> кафé.<br><u>Изпíх</u> трí кафéта. | “I studied for four hours,<br>and then had [some] coffee.<br>I drank three cups of coffee.” |
| -- <u>Научи</u> ли нéщо<br>за тéзи чéтири чáса?                                     | “Did you learn something/anything<br>in those four hours?”                                  |
| -- <u>Научих</u> правилáта<br>на пýтното движéние.                                  | “I learned the rules of the road.”  |

Each of these above verbs relates what the speaker “did”. Some of what she did was more bounded in meaning, and for these actions perfective verbs (“learn”, “drink [up a certain amount]”) were used. When no boundedness was implied, imperfective verbs (“do”, “study”, “drink”) were used.

English can only sometimes render this distinction formally, such as through the opposition between “study” and “learn”. More frequently, the English distinction must be understood from the context. Bulgarians, however (as well as students

learning to speak and write Bulgarian) must always make a conscious choice between a bounded (perfective) or an unbounded (imperfective) verb form.

### 12.3. Impersonal verbs

Bulgarian has four verb forms called “impersonal”, which express the meanings of existence, non-existence, possibility and necessity. Two have been learned already and two will be learned in this lesson. Each impersonal verb is formally equivalent to the 3sg. form of a fully conjugated verb. The two sets are:

<i>conjugated verb</i>	<i>meaning</i>	<i>impersonal verb</i>	<i>meaning</i>
Имам	have	Има	there is/are
Нямам	not have	Няма	there isn't/aren't
Мога	can, be able	Може	maybe, OK
Трябвам	be necessary to	Трябва	must, have to

Of the conjugated verbs, only **трябвам** is new to the student. The subject of this verb (and of the sentence) is the person or thing needed, and the one who needs it is expressed as the indirect object. Here are examples:

О, Милéна! Тóчно тi ми трябваш!	Oh, Milena! You're just whom I need! [= Exactly you are necessary to me.]
Трябват им цвётни мóливи.	They need colored pencils. [= Colored pencils are necessary to them.]
Трябва им един добър рéчник.	They need a good dictionary. [= A good dictionary is necessary to them.]

The unchanging form **трябва** (equivalent to the 3sg. form of **трябвам**) is much more commonly encountered. In its meaning as an impersonal form, it either stands alone or is followed by a *да*-phrase. Although impersonal **трябва** does not have a grammatical subject, the *да*-phrase does, and this subject may or may not be expressed. A literal translation of **трябва** would be “it is necessary that...”, but the more normal translation is “have to”, “must”, “need to”. Here are examples:

Тóй трябва да учи. Трябва да учи.	He's got to study.
Аз трябва да работя довéчера. Трябва да работя довéчера.	I have to work tonight.
Ние трябва да слéзем тóка. Трябва да слéзем тóка.	We need to get off here.



## Дванайсети урок / Lesson 12

As in experiencer constructions, the doubled object can also be used, and *must* be used, when the experiencer of the body-part pain is expressed as a noun. Since the experiencer of the pain is grammatically a direct object, masculine nouns must have the definite object ending.

Мéне ме боли́ главáта.	I have a headache.
Нéя я боли́ят зéбите.	Her teeth hurt.
Кали́на я боли́ ухóто.	Kalina has an earache.
Йво го боли́ гéрлото.	Ivo has a sore throat.
Студéнта го боли́ кракéт.	The student's leg hurts.

When the ailment is of a single type but concerns a number of experiencers, the verb can be either singular or plural. The plural form of the noun/pronoun object is sufficient to indicate the multiplicity of sufferers.

-- Ка́мене, тебе боли́ ли те гéрлото?	"Kamen, do you have a sore throat?"
-- Не, са́мо момичетата ги боли́.	"No, only girls have sore throats."

The aorist of боли́ is боля́ (on the model of the verb **вървя́**, aorist **вървях**). The meaning is that something hurt at some point in the past but no longer does now. With the prefix *за-*, the meaning is "begin to hurt." For example:

Вчéра ме боля́ главáта.	I had a headache yesterday.
Ми́налата сéдмица Ли́ляна я боли́ха очите.	Lilyana's eyes hurt last week.
Заболя́ха ги главите́ от миризмáта.	They got headaches from the smell.

### 12.5. Verbs of "liking"

To express the idea of "like" or "love" in general, Bulgarians use the verb **обичам**. It is used with infinitive replacements (*да*-phrases) and with certain nouns.

На́дка обича да рису́ва.	Nadka likes to draw.
Деца́та мно́го обичат да ходят на цирк.	The children love going to the circus.
Обичаш ли класи́ческа му́зика?	Do you like classical music?
Обичам те.	I love you.
Обичам те мно́го.	I like you a lot.



By contrast, positive reactions to a particular thing or event, or particular single instances of "liking", are expressed with the verb **харэсвам** (perfective **харэсам**).

Тї кой пэсни нэй-мнóго харэсваш?	Which songs do you like the best?
Харэса ли фїлма?	Did you like the film?
Мнóго си хубава -- сїгурно ще те харэса.	You're lovely -- of course she'll like you.

Peculiar to this verb is the ability to alternate transitive with intransitive usage. The above examples illustrate the transitive use: direct objects are clearly present. In the intransitive usage of this verb, the subject (the one who does the liking) is transformed into an indirect object experiencer (the one to whom something is pleasing).

Тáзи пэсен ми харэса.	That's a nice song -- I like it.
Харэса ли ти мóята рóкля?	Do you like this dress on me?
-- Мнóго ни харэса фїлмът.	"We liked the film a lot."
-- А на мéне не мї харэса.	"Not me -- I didn't like it."

In most cases, it is difficult to render into English the difference between transitive and intransitive **харэсвам** without a larger context. In general, however, the focus of the intransitive usage is less upon the "action" of liking (or not liking) and more upon the object which produces this reaction. Both uses of the verb mean "like [something]"; indeed Bulgarians use the two forms of this verb largely interchangeably.

### 12.6. Embedded questions, continued; the use of дали

Embedded questions, studied in Lesson 4, are questions which are integrated into another sentence, usually as the object of a verb. In terms of word order, it is important to remember that they reproduce the order of the original question exactly.

*original question*

Ще бѣдеш ли тáм?

Will you be there?

*embedded question*

Пїтай го

ще бѣде ли тáм.

Ask him if he will be there.

Speakers of English must take care not to translate "if" in sentences such as the above by Bulgarian **ако**. A rule of thumb is: if one can substitute "whether" for "if" in the English, then one must use **ли** (and not **ако**) in the Bulgarian.

Embedded questions of this sort may also be formulated with the conjunction **дали**. In this case, the interrogative particle **ли** is dropped, and the conjunction stands at the beginning of the embedded sentence. Note the similarity between the word order of English “if/whether” sentences and Bulgarian **дали** sentences:

Питај го	дали	ще бѝде там.
Ask him	if/whether	he will be there.

### 12.7. The pronoun **сам**

The emphatic pronoun **сам** has two different meanings. One is equivalent to English “by/for oneself” and the other is equivalent to English “alone”. There is a certain overlap between the two meanings, as in English, where the phrase “by oneself”, can refer either to the state of being unaccompanied, or to self-initiated action.

Here are the forms, followed by examples of usage:

<i>masculine</i>	<i>feminine</i>	<i>neuter</i>	<i>plural</i>
------------------	-----------------	---------------	---------------

<b>сам</b>	<b>самá</b>	<b>самó</b>	<b>самѝ</b>
------------	-------------	-------------	-------------

Елате с мѝн! Самѝ ще видите.	Come with me! You’ll see for yourselves.
Тѝ самá ли пътуваш? Хáйде да сѝднем заедно.	Are you traveling alone? Let’s sit together.

One must be careful to distinguish the adverb **самó** “only” from the neuter pronominal adjective **самó** (in either of the above two meanings). For example:

**самó** “only”

Самó едното дете рисува; другите гледат телевизия.	Only the one child is drawing; the others are watching TV.
---	---

**самó** “alone, by oneself”

Детето седи самó в стаята и рисува.	The child is sitting alone in his room and drawing.
--	--

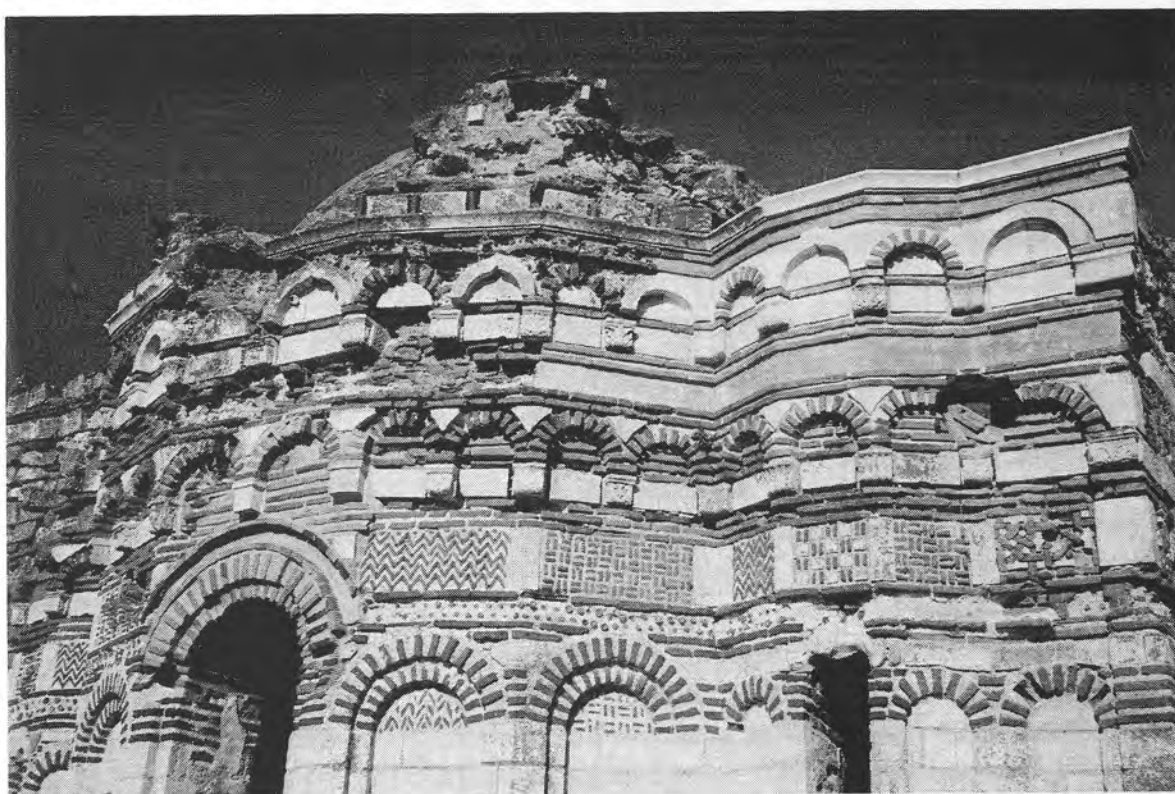
Детето направи тази рисунка самó, без моя помощ.	The child did the drawing all by himself, without [any] help from me.
---	---

**12.8. Names of body parts**

Names of many body parts which come in pairs, including those for hands, feet, eyes, and ears, have irregular plurals. The singular and plural forms in Bulgarian are:

<i>sg. indef.</i>	<i>sg. def.</i>	<i>pl. indef.</i>	<i>pl. def.</i>	<i>(meaning)</i>
ръка́	ръка́та	ръце́	ръце́те	hand, arm
крак	кракът	крака́	крака́та	foot, leg
око́	око́то	очи́	очи́те	eye
ухó	ухóто	уши́	уши́те	ear

The nouns *око́* and *ухó* are neuter, but they have the plural ending *-и*.



Church in Nesebăr, detail

## EXERCISES

I. Fill in the blanks with the proper form of *харесвам* or *обичам*.

1. Джу́ли \_\_\_\_\_ ма́лките деца́ и живо́тните.
2. \_\_\_\_\_ ли ви та́зи ста́я?
3. На́дка \_\_\_\_\_ да ѝ четáт при́казки.
4. Каквó \_\_\_\_\_ по́вече: шокола́д или сладолéд?
5. Ни́е не \_\_\_\_\_ таки́ва къ́си причéски.
6. То́й \_\_\_\_\_ приро́дата и затова́ хо́ди чéсто на екску́рзии.
7. Все́ки живее́, ка́кто му \_\_\_\_\_.

II. Fill in the blanks with one of the following: *може, има, няма, трябва*; or with a conjugated form of *мога, имам, нямам, or трябвам*.

1. \_\_\_\_\_ да е голя́ма хубави́ца, но не е мно́го любéзна.
2. Извинéте, сегá не \_\_\_\_\_ да ви покáня, мно́го бързам.
3. Не говори́, кога́то \_\_\_\_\_ каквó да ка́жеш.
4. Деца́та \_\_\_\_\_ да слúшат ма́йка си и баща́ си.
5. Ако \_\_\_\_\_ пари́, \_\_\_\_\_ да ви даде́м наза́ем.
6. В университетската библиотéка \_\_\_\_\_ мно́го кни́ги за Бългáрия.
7. Те не \_\_\_\_\_ да рабо́тят, кога́то \_\_\_\_\_ гóсти.

III. Fill in the blanks with an appropriate form of the verb *боли́* (choose between *боли́, болят, боля́, боля́ха, заболя́, заболя́ха*).

1. Ако те \_\_\_\_\_ зъ́бите, иди́ на зъ́боле́кар.
2. Ка́мен е добре́, ве́че ни́що не го́ \_\_\_\_\_.
3. След вече́ря Милéна я \_\_\_\_\_ глава́та.
4. Ако ви \_\_\_\_\_ крака́та, седне́те да си почи́нете.
5. То́лькова се умори́ха, че все́чки ги \_\_\_\_\_ очите́.
6. \_\_\_\_\_ ни устите́ да повта́ряме, че това́ е грéшка.
7. Ми́налия ме́сец тях па́к ги \_\_\_\_\_ стома́х.

## ADDITIONAL GRAMMAR NOTES

### 12.1a. Relationship between aorist and present tense forms

Mastery of the Bulgarian verb system comes from an understanding not only of its different forms, but also of their interrelationships. In every dictionary (and in the glossary lists in this book) verbs appear in their present tense forms. One is therefore inclined to think that the present tense *is* the verb, and that everything else is derived from it.

In actuality, the verb is a complex of many forms, and is based upon the relationship between the present and the aorist tenses. Some verb forms are derived from the present tense, and others are derived from the aorist tense. Neither the present nor the aorist is primary, and both are essential.

To truly know a verb, therefore, one must know

- (a) its present tense form;
- (b) its aorist tense form;
- (c) the relationship that obtains between them.

The chart which follows is intended to guide the student internalize this knowledge in the most economic fashion.

Nearly every verb in Bulgarian belong to one of nine basic types. Conjugating a newly learned verb, therefore, is simply a matter of learning which type it belongs to. In the chart, these types are exemplified wherever possible by non-prefixed verbs. This is to underscore the fact that although adding a prefix changes the *meaning* of a verb, it does not alter its *form*. For instance, once the student learns all the forms for *берá*, s/he then knows all the forms for *разберá*, *приберá*, and any other verb composed of "prefix + берá".

The organizing principle of the chart is the theme vowel, and the characteristic sign of a type is the combination of present and aorist theme vowels. The verb forms given as examples are 1<sup>st</sup> plural. For clarity, forms are divided as follows:

<i>root</i>	<i>theme vowel</i>	<i>ending</i>
ХОД	- И -	- ХМЕ

The following conventions are used:

The theme vowel [-a-] denotes a general category which includes both -а- and -я-.  
 The notation [-C-] denotes a category which includes the consonants -с- and -з-.  
 The notation [-C'-] denotes a category which includes the consonants -ш- and -ж-.

RELATIONSHIP BETWEEN PRESENT AND AORIST TENSE FORMS

	<i>tense</i>	<i>theme vowel</i>	<i>examples</i>		
1.	<i>Present</i> <i>Aorist</i>	-а- -а-	глед-а-ме глед-а-хме	иск-а-ме иск-а-хме	вечер-я-ме вечер-я-хме
2.	<i>Present</i> <i>Aorist</i>	-и- -и-	ход-и-м ход-и-хме	бро-и-м бро-и-хме	уч-и-м уч-и-хме
3.	<i>Present</i> <i>Aorist</i>	-и- -а-	върв-и-м върв-я-хме	мълч-и-м мълч-а-хме	сто-и-м сто-я-хме
4.	<i>Present</i> <i>Aorist</i>	-е- ---	пи-е-м пи -- хме	взём-е-м взе -- хме	копа-е-м копа -- хме
5.	<i>Present</i> <i>Aorist</i>	-е- -о-	чет-е-м чет-о-хме	сеч-е-м сяк-о-хме	влёз-е-м вляз-о-хме
6.	<i>Present</i> <i>Aorist</i>	-е- -а-	срещн-е-м срещн-а-хме	върн-е-м върн-а-хме	стан-е-м стан-а-хме
7.	<i>Present</i> <i>Aorist</i>	-е -е -- -а	живе-е-м жив--я-хме	изпе-е-м изп--я-хме	закъсне-е-м закъсн--я-хме
8.	<i>Present</i> <i>Aorist</i>	-С' -е- -С -а-	пиш-е-м пис -а-хме	каж-е-м каз -а-хме	
9.	<i>Present</i> <i>Aorist</i>	-ер -е- -р -а-	пер-е-м пр -а-хме	бер-е-м бр -а-хме	

There are six different combinations of present and aorist theme vowels: these are represented by types 1 through 6 in the above chart. Types 7 through 9 have the same present/aorist theme vowel relationship as type 6. Each of these latter three types also has a change in the shape of the stem.

Type 8 is characterized by consonant shifts [с > ш] and [з > ж]. The observant student will note that this is the same consonant shift seen in imperfective derivation. Compare the forms below, all 1<sup>st</sup> singular.

<i>Consonant</i>			<i>Verb form</i>
с or з	(пре)писах преписываю	(раз)казах разказываю	Aorist Derived imperfective
ш or ж	препишу пишу	разкажу кажу	Prefixed perfective Simplex imperfective

Within type 4, the verb *взѐма* also has a stem change which, once learned, is predictable: the stem-final consonant -м disappears in the aorist. *Приѐма*, *поѐма* and *заѐма* are all conjugated in the same manner.

The accent is usually the same in both present and aorist of any one verb. There is an optional accent shift in the unprefixated aorist of types 1, 2, 6 and 8. Only in verbs of type 5, however, is there an obligatory accent shift. Practically all these verbs have end stress in the present and stem stress in the aorist. Only one verb exhibits the reverse shift, and several verbs do not shift stress at all. The student should learn the latter verbs as exceptions. Examples below are 1<sup>st</sup> plural forms.

<i>Tense</i>	<i>Present</i>	<i>Aorist</i>
<b>Accent</b>		
<i>Regular shift</i>	четѐм	чѐтохме
<i>Exceptional shift</i>	до́йдем	дойдóхме
<i>Lack of shift</i>	отѝдем влѐзем etc.	отѝдохме вля́зохме

All verbs in type 3 are end stressed in both present and aorist; the only exception is *вѝдя* (with stem stress in the present). Verbs of the *и*-conjugation which are end-stressed are thus more likely to belong to type 3 than to type 2.

As seen in the chart on the preceding page, the primary basis for the nine-type classification is conjugation form. However, there are certain correlations between stem type and meaning. Type 7 verbs, for instance, are all derived from adjectives and signify that one is in (or coming into) the state described by that adjective. Furthermore, type 2 verbs are practically all transitive (with a few exceptions like *хóдя*), and type 3 verbs are practically all intransitive (again, with a few exceptions like *вѝдя*). This latter difference can aid the student in remembering which of the verbs with present tense in -и- forms its aorist in -и- (type 2), and which forms its aorist in -а- (type 3).

**12.2a. Aspect in the aorist tense**

The Bulgarian aorist tense is formed freely from both aspects of the verbs. The name of this tense in Bulgarian can be misleading, therefore, for it suggests that the aorist tense and the perfective aspect are related. Here are the terms:

Aspect		свѣршен <i>Perfective</i>	несвѣршен <i>Imperfective</i>
Tense	минало	свѣршено <i>Aorist</i>	

The crux of the terminological confusion rests in the word **свѣршен**, which literally means “completed”. There is indeed a certain overlap between the aorist tense (whose literal name is “past completed tense”) and the perfective aspect (whose literal name is “completed aspect”), in that the meaning of each does indicate a certain degree of completedness.

This overlap will be discussed in more detail in Lesson 14. Here it is important to note that the choice of aorist tense does *not* predetermine the choice of perfective aspect. The meaning of the aorist is concerned with the *fact* of past action, and not its potential boundedness. The boundedness is signalled by the choice of perfective aspect, and rests within the verb itself.

**12.3a. Impersonal verbs**

Although impersonal verbs are often used with *да*-clauses (especially **трябва**), they also occur frequently alone. Used in this way, **има** and **няма** express the idea of existence/availability or its absence; and **може** and **трябва** express the idea of possibility or necessity. Numerous different translations are possible. For example:

-- Има ли захар?	“Is there [any] sugar?”
-- Има, заповядайте.	“Yes, here [it is].”
Има време.	There’s [plenty of] time.
Съжалявам, ама тука няма нищо.	I’m sorry, but there’s nothing here.
Няма такóва не́що.	There’s no such thing.
Искам да те пита́м не́що, мо́же ли?	I want to ask you something, is that OK?
-- Да оти́дем ли?	“Should we go?”
-- Мо́же.	“We could.”
Зна́м, че не ис́каш, ама́ тря́бва.	I know you don’t want [to], but you have to.



**12.4a. "Third-person" verbs and word order**

**Definiteness in body-ache constructions**

In body-ache sentences (with the verb боли́), the affected body-part acts as the subject. When the ailment is a common one and the experiencer is singular, the noun naming the body-part is either definite or indefinite, with little or no difference in meaning. For instance:

Боли́ ме глава́.	I have a headache.
Боли́ ме глава́та.	(same)

In the case of multiple experiencers, however, the presence or absence of the article is determined by the number of the verb. A singular verb indicates a generalized view (hence indefinite), while a plural verb demands more specificity (hence definite).

Заболя́ ги глава́ от миризма́та.	They got headaches from the smell.
Заболя́ха ги глава́ите от миризма́та.	(same)

**Word order in body-ache constructions**

The verb боли́ occurs either with a single short-form pronoun object or with a doubled object; there is little difference in meaning. When the sufferer is named by a noun, the doubled object is obligatory. When doubled objects are used, the noun (or long form pronoun object) must begin the sentence. The short form object obeys its normal word order rules. Here are examples (numbered cumulatively across lessons):

- (58) На́дка вина́ги я боли́ гърлото.  
*direct obj.*                      *DIR verb subject*  
 Nadka's always got a sore throat.
- (59) Ме́не не ме боли́ глава́та.  
*direct obj.*                      *Neg. DIR verb subject*  
 I don't have a headache.
- (60) Ъ́ван боли́ ли го стома́хът?  
*direct obj.*                      *verb INT DIR subject*  
 Does Ivan have a stomachache?

**Other similar constructions**

Another common 3<sup>rd</sup> person verb is вали́, which refers to precipitation. Its subject is rain, snow, hail or the like. When no subject is used, rain is assumed as the default case. In the singular, the verb is normally used alone, although it can have a subject. In the plural, however, it must have an explicitly stated subject.

*present tense*

-- Вали ли?  
-- Вече не вали.

"Is it raining?"  
"Not any more."

Вали като из ведрó.  
Валят силни дъждовé.

It's pouring buckets.  
We're having a lot of rain.

*aorist tense*

Вчера валя́ цял дeн.  
Преди 5 минути заваля́.

It rained all day yesterday.  
It started to rain five minutes ago.

Вчера валя́ много сняг -- децáта  
много се радваха.

It snowed a lot yesterday -- the  
children were delighted.

През зимата валя́ха много  
снеговé.

There were many snowstorms last  
winter.

There are also a few verbs which occur almost exclusively in the 3<sup>rd</sup> person form. But as they are listed in dictionaries in the 1<sup>st</sup> person form, they do not technically belong to this group. These include *тресá* "shake, shiver" and *сърбá* "itch". The person who feels the shivers or the itches is expressed, as in the case of *боли́*, in the direct object form. For example:

Сърби́ го лявата ръка́.  
Тресé ме.  
Хем боли́, хем сърби́.

His left hand itches.  
I've got the shivers.  
You can't have it both ways.  
[literally: First it hurts, then it  
itches.]

In the same way as body afflictions are expressed by 3<sup>rd</sup> person verbs, certain emotional states are expressed by nouns. The similarity between the two constructions is that in each case the person affected is expressed by a direct object pronoun. Emotional states commonly described in this way are *сра́м* "shame", *я́д* "anger", *стра́х* "fear", *гну́с* "loathing". For example:

Ужа́сно я е стра́х от ми́шки.  
Я́д ме е на не́я.  
Ме́н ме е гну́с от те́бе.

She's terrified of mice.  
I'm angry at her.  
You nauseate me.

Сра́м ме е.  
Не те́ е сра́м!  
Ка́к не те́ е сра́м!

I'm ashamed. [also: I'm shy.]  
Shame on you! [also: For shame!]  
You ought to be ashamed of yourself.

## 12.8a. Names of body parts

Here is a list of body-part names, given for ease of reference in alphabetical order according to the English term. Correspondences in meaning are relatively close, although there is some potential confusion in the terms for limbs. The words *ръка* and *крак* apply both to the entire upper and lower limbs, respectively, and to their extremities (hand or foot, respectively). Context will usually determine which is meant; if necessary, terms such as “palm [of the hand]” or “sole [of the foot]” are used. Similarly, *пръст* and *ногът* refer to the digits and their nails on both hands and feet, and *палец* can mean either “thumb” or “big toe”, depending on the context.

## NAMES OF BODY PARTS (alphabetical by English term)

корем	abdomen	петá	heel
глéзен	ankle	червó	intestine
грѣб	back	коляно	knee
брада	beard, chin	крак	leg, foot *
задник	behind, rear end	уста	lip
крѣв	blood	чéрен дрóб	liver
кóст	bone	(бял) дрóб	lung
кóкал	bone	уста	mouth
мóзък	brain	мýскул	muscle
гърда	breast	ногът	nail
буза	cheek	шия	neck
грѣд <i>or</i> гърди	chest	врат	neck
брадичка	chin	нос	nose
ухо	ear	небцé	palate
лакът	elbow	длан	palm
око	eye	рамо	shoulder
вѣжда	eyebrow	кóжа	skin
мигла	eyelash	стъпáло	sole
лицé	face	стóмах	stomach
прѣст	finger	бедрó	thigh
юмрук	fist	гърло	throat
чéло <i>or</i> челó	forehead	гуша	throat
косá	hair	пáлец	thumb, big toe
ръка	hand, arm	език	tongue
глава	head	сливица	tonsil
сърцé	heart	зѣб	tooth
		китка	wrist

\* ногá                      leg (*poetic, dialectal*)

## SAMPLE SENTENCES

1. Може да може, а може и да не може.
2. Тí може да íскаш, но каквá е ползата, щом не можеш.
3. Може ли да вляза в църквата с шапка на главата?
4. Влакът трябва да пристигне всеки момент.
5. Трябва да говоря с него, но не мога да го намеря.
6. Всеки момент може да завали.
7. Децата ги боли глава от много уроци.
8. Има ли някой да чака за доктор Петров?
9. Какво има?
10. Няма друг като него.
11. Тук боли ли?
12. Па́к заваля, а аз не си нося чадъра.
13. Заваля дъжд и ни измъкри до кости.
14. Вали град.
15. От болката му потекоха сълзи.
16. Тя чете доклад на конференцията.
17. Той си отиде и никога вече не го видяхме.
18. Писа, писа и нищо не написа.
19. Те живяха щастливо заедно.
20. Децата харесват тази приказка.
21. Синята шапка му хареса повече.
22. Вчѐра обрáхме черешата и сварихме сладко.
23. Тяня изпра всички дрехи на децата и ги простря.
24. Хайде да не го чакаме, той и сам ще ни намери.
25. Тí самá ли изплѐте този пуловер?
26. Питам го дали е гладен, но забравих да го попитам жаден ли е.
27. Не знам със захар ли пиете кафето.
28. Чудя се дали да си взема жилетката или да я оставя.

## SENTENCES FOR TRANSLATION

1. "Why does my head hurt so much? I wonder what I did?"  
"When did it start hurting? Is it the rain? I always get a headache if it starts raining. If it rains my head hurts, but not if it snows. Isn't that strange?"
2. We have to leave for the station immediately if we want to get there on time. Ask Marina if she wants to come with us. Does she still have a backache or is she better now?
3. All mothers love their children, even when they are ill. My sister, for instance, had an earache, a toothache and a stomachache all at the same time, and it was terrible for both her and my mother. But my mother never complained at all.
4. That was a great movie, I really liked it. Marin didn't like it, though. After the film he said, "That was a terrible film. I'm never going to the movies again." I couldn't understand him. But of course he'll go again. Movies are a necessity for him.
5. We might be able to come over tonight, if Nadka and Kamen are better. Both of them have toothaches. It's hard for them.
6. Do you like to watch soccer on TV? Or do you prefer to go to the stadium? Do you like to watch TV in general? Some people don't like TV at all. I don't like most of the programs, and I don't know if they will ever show better programs.
7. How many fingers do you see? Two or three? Now show me all your fingers.
8. How is your elbow? Is it still hurting? Both of my elbows hurt. But my hands are OK. That's good, because I need my hands.
9. Marina called me on the phone last night, she was in a terrible state. Her mother all of a sudden got a sharp pain in her stomach, and they were very frightened. Where was the doctor? They phoned, but they couldn't find him. Then, thank goodness, her brother came, and he took all of them to the hospital. Her mother is better now, although it still hurts.
10. "Do you need this book?"  
"Yes, I have to study this evening. Don't you have to study? How will you learn your lessons if you don't study? My father always calls to ask me if I am studying, and of course I always say yes."

## READING SELECTION

### Ўтре е сѣбота

Марин: Алó. Пламен мóже ли да се обáди, мóля.

Пламен: На телефóна.

Марин: Не можáх да ти познáя гласá. Вíж каквó, íскам да ти направя едно предложéние. Ўтре е сѣбота. Товá е дéн за културни развлечéния. Като културни хóра, и нíе трябва да отíдем нýкъде.

Пламен: Добрé. Вéче ми омрѣзна да глéдам телевизия вéчер. Каквó предлáгаш?

Марин: Ѐмаме голям íзбор: теáтър, кíно, óпера, каквó ли нé. Не знáм каквí са вкусове те ти.

Пламен: Самíят áз обíчам да хóдя на óпера. Освén товá звучí нáй-културно.

Марин: Óпера ли? Опомнí се. Живéем вѣв векá на тéхниката. Пýскаш си компáкт дíск и всé еднó си в зáлата. Пѣк и нáй-добрíте певцí са по чужбíна.

Пламен: В такѣв слýчай да отíдем на кíно. Знáеш ли програмата на кинáта?

Марин: Защó да я знáм. Срещу нáс дáват вíдеокасети под нáем. Мóже да глéдаш каквóто поискаш, дорí нáй-нóвите фíлми. Нíе íмаме ширóко разбíране за áвторското прáво.

Пламен: Мáй остава да отíдем на теáтър.

Марин: Помислí логíчно. Ако пíесата е интерéсна, нýма да íма билéти. Ако íма билéти, пíесата не é интерéсна. Пó-добрé е сáм да си четéш пíесите, нýма защó да ти ги четé режисьóр.

Пламен: Знáчи избíраме между вíдеокасета, компáкт дíск и сбóрник с пíеси. А сѣщо и телевизия.

Марин: Не сѣвсém. Почтí забрáвих. Ўтре íма мáч. Игрáят “Лéвски” и “ЦСКА”. Товá са нáй-популярните отбóри.

Пламен: Не мóже ли да го глéдаме по телевизията? Ще мóжем да глéдаме повторéния.

Марин: Защо ти е повторение? Ако някой изпусне гол, той няма да го вкара на повторението. На стадиона е по-интересно и можеш да викаш на воля.

Пламен: Вярно. Нали говорим за културно развлечение? Съгласен съм, но ти ще се редиш на опашката за билети.

Марин: Купих билетите още вчера. Ходя на този мач от дете. И не забравяй да си вземеш чадър. Може да вали.

Пламен: Ще взема чадър, а също и аспири́н. И благодаря за богатия избор.

Марин: Винаги можеш да разчиташ на мене. Значи, утре ще се обадя пак да се разберем къде ще се срещнем. Дочуване.

Пламен: Добре. Дочуване.



Theater of the Bulgarian Army, Sofia

**GLOSSARY**

áвторски	author's	голямо движение	lots of traffic
áвторско прáво	copyright	гpáд	hail
алó	hello (on the phone)	гpъб, гpъбът	back
ама	but	(pl. гpъбовé)	
áрмия	army	гpъд, -тá (or гpъди)	chest
аспирин	aspirin	гyша	neck, throat
		гpрдá	breast, bosom
		гpрло	throat
бедpó	thigh		
берá	pick, gather	дáвам на зáем	loan
болí (3rd person only)	hurt	дáвам под нáем	rent out
болí ме главáта	I have a headache	движение	movement; traffic
болят ме очите	my eyes hurt	дерá	skin, fleece, tear, scratch
бóлка	pain	длáн	palm of the hand
брадá	beard; chin	доклáд	report
брадичка	chin	дочyване	goodbye (on the phone)
бyза	cheek	дрóб, -ът (pl. дрóбoвe or дрóбовé)	lung
бýл дрóб	lung	дъжд, -ът	rain
		(pl. дъждовé)	
в такъв слyчай	in that case		
валí (3rd person only)	rain, etc.	жилéтка	waistcoat, cardigan
	(precipitation)		sweater
валí (дъжд)	it's raining	заболява ме /	start to hurt
валí сняг	it's snowing	заболí ме	
валí гpáд	it's hailing	(3rd person only)	
валí като из ведрó	it's raining buckets	заболявам /	get sick
валят силни	it's raining heavily	заболéя	
дъждовé		завалява / завали	begin to precipitate
ведpó	bucket	(3rd person only)	
вéжда	eyebrow	зáдник	behind, rear end
вéк, -ът	century	зáемам / зáема	take up, occupy
вид, -ът	aspect, view,	зáла	hall
	appearance	зарáдвам се	cheer up
видеокасета	video cassette	зáхар, -тá	sugar
виж каквó	(topic focuser)	зaщítа	defense
викам	shout, yell	звучá (-иш)	sound
викам на вóля	shout to one's heart's	звучí добрé	that sounds good
	content	зъболéкар	dentist
виц	joke		
вкáрвам / вкáрам	push in, drive in	измíслям /	think up, invent
вкáрам гóл	score [a goal]	измíсля	
вóля	will, desire	измóкpям /	drench, soak
врáт	back of the neck	измóкpя	
		измóкpя	get soaked to the skin
главá	head	измóкpям се	
глас, -ът (pl. гласовé)	voice	до кóсти	
глéзен	ankle	изненáда	surprise
гнyс ме e	[I] feel nauseated	изпíрам / изперá	do laundry, wash
гóл	goal (in sports)		



Дванайсети урок / Lesson 12

изплітам / изплета́	knit, twist	оба́ждам се /	come to the phone
изпу́скам го́л	miss [a goal]	оба́дя се	
има́м пра́во	have the right	общество́	society
		око́ ( <i>pl.</i> очі́)	eye
ка́к не те́ е сра́м!	you should be ashamed!	омрѣ́звам /	tire, bore
		омрѣ́зна	
каква́ е по́лзата	what's the use	омрѣ́зва ми	I'm bored
какви́ ли не́	whatever, whatnot ( <i>see L. 17</i> )	опера́	opera
		опо́мням се /	come to (one's) senses
		опо́мна се	
какви́то	whatever ( <i>see L. 17</i> )	опо́мни се!	snap out of it!
карнава́лен	carnival ( <i>adj.</i> )	организи́рам	organize
ки́тка	wrist	от дете́	since childhood
ко́жа	skin	отбо́р	team
коля́но ( <i>pls.</i> коленá or коленé)	knee		
компáкт ди́ск	compact disk	па́лец	thumb, big toe
конфе́ренция	conference	пе́ра	wash
корéм	abdomen, belly	пе́та	heel
коса́	hair	пиéса	play
ко́ст, -та́	bone	повта́рям /	repeat
крѣ́в, -та́ ( <i>pl.</i> крѣ́ви)	blood	повто́ря	
култу́рен	cultural	повторéние	repeat, replay
кѣ́с	short	поговóрвам /	talk for a bit
		поговóря	
		подгóтвям /	prepare
лицé	face	подгóтвя	
логичен	logical	пои́скам /	want, wish, ask for
		пои́скам	
ма́й	it seems, in all probability	по́лза	use, advantage
ма́й оста́ва да	I guess we have to	помы́слям /	think about
оти́дем та́м	go there	помы́сля	
ма́ч	[sports] match, game	популя́рен	popular
между́	between, among	потичáм /	start flowing
ме́н = ме́не		потекá (-чеш)	
ми́гла	eyelash	прави́ла на пъ́т-	traffic laws, rules of
ми́нало свѣ́ршено	aorist tense	ното́ движе́ние	the road
вре́ме		прави́ло	rule
мо́зък	brain	прави́та на	animal rights
му́скул	muscle	живо́тните	
		пра́во	[legal] right
на вся́ка цена́	at any price, at all costs, absolutely	прехвѣ́рлям се /	transfer; shift
		прехвѣ́рля се	
на кра́к	hastily	при́казка	tale, story
на телефóна	speaking! (on the phone)	причѣ́ска	haircut, hair style
		прости́рам /	stretch out
на́ем	rent	простра́	
наза́ем	loan	прости́рам дрѣ́хи	hang clothes out to dry
не те́ е сра́м!	shame on you!	прѣ́ст ( <i>pl.</i> прѣ́сти)	finger, toe
небѣ́	palate [roof of mouth]	пуло́вер	sweater
несвѣ́ршен	incomplete, imperfect	пѣ́тен	road, traveling
несвѣ́ршен вид	imperfective aspect		
нога́	leg ( <i>dialectal, poetic</i> )	разби́рам се /	come to an under-
		разберá се	standing, agree
		разби́ране	understanding

Дванайсети урок / Lesson 12

развлечение	amusement	трябва (3rd person only)	must, should
разпъвам / разпъва	tell, relate	(той) трябва да дойде	he needs to come
разчитам	rely on, count [on]	трябва му адвокат	he needs a lawyer
рамо (pl. рамена or рамене)	shoulder	трябвам	be necessary to
редя	arrange, put in order	ужасен	terrible
редя се на опашка	get/wait in line	уморявам се / уморя се	get tired, become exhausted
режа (-еш)	cut, slice	университетски	university (adj.)
режисьор	director	уста	mouth
рокля	dress	устна	lip
ръка (pl. ръце)	hand, arm	ухо (pl. уши)	ear
сам, сама, само, сами	alone, [the] very, by oneself	харесвам / харесам	like
самият аз	I myself	хем (хем ... хем)	both...and...; not only..., but...
сборник	collection	цена	price
свършен, -ена	complete, perfect	централен	central
свършен вид	perfective aspect	чадър (pl. чадъри)	umbrella
сливица	tonsil	чело (or челó)	forehead
случаен	chance, accidental	черво	intestine
случай	instance	черен дроб	liver
случайно	by chance	череша	cherry
собствен, -ена	one's own	честен	honorable, honest
срам, -ът (pl. срамове or срамовé)	shame, modesty	честна дума	word of honor
срам ме е	I'm ashamed/shy	чужбина	abroad
срещу	against, opposite, across from	шествие	procession, train
стадион	stadium	широк	wide, broad
стомак	stomach	широко разбиране	liberal interpretation
страх, -ът (pl. страховé)	fear, dread	шия	neck
страх ме е (от)	I'm afraid [of]	щастлив	happy
стъпало	sole (of the foot)	юмрук	fist
съгласен	in agreement	яд	anger
сълза (pl. сълзи or сълзи)	tear (from the eye)	яд ме е (на)	I'm angry (at)
сърби (3rd person only)	itch		
техника	technology		
точно	just		
треса	shake		
тресé ме	I've got the shakes; I've got a fever		

## CULTURAL COMMENTARY

### Traveling: train lines

Two main train lines connect the capital city of Sofia with the Black Sea port of Varna: one runs through the center of the country and one further to the north. Transfers can be made to smaller towns in the interior from major points along this line. The north central town of Gorna Oryakhovitsa (Горна Оряховица) is the transfer point for Gabrovo, which is situated between the two main arteries.

### Politics: animal rights

The cause of animal rights has not yet penetrated to Bulgaria. Certain "protective" societies are known, however; among them is a society dedicated to the conservation of nature (общество за защита на природата).

### Entertainment: music; sports

Like other world capitals, Sofia has numerous theater companies and its own symphony, opera and ballet companies. Bulgarians love music, especially singing; and Bulgaria is known for its fine opera singers. Many of these have emigrated to the West.

Recorded music, both on cassettes and compact disks, is easily available in Bulgaria, as are videocassettes of recent films. Although copyright laws are somewhat more lax than in the West, there is probably the same amount of illegal copying in Bulgaria as in other countries (and the same difficulties of enforcement).

The main sports stadium in Sofia is named after the revolutionary hero Vasil Levski (Васил Лѐвски, 1837-1873). It seats 55,000 spectators. Soccer is the game played there most often, but it is also used for track and field events. The traditional rival soccer teams are the ЦСКА (Централен спортен клуб на армията, the "Central Army Sport Club") and the Лѐвски ("Levski") team.



National theater "Ivan Vazov", Sofia

## LESSON 13

### **DIALOGUE**

#### Щом те боли гърлото, облечи се!

Таня: Надке, щом те боли гърлото, облечи се. И оня ден, докато се разхождахме из ботаническата градина, тебе те болеше гърлото.

Надка: Не искам да се обличам. Добре ми е така.

Таня: Не ме ли разбра? Веднага си облечи жилетката!

Надка: Ще си я облека след малко. Ако ме заболи повече.

Таня: Не спори. Като те заболи повече, ще е късно да се обличаш.

Надка: Добре. След малко. Но и Камен да се облече!

Таня: Не след малко, а сега.

Камен (на Надка): Защо? Тебе те заболя гърлото, ти се облечи. Мене не ме боли.

Таня: Покажи ми ръцете си. Аха, мръсни са. Трябва да се измиеш. Тука има малко вода. Ела да ти полее да си измиеш ръцете.

Камен: Мих се преди малко, докато Надка говореше с тебе. Не искам пак да се мия.

Таня: Когат? Не те видях. Слушай, Камене. Надка вече се облече и ти трябва да се измиеш. Това е.

Веселин: Скоро ще слизам, да си взема довиждане. Какво решихте, Джули? Ще дойдете ли с мен?

Джули: Ние с Дейвид трябва да продължим за София, имаме работа там. Ако я свършим бързо, може да дойдем в Габрово.

Веселин: Мога ли с нещо да ви бъда полезен? Имам много познати в София.

Джули: Ние трябва да се срещнем с професор Александър Попов, археолог. Не го ли познавате случайно?

Веселин: Какъв късмет! Познавам го добре. Той ми е роднина.

Джули: Найстина ли!

Веселин: А бе, защо да не дойда и аз с вас до София да ви представя?

Дейвид: Да не изпуснете заради нас фестивала?

Веселин: Има още малко време, докато фестивалът започне. Ако свършим бързо всичко в София, ще отидем заедно. Нали искате да посетите фестивала?



Downtown Sofia

**BASIC GRAMMAR****13.1. The imperfect tense, introduction**

Bulgarian has two simple past tenses, the aorist and the imperfect. The 3<sup>rd</sup> singular form of the imperfect will be learned in this lesson. The theme vowel of the imperfect is -e- or -a-/-я-, and the 3<sup>rd</sup> singular ending is -ше. The full conjugation of the imperfect will be learned in Lesson 14.

Both the aorist and the imperfect refer to actions which took place in the past. Of the two tenses, the aorist is the more neutral: it simply states the *fact* of past action. The imperfect tense has a more specific meaning, in that it concentrates on the *duration* of a past action over a certain period of time. For example:

*aorist*

Вчера ме боля главата.

Yesterday my head hurt.

*imperfect*Особено много болеше зад  
очите.It hurt particularly in the area behind  
my eyes.*aorist*Вчера Лиляна говори с  
директора.Lilyana spoke with the director  
yesterday.*imperfect*Мих се преди малко, докато  
Надка говореше с тебе.I washed a while ago, while Nadka  
was talking with you.

Both instances of the aorist above refer to simple facts of past action: someone had a headache, or someone carried out a particular conversation. Both instances of the imperfect, however, focus on the duration of the action. That is, while the headache was going on (duration), it was centered in a particular spot; and while a certain conversation was going on (duration), the fact of washing got accomplished.

The use of the imperfect will be discussed in more detail in Lesson 14.

**13.2. The past tense of impersonal verbs**

The past tense of impersonal verbs is identical with the 3<sup>rd</sup> singular imperfect ending. For these verbs, however, this ending simply means "past": there is no separate aorist form. Thus:

<i>present</i>	<i>past</i>	<i>present</i>	<i>past</i>
има	имаше	трябва	трябваше
няма	нямаше	може	можеше

Translations vary, especially in the case of **трябва**, which means “supposed to”, “must”, “ought to”, or “should have”, depending on the context. It is crucial to remember that although the meaning of the sentence is “past tense”, the verb after **да** remains in the *present tense* form.

Имаше много интересен филм по телевизията.	There was a really interesting film on TV.
Нямаше никаква нужда да идваш снощи.	There really was no need for you to [have] come last night.
По цял ден го нямаше вкъщи. Трябваше да помоля за извинение.	He often was gone for the whole day. I ought to have asked [your] pardon.
Толкова ми беше зле, че трябваше да повикам лекаря през нощта.	I was in such a bad state that I had to call the doctor during the night.
Можеше и мене да повикате! Можеше по-кратко да говориш.	You could have called <i>me</i> , you know! You might have spoken more gently.

### 13.3. Reflexive verbs

The particles **се** and **си** are frequently combined with verbs, to which they add various shades of meaning. The particle **се** can add the meanings of intransitivity or reciprocity, or can simply create a verb of a different meaning. The particle **си** adds the meaning of “greater involvement in the action”; it can also function as a short form possessive when the possessor is identical with the subject of the sentence.

Both these particles are called “reflexive”, because they serve in various ways to reflect the verbal action away from a potential direct object and back towards the subject of the sentence. When attached to verbs of the general category “caring for the body”, these particles convey the reflexive meaning in its purest form. For this reason, such verbs are called “true reflexives.”

When used without the reflexive additive, these verbs are transitive. They take a direct object, and signify that the relevant action is performed upon someone or something else. When the reflexive particle **се** is added, the meaning is that the subject performs the action on or for himself. The object of the verb is now the particle **се**, and the verb is said to be reflexive. A literal English translation would add the object “himself”, “yourself”; correct English simply names the action.

Below are eight of the most common of these verbs, followed by examples of transitive and reflexive usage.

<i>verb</i>	<i>(meaning)</i>	<i>verb</i>	<i>(meaning)</i>
бърша	wipe, dry	обличам / облека	put on clothes, dress
къпя	bathe	обувам / обуя	put on shoes, stockings, etc.
мия	wash	събличам / съблека	take off clothes, undress
реша	comb	събувам / събуя	take off shoes, stockings, etc.

*transitive*

Нádка облича и съблича кúклите си.	Nadka dresses and undresses her dolls.
Седни да те събуя.	Sit down and I'll take your shoes off.

*reflexive*

-- Къде е Камен?	"Where's Kamen?"
-- В банята. Мие се.	"In the bathroom. He's washing."
Студено е навън. Облечи се!	It's cold outside. Put [something] on!

Reflexive verbs can also take the particle *си*. The meaning continues to be that the subject performs the action on or for himself. But when *си* is present, there is always another object in the sentence, either a noun or pronoun. If this direct object refers to a body part, it is always in the definite form; if it refers to a piece of clothing it can be either definite or indefinite. In English, the indefinite objects are treated as any indefinite object, but the definite objects are translated with possessive adjectives such as "my", "your", etc. Here are examples:

Камен се мие - мие си лицето.	Kamen is washing -- washing his face.
Веднага си облечи жилетката!	Put your sweater on right away!
Да си облека бяла рíза довечера?	Should I wear a white shirt this evening?

### 13.4. Word order in negative-interrogative sentences

A negative-interrogative sentence contains both the negative and the interrogative particles. It follows basic word order rules: the negative particle *не* always precedes the verb and the interrogative particle *ли* usually follows it.

When clitics are present, the word order changes dramatically. Clitics continue to occur in sequence, preceded directly by the negative particle. The interrogative particle, however, must follow the first clitic in sequence, no matter what its meaning. The word order (and specifically the position of the object in the sentence) is thus quite different from that of those with short form pronoun objects. Compare the following examples:



Не познаваш ли Ивѐн?	Don't you know Ivan?
Не го ли познаваш?	Don't you know him?
Не дадох ли книгата на Ивѐн?	Didn't I give the book to Ivan?
Не му ли я дадох?	Didn't I give it to him?
На тебе не е ли приятел?	Isn't he a friend of yours?
Не ти ли е приятел?	Isn't he your friend?

### 13.5. Modal да, continued

The modal meaning of да is most strongly present when there is no verb preceding it. In these instances, да-phrases communicate (to a greater or lesser extent) wishes or desires of the speaker. When the verb following да is 3<sup>rd</sup> person, the wish is especially strongly felt. It can be expressed as a fervent desire, or even as a veiled order (depending, of course, on the context). For example:

Елате в 3 ч. И Йво да дойде. Да слезем ли?	Come at 3:00. Have Ivo come too. Let's get off, shall we?
Да живее демокрацията! И Камен да се облече!	Long live democracy! Kamen has to get dressed too!

### 13.6. Iterative imperatives

Affirmative imperatives are normally in the perfective aspect and negative imperatives normally in the imperfective aspect. Perfective aspect is chosen in the affirmative imperative because the speaker is usually referring to a specific, completed act. If the speaker wishes a repeated action, however, then an imperfective verb is used. For example:

Затвори вратата! Не затваряй вратата!	Close the door! Don't close the door!
Пишете ни по-често! Обаждайте се! Слагайте дрехите си на място!	Write more often! Keep in touch! Put your clothes where they belong!

### 13.7. The verb бъда

The verb бъда "be" can be seen as the bounded form of съм. It is used in forming both the future tense and the imperative mood of съм. It can also appear after да if the meaning is one of boundedness.

Той ще бъде в кабинета от 9 ч.	He will be in his office from 9:00 on.
Бъдете така добър да ми направите копие от това писмо.	Be so good as to make me a copy of that letter.
Мога ли с нещо да ви бъда полезен?	Can I be of help to you in some way?

### 13.8. The conjunction докато

The conjunction *докато* has different meanings depending on the aspect of the verb which follows. If the verb is imperfective, *докато* has the unbounded meaning “while”, but if the verb is perfective, *докато* has the bounded meaning “until”. Perfective *докато* can, but need not be, followed by the particle *не*, with no essential change in meaning.

Examples are given below. Bounded and unbounded conjunctions will be discussed in more detail in Lesson 17.

#### *unbounded*

Мих се преди малко, докато Надка говореше с тебе.	I washed a while ago, while Nadka was talking with you.
Докато е студено, ще държим децата вътре.	So long as it's cold we'll keep the children inside.

#### *bounded*

Има още малко време, докато фестивалът започне.	There's still a little time left before the festival begins.
Място не можеше да си намери, докато не ги чу една сутрин.	She couldn't settle down until she finally heard them one morning.

### 13.9. Prepositions

The preposition *по* has a wide range of idiomatic meanings. It indicates different sorts of connection, depending on the particular expression. For example:

Много приказва по телефона.	She talks on the phone a lot.
Имаше хубав филм по телевизията снощи.	There was a good film on TV last night.
Трябва да говорим по повод на това.	We have to talk in connection with that.
Отиваме там по бански.	We go there in our bathing suits.
Трябва да ядеш по три пъти на ден.	One should eat three times a day.

## EXERCISES

I. Fill in the blanks with *се* or *си* as appropriate.

1. Вече е късно. Време е да \_\_\_\_\_ отиваме.
2. Тя е много елегантна. Винаги \_\_\_\_\_ облича хубаво.
3. Когато отива в университета, той \_\_\_\_\_ облича якето и джинсите.
4. Сутрин всички \_\_\_\_\_ мият или \_\_\_\_\_ къпят, ако има топла вода.
5. Нádка е още малка и не може да \_\_\_\_\_ мие самá лицето и ръцете.
6. Тук е горещо. Съблечи \_\_\_\_\_ палтото.
7. Тази кърпа е чиста. Можете да \_\_\_\_\_ избършете в нея.
8. Деца, затваряйте \_\_\_\_\_ устата, когато големите разговарят.
9. Камен от малък може сам да \_\_\_\_\_ обúва обúщата.
10. Всички \_\_\_\_\_ мият ръцете преди ядене, а Камен не \_\_\_\_\_ ги мие.
11. Когато \_\_\_\_\_ измиеш, ела при мене на топло.

II. Rewrite the following as negative questions.

1. Каза ли му го?
2. Той поиска ли ти автограф?
3. На него ли му дадоха книга за награда?
4. Писа ли ни подробно за тези неща?
5. На вас съобщиха ли ви за промяната в програмата?
6. Ние често играем тенис заедно.
7. Димитър всеки ден се обажда на майка си по телефона.

III. Fill in the blanks with the appropriate verb form (боли, трябва, има, няма, може) in present, aorist or imperfect tense.

1. Камен днес е по-добре. Първи ден не го \_\_\_\_\_ нищо.
2. Вчера той беше по-зле. Цял ден го \_\_\_\_\_ главата.
3. Когато той беше болен от грип, много го \_\_\_\_\_ главата.
4. Ако \_\_\_\_\_, ще препишем това писмо още веднъж.
5. Вчера той \_\_\_\_\_ работа и затова не \_\_\_\_\_ да дойде.
6. Ела непременно. Ако ме \_\_\_\_\_ вкъщи, \_\_\_\_\_ да ми оставиш белéжка в пощенската кутия.
7. Той \_\_\_\_\_ и по-добре да напише доклада, но \_\_\_\_\_ време.

**ADDITIONAL GRAMMAR NOTES****13.3a. Reflexive verbs: word order**

When used with reflexive verbs, the particle *се* functions exactly as a direct object, with the special meaning “object which is identical with the subject of the sentence”. The particle *си* functions as a combination of “indirect object” and “possessive”. This similarity of function is seen also in their form, as the first three lines of the pronoun object chart from Lesson 7 demonstrate:

	<i>subject</i>	<i>direct object</i>	<i>indirect object</i>
<i>1<sup>st</sup> singular</i>	а́з	ме	ми
<i>2<sup>nd</sup> singular (reflexive)</i>	ти́	те	ти
		се	си

These similarities extend to word order as well. The reflexive particles *се* and *си* obey exactly the same word order rules as the appropriate object pronouns. Examples are given below, with numbering cumulative across lessons.

- (61) Лéкаря̀т ка̀зва на па̀циéнта да се съблече́.  
*Cnj. DIR verb*

The doctor tells the patient to get undressed.

- (62) Чу́ ли ме? Ведна̀га си облечи́ жилéтка̀та.  
*IND verb direct obj.*

Did you hear me? Put your sweater on *now*!

- (63) Ще си я обла́ка след ма̀лко.  
*Fut. IND DIR verb*

I'll put it on in a bit.

- (64) Ще си облече́ ли бя̀ла ри́за?  
*Fut. IND verb INT direct obj.*

Will he wear a white shirt?

**13.4a. Word order and intonation in negative-interrogative sentences**

Negative-interrogative sentences in Bulgarian are particularly tricky, for two different reasons: they follow a word order rule which has little similarity to any other rules learned, and they have a characteristic intonation which sounds unnatural to speakers of English.

When no pronoun objects are present, the negative particle precedes the verb and the interrogative particle follows it, as in (65) below. When clitic pronoun objects are present, they follow the negative particle directly. The interrogative particle **ли** must then be placed after the first clitic in the string, *no matter what it means*.

This rule differs from all others learned previously, which required a specific grammatically marked form to follow the negative particle or to precede the interrogative one. On the basis of only examples (66) or (67), for instance, one might be tempted to say simply that the correct sequence in negative interrogative sentences would be:

*“negative particle + pronoun object(s) + interrogative particle”*

However, examples (68) through (70) show that the rule makes reference only to the sequence of clitic forms. The student should study these examples carefully, and be aware that special effort will be required to internalize this word order pattern.

- (65) 

Не	искаш	ли	сладолед?
Neg.	verb	INT	direct obj.

 Don't you want [any] ice cream?
- (66) 

Не	го	ли	познаваш?
Neg.	DIR	INT	verb

 Don't you know him?
- (67) 

Не	им	ли	помáга?
Neg.	IND	INT	verb

 Isn't he helping them?
- (68) 

Не	ти	ли	го	дадох?
Neg.	IND	INT	DIR	verb

 Didn't I give it to you?
- (69) 

Не	ти	ли	е	приятел?
Neg.	IND	INT	3 <sup>rd</sup> COP	predicate noun

 Isn't he your friend?
- (70) 

Не	си	ли	му	приятел?
Neg.	COP	INT	IND	predicate noun

 Aren't you his friend?

The characteristic rhythm of negative-interrogative sentences is due to two separate facts about Bulgarian intonation. The first is that the negative particle always focuses attention on the following accented word, and second is that the interrogative particle causes high tone on the preceding word. Any word surrounded by these two particles, therefore, carries a particularly strong accent. This intonation

pattern is especially striking when a clitic is the word that is surrounded, because clitics do not otherwise carry any accent at all.

In English, high intonation in the middle of a sentence marks special emphasis. The same is true in Bulgarian when the question particle **ли** is placed after any word *other* than the verb. For instance:

В **сѐбота** на **кѝно** **ли** ще хѝдиш? Are you going to the *movies* on Saturday? [and not somewhere else?]

В **сѐбота** **ли** ще хѝдиш на **кѝно**? Are you going to the movies on *Saturday*? [and not some other day?]

The high intonation of negative-interrogative sentences, however -- even higher than that of simple questions because of the negation -- is normal and neutral in Bulgarian. In each of the questions below, for instance, the capitalized form is pronounced much louder and with much higher tone than anything else in the sentence. An English ear will hear surprise (and almost shock) in this intonational pattern. In Bulgarian, however, it carries neutral meaning, and is the only way such sentences can be pronounced.

Тѐбе не **Тѐ** ли боли гѐрлото? Doesn't your throat hurt?  
На Ивѐн не **Мѐ** ли е добрѐ? Isn't Ivan well?

### 13.9a. Prepositions

Prepositions are not accented, but are rather pronounced together with the following noun or pronoun object as a single word. Prepositions of two or more syllables, such as **между**, **срещу**, or **заради**, are sometimes given in dictionaries (although not in the glossaries to this book) with accent on the final syllable. In very slow speech, or in instances when it is necessary to pronounce these words alone, they do bear a light accent on the final syllable.

The same is true of conjunctions such as **ако**, **като** or **докато**. Only when a conjunction is formed from an adverb, such as **кѝкѝто** or **когѝто**, does it bear an accent of its own in the speech stream.

### 13.10. Pronoun reduplication and inverted word order

A definite noun object is obligatorily "reduplicated" by the corresponding short form pronoun object in a number of sentence patterns. One of these is after **ѐто** or **нѝма**, and another is in experiencer and body-ache constructions. For review, consider the following:

Е́то го трамва́я!	There's the tram!
Кали́на я ня́ма.	Kalina's not around.
Ива́н го боли́ зъб.	Ivan has a toothache.
На На́дка ѝ е студéно.	Nadka is cold.

Bulgarians also have the option to reduplicate a noun object if they wish to place a certain emphasis on it. The most common way to express emphasis is to reverse the order of verb and object; frequently a reduplicated pronoun object is added as well.

As an example, compare the neutral form of a sentence with a definite direct object, followed by its emphatic form with inversion and doubling. The emphasis is not strong, and the difference is difficult to render adequately in English translation.

Не по́мня телефо́нния но́мер.	I don't remember the phone number.
Телефо́нния но́мер не го́ по́мня.	(same)

### 13.11. Derivation: diminutive suffixes

Bulgarian, like other Slavic languages, has several suffixes which are termed "diminutive". They form nouns from other nouns, and add the meaning of smallness. One of the commonest of these is the suffix *-ч-*, which is frequently followed by the neuter ending *-е*.

In some nouns this *-ч-* is derived from a final *-к* or *-ц* in the base noun, and in others it is a separate suffix added to the noun stem. Below are examples of both types of neuter derived diminutives.

<i>base noun</i>	<i>stem</i>	+ <i>-ч-</i> >	<i>derived noun</i>	<i>(meaning)</i>
чове́к	чове[к]-	+ <i>-ч-</i> >	чове́-че	dwarf
про́зор-ец	прозор-[ц]-	+ <i>-ч-</i> >	прозо́р-че	small window
мо́м-ък	мом-[к]-	+ <i>-ч-</i> >	мом-че́	boy
	мом-и-	+ <i>-ч-</i> >	моми́-че	girl
кеба́п	кебап-	+ <i>-ч-</i> >	кеба́п-че	grilled or stewed meat
но́ж	нож-	+ <i>-ч-</i> >	нож-че́	[razor] blade
живо́т-но	живот-ин-	+ <i>-ч-</i> >	животи́н-че	little animal
ба́лгар-ин	ба́лгар-	+ <i>-ч-</i> >	ба́лгар-че	young Bulgarian
друга́р	другар-	+ <i>-ч-</i> >	друга́р-че	young friend

Certain nouns in *-а* form diminutives according to a similar pattern. If the noun stem ends in *-к* or *-ц*, this consonant shifts to *-ч-*. The suffix *-к-* is then usually added before the feminine ending *-а*. Most of these nouns signify something of a smaller size; sometimes they simply mean "feminine", however.

<i>base noun</i>	<i>stem</i>	+ -ч- к- >	<i>derived noun</i>	<i>(meaning)</i>
мáртеница	мартени[ц]	+ -ч-к- >	мáртени-чка	small martenitsa
учени́к	учени[к]-	+ -ч-к- >	учени́-чка	female pupil
мáса	маси-	+ -ч-к- >	мáси-чка	small table

### 13.12. "Third-person" verbs, continued

Certain verbs, such as боли́ and вали́, are used only in the third person. A few other verbs of this sort express the idea of a feeling or a state which happens to one. Among these are досмешáва "feel like laughing" and досрамя́ва "feel ashamed". These are used most frequently in the past tense. Досрамя́ва expresses the experiencer as the direct object, while досмешáва expresses it as the indirect object.

Досрамя́ ме да си пойскам  
пóвече.

I felt [too] ashamed to ask for more.

Мáлко ми досмешá като го  
полúчих.

I chuckled to myself when I got it.



Museum-house "Todor Kableshkov", Koprivshitsa



## SAMPLE SENTENCES

1. Ако ти е студено, не се мий.
2. Измий се, облечи се и да тръгваме, че закъсняваме.
3. Камене, ти си голямо момче, можеш сам да се измиеш.
4. Тя се облича много хубаво.
5. Той се облича спортно. Никога не си слага вратовръзка.
6. Тресе ме. Тук се обличам, тук се събличам.
7. През лятото тя се съблича по бански и се пече на слънце на балкона.
8. Не ходи бос! Тук не е толкова чисто. Обуй се!
9. Нядка е малка, не може да се обуй сама и да си завърже връзките на обувките. Майка ѝ я обува.
10. Къпе се по три пъти на ден и все мръсен се чувства.
11. Не ти ли стана неудобно да го питаш за това?
12. Не ви ли стига, че съм тук?
13. Не го ли знаеш какъв е?
14. Не ме ли чу като те извиках?
15. Идвайте ни по-често на гости!
16. Проверявай редовно дали пощата е дошла.
17. Поливай цветята, докато ме няма.
18. Можеше да не ми затваряш вратата под нос.
19. Те трябваше вече да са тук.
20. Как може да вземеш ключа без разрешение -- трябваше да питаш.
21. На твоите години трябваше да си по-разумен.
22. Вчера имаше само две яйца в хладилника, а днес няма нито едно.
23. Не си спомням заглавието на книгата.
24. Заглавието на книгата не си го спомням.
25. Не ѝ казаха неговото име. Неговото име не ѝ го казаха.
26. Изядох последното яйце. Последното яйце го изядох.

### **SENTENCES FOR TRANSLATION**

1. You ought to have come earlier. Then we could have studied together all evening. Now we only have one hour to prepare for the test!
2. There used to be a shoe store here. Where is it? Do you know where they sell shoes now?
3. Kamen is a big boy now. Every day he puts on his own shirt, pants, shoes and socks. Nadka still needs her mother's help. Her mother puts on her shoes and socks for her.
4. Wait until I dry my hands, please. Then I can write down the telephone number for you. You'll call them tonight, won't you?
5. Mother dresses the children in the morning, and Father bathes them in the evening. They both put them to bed: Mother sings them a song and Father reads them a story. When the children are bigger, they will do all these things themselves.
6. That shirt is dirty, you'd better put on a clean one.
7. "Where is my tie? You were supposed to wash it for me!"  
"Didn't I give it to you? Yes, there it is, on the bed."
8. "We like martenitsi. Usually our Bulgarian friends send them to us, but when I opened their letter yesterday, there was nothing in it."  
"They didn't put it in the letter for you? Here, take this one. Everyone should have a martenitsa in the spring. You should have had one last week."
9. Where's Ivan? He isn't here. He wasn't here yesterday either. He could have written us a note so that we'd know where he is. Yes, he ought to have written us a note.
10. "I'm cold. I want to put on my sweater, but I don't know where it is."  
"Well, if you're cold then I'm hot. I'll take off my sweater and you can put it on. Then we'll both be fine."
11. Boris came in, took off his jacket and shoes, and sat down. Then he got up again, went into the bathroom, and washed his hands and face. He couldn't dry himself, though, because there was no towel.
12. Where's your coat? Didn't you take it off just a bit ago?

## READING SELECTION

### Кореспонденция - (10)

15 февруари, София

Драги Патриша, Боб, Емили и Майкъл,

Честита Баба Марта! Пожелаваме ви и през тази пролет да бъдете здрави и бодри, бели и червени като тези мартеници!

У нас в България хората смятат, че пролетта настъпва на първи март. Представяме си този месец като стара жена, намръщена и капризна, но с добро сърце. Името ѝ е Баба Марта. По това време долитат от юг и първите щъркели. Те винаги се връщат у дома си, в своето гнездо. Една двойка стари познайници си свиха гнездо преди три години на комина на нашата къща в Смолян. И нали щъркелите носят късмет, нашите ги чакат с нетърпение всяка година да се върнат. Миналата година беше студено и те малко закъсняха. Да знаете как се притесни моята свекърва... място не можеше да си намери, докато не ги чу една сутрин да тракат с клюн.

На първи март децата и много възрастни си закачват мартеници за здраве. Преди много години аз за първи път подарих мартеница на Бойко и ми стана мъчно, че той я забодде под ревера на сако̀то си. Попитах се не ме ли обича, от ког̀о ли иска да скрие моята мартеница? Трябваше да минам много години, за да разбера, че той (както и други мъже) се смущава да носи открито мартеница. Към края на месеца много хора закачват мартениците си на някое дърво, та те и на него да донесат здраве. Но, разбира се, децата се радват на мартениците най-много. Миналата година много близки дадоха мартенички на Яна и тя се окичи с тях като новогодишна елха. Закачи две и на любимата си кукла. Яна и нейните приятелки устрои́ха нещо като модно ревю с мартеници.

Иво обаче от няколко години се смята за прекалено голям за такива "детински работи".

Сърдечни поздравии от всички ни. Обаждайте се.

Калина

2 март, Сян Франциско

Драга Калина,

Малко ми досмеша, като получих онзи ден писмото ти и го отворих, а от него паднаха двуцветните вълнени пискюли. Ние смятахме, че пролетта настъпва на 21 март, в деня на пролетното равноденствие. Тази година обаче тя настъпи за нас рано -- като в България. Вчера Емили предизвика фурор на училище с мартеницата си. Майкъл обаче отказа да си я сложи. Бой се, че приятелите му ще се смеят. Не си сложи той мартеницата, но и на Емили не пожела да я подари. Скри я при другите си съкровища в дървената кутия под леглото.

Старите обичаи са смешни понякога, но животът без тях е скучен, нали?

Апропо, едни мои приятели много се интересуват от народна музика. Те ми подсказаха да си купя една българска плоча с изумителна автентична народна музика. Записът е от някакъв фестивал в Копривщица. Ти можеш ли да ми разкажеш повече за този фестивал?

Ваша

Патриша



Storks on a chimney (central Bulgaria)

## GLOSSARY

автентичен	authentic	животинче	little animal
автограф	autograph	забóждам / забодá	stick, pin
апропó	apropos, by the way	завързвам /	tie
балкóн	balcony	завържа (-еш)	
бáнски	bathing; swimsuit	завързвам връз-	tie shoelaces
бóдър	lively, cheerful	ките на обúвки	
бóлен от грип	down with the flu	заглавие	title
болéше	was hurting (2-3sg. <i>imperfect</i> )	зад	behind
бóс	barefoot	закáчвам /	hang, suspend
ботаническа градина	botanical garden	закачá (-иш)	
ботанически	botanical	зáпис	recording
бългáрче	young Bulgarian	заради	for the sake of
бършa (-еш)	wipe, rub	затвáрям вратáта	shut the door in
		под носá [на]	[someone's] face
		злé	bad, badly
взéмам си	make one's farewells	избърсвам /	wipe, dry
довíждане		избършa (-еш)	
вратовръзка	necktie	изви́квам /	cry, call out
връзка	tie, string, shoelace	изви́кам	
вълнен, -ена	wool, woolen	извинéние	excuse, pardon
гнездó	nest	изми́вам / изми́я	wash up
говóреше	was talking (2-3sg. <i>imperfect</i> )	изумителен	amazing, astounding
грип	influenza, flu	капризен	capricious
двóйка	pair	кебáп	grilled or stewed meat
двуцвéтен	two-colored	клóн	beak
демокpация	democracy	комин	chimney
детински	children's	кóпие	copy
детински работи	kid stuff	крóтък	gentle
джинси	jeans	кúкла	doll, puppet
дирéктор	director	кърпа	cloth, towel
докато не	until	лúбя	love, be in love with
долитам / долетя	come flying, fly up to	мáртеница	<i>see p. 287</i>
досмешáва ме /	feel like laughing	мáртеничка	small martenitsa
досмешéе ме (3rd person only)		мáсичка	little table
досрамя́ва ме /	feel ashamed	милéя	hold dear, care for
досрамéе ме (3rd person only)		мóден	fashionable
другáрче	playfellow, playmate	мóдно ревю	fashion show
дървен (-ена)	wood, wooden	мóмък	young man
		(pl. момци́)	
елá да ти полéя	let me pour water	мъ́чен	hard, difficult
	[over your hands]	нагрáда	reward, prize
елá	fir tree	намръщeн (-ена)	sullen, gloomy

Тринайсети урок / Lesson 13

нари́чам / нарека́ (-чеш)	call, name	предста́вам си / предста́вя си	imagine
настъ́пвам / настъ́пя	come on, set in, occur	прекале́н	too great, unconscionable
не споря́	don't argue	прекале́но голя́м	way too big
непреме́нен	indispensable, necessary	препи́свам / препи́ша (-еш)	rewrite, copy
непреме́нно	by all means	проверя́вам / проверя́	check, verify, test
неудобе́н	inconvenient	прозо́рче	small window
новогоди́шна елка́	New Year's tree	проле́тен	spring ( <i>adj.</i> )
но́жче	[razor] blade	проле́тно	vernal equinox
обича́й	custom, convention	равноде́нствие	
обли́чам / облека́ (-чеш)	dress [someone]	промя́на	change
обли́чам се / облека́ се (-чеш)	put on, don	( <i>pl.</i> промѐни)	
обли́чам се спор́тно	wear/put on casual clothing	профѐсор	professor
обу́вам / обу́я	put something on someone's foot	равноде́нствие	equinox
обу́вам се / обу́я се	put something on over the foot	разре́шение	permission
обу́ща	footwear	разу́мен	sensible, rational
оки́чвам / оки́ча (-иш)	adorn, decorate	ра́нен	early
отка́звам / отка́жа (-еш)	cancel, refuse	реве́р	lapel
откри́то	openly, aboveboard	реви́ю ( <i>neuter</i> )	revue, show
палто́	coat	редове́н	regular; in order
пека́ (-чеш)	bake	ре́ша (-еш)	comb
пека́ се на слъ́нце	sunbathe	ри́за	shirt
пискю́л	tassel, pendant	сакó	jacket
плóча	phonograph record	сви́вам / сви́я	bend, fold, roll
по ба́нски	wearing swimsuits	сви́вам гнездо́	build a nest
по по́вод	regarding, in connection with	скри́вам / скрия́	hide
пови́квам / пови́кам	call, call out	ску́чен	boring
по́вод	occasion, cause	сме́шен	funny, humorous
подро́бен	detailed	сме́я се	laugh
подро́бно	in detail	сму́щавам се / сму́тя се	get confused, be embarrassed
подска́звам / подска́жа (-еш)	hint, prompt	смя́там / смя́тна	reckon, count
позна́йник	acquaintance	смя́там (за)	consider [to be]
позна́йница	acquaintance ( <i>f.</i> )	спо́ря	dispute, contend
поли́вам / полѐя	pour	ста́на ми мъ́чно	I had a hard time
поли́вам цветя́та	water the flowers	сти́гам / сти́гна	reach, arrive at
помо́лвам / помо́ля	beg, ask	събли́чам / съблека́ (-чеш)	undress [someone]
по́мня	remember	събли́чам се / съблека́ се (-чеш)	undress, get undressed
попи́твам се / попи́там се	ask oneself, wonder	събу́вам / събу́я	take [something] off [someone's] foot
предста́вам / предста́вя	present, offer	събу́вам се / събу́я се	take something off one's foot
		съкро́вище	treasure
		та	and; so that
		та́ча (-иш)	respect
		телефо́нен	telephone ( <i>adj.</i> )

тѐнис	tennis	човѐче	dwarf
товá е!	that's that!	чувствувам се	feel
тра́кам	rattle	(or чувствам се)	
устро́йвам / устро́я	arrange, organize	щъркел	stork
фурóр	furor	юг	south
хóдя бóс	go barefoot	яке	jacket

## CULTURAL COMMENTARY

### Customs and beliefs: martenitsi; storks

A "martenitsa" (мáртеница) is a small decoration made of red and white yarn wound into tassels. It is worn pinned or tied to one's lapel throughout the month of March. Friends give martenitsi to each other to mark the coming of spring. It is especially customary to give children martenitsi, and to mail them to friends in other countries. The colors are thought to symbolize the health of springtime: cheeks that are red and skin that is white (that is, not jaundiced). The custom is one in which Bulgarians take great delight.

Storks (щъркели) are very common birds in the Balkans. They often build their nests on rooftops near chimneys; to have a stork's nest on one's house is considered a sign of good luck. In addition, their return from winter migrations is considered to be a clear sign of spring.

### Forms of address, and a poem

Forming diminutives with the suffix -ч- is quite common "at home" (within Bulgaria), but less so when referring to persons or things outside Bulgaria. Although Bulgarians could in principle refer to an English child as англича́нче, they would not do so automatically. The word бълга́рче, on the other hand, is extremely common. Part of this may be due to the following poem that every Bulgarian schoolchild knows:

Аз съм бълга́рче. Свобóдно	I am a Bulgarian child. Freely
в кра́й свобóден аз живѐя.	I live, in a free land.
Всичко бълга́рско и рóдно	Everything Bulgarian and native
лю́бя, та́ча и милѐя.	is what I love, esteem and hold dear.

Аз съм бълга́рче. Обичам	I am a Bulgarian child. I love
на́ш'те планини́ зелѐни.	our mountains green.
Бълга́рин да се нари́чам	To be able to say I am Bulgarian
първа ра́дост е за ме́не.	is the most joyful of things for me.

### Folklore: Koprivshtitsa festival

It has been customary to hold a large folk festival every five years in the mountain town of Koprivshtitsa. Lovers of Bulgarian folk music come from all over the world for this festival. It will be described in Lesson 16.

## LESSON 14

### **DIALOGUE**

#### На гáрата в Сóфия

// Влáкът приближáва гáра Сóфия с мáлко закъснéние. На перóна чáкат мнóго хóра, между тãх един слáб човéк с мустáци и, мáлко пó-далéче, една мнóго елeгáнтно облéчена дáма. Веднáга щом влáкът спíра, от нéго слíзат първо Тánя с децáта, пóсле Милéна и Димítър, а след товá дрúгите. //

Камен: Тáтко! Тí дойдé!

Петър: Разбíра се! Токú-що полúчих вáшето писмó от Вáрна. Намéрих го в пóщенската кутíя, когáто се върнах от рáбота. В нéго пишеше, че ще пристíгате с тóзи влáк. Трябваше да побързам, за да дóйда наврéме да ви посрéщна.

Таня: Имаме късмéт, че си в Сóфия. Каквá изненада!

Петър: Нали знáеш, че áз съм по изненадите. Вкбци ви чáка още една изненада! Ё, деца, как прекарахте на морéто? Каквó правихте? Хúбаво ли бéше?

Камен: О, мнóго хúбаво, тáтко. Сáмо íсках тí да си с нáс!

Надка: Тáтко, тáтко! Áз се наúчих да плúвам.

Петър: Брáво, мóето момíче!

Таня: Не мóжех да я извáдя от морéто. Стоéше по цял дéн във водáта.

Надка: Вíж, тáтко, каквó гердáнче íмам. Нали е мнóго слáдко?

Петър: Дá, мнóго е хúбаво. Кóй ти го подарí?

Таня: Нíе с Нáдка всýка сýтрин събíрахме óхлювчета на плáжа. И Кáмен ни помáгаше. Пóсле избíрахме нáй-хúбавите и ги нíжехме на гердáни. Áз нанизах нáй-хúбавия гердáн.

Петър: А за тéбе, Кáмене, гердáн нýма ли?

Камен: Áз съм мбж. Защó ми е на мéне гердáнче? На мéне мáма ми кúпи шнóрхел!



\* \* \* \* \*

Димитър: Погледни, мило! Виж, майка ми ни маха оттам. Ела да ви запозная.

Милена: Боже, колко добре е облечена! Всички ли софийнки се обличат така? А виж ме мен на какво приличам след този дълъг път. Какво ли ще помисли за мен?

Димитър: Не се притеснявай, мило. Много си хубава. Сигурно ще те хареса. Мамо, ето ни най-после.

Павлина: Митенце! Ти пристигна!

Димитър: Ние пристигнахме, мамо. Запознай се, това е Милена. Милена, майка ми.

Павлина: Вие сигурно сте уморени от пътя. Хайде, таксито ни чака. Как пътувахте?

Милена: Без приключения.

\* \* \* \* \*

Таня: Хайде, деца, да тръгваме.

Надка: Нали и лелята ще дойде с нас?

Таня: Тя си има работа. Пусни я. Кажй ѝ довиждане.

Надка: Не, аз искам тя да дойде с нас. Искам да ѝ покажа куклите си.

Таня: Пусни сегат лелята. Пусни я, че бърза. Но може в неделя да отидем заедно на Витоша. Джули, обади ни се. Ето нашия телефон.

Джули: Не знам дали в неделя все още ще съм в София. Зависи какво ще каже професорът. Но ще ви се обадя на всяка цена, след като нещата се изяснят.

## BASIC GRAMMAR

### 14.1. The imperfect tense: form

The endings of the imperfect tense are like those of the aorist; only the second and third singular are different. The imperfect endings are:

	<i>singular</i>	<i>plural</i>
1 <sup>st</sup>	-х-	-хме
2 <sup>nd</sup>	-ше	-хте
3 <sup>rd</sup>	-ше	-ха

These endings are preceded by one of two theme vowels: **-a-** (or **-я-**), used in a-conjugation verbs, and the alternating **-я-/-е-** vowel, used in all other verbs. Examples of the imperfect conjugation are given below, in each case together with the present and the aorist for comparison.

For a-conjugation (type 1) verbs, the aorist and the imperfect are identical except for second and third singular. Context is usually sufficient to know which is meant.

(type 1)	<i>PRESENT</i>	<i>IMPERFECT</i>	<i>AORIST</i>
1 <sup>st</sup> singular	глед-ам	глед-ах	глед-ах
2 <sup>nd</sup> singular	глед-аш	глед-аше	глед-а
3 <sup>rd</sup> singular	глед-а	глед-аше	глед-а
1 <sup>st</sup> plural	глед-аме	глед-ахме	глед-ахме
2 <sup>nd</sup> plural	глед-ате	глед-ахте	глед-ахте
3 <sup>rd</sup> plural	глед-ат	глед-аха	глед-аха

For all other verbs, the shape of the theme vowel depends upon the accent and upon the shape of the ending which follows. According to the general rule, the alternating vowel **-я-/-е-** always appears as **-е-** when unstressed. In the majority of verb types, therefore, the theme vowel will be **-е-**.

(type 2)	<i>PRESENT</i>	<i>IMPERFECT</i>	<i>AORIST</i>
1 <sup>st</sup> singular	ход-я	ход-ех	ход-их
2 <sup>nd</sup> singular	ход-иш	ход-еше	ход-и
3 <sup>rd</sup> singular	ход-и	ход-еше	ход-и
1 <sup>st</sup> plural	ход-им	ход-ехме	ход-ихме
2 <sup>nd</sup> plural	ход-ите	ход-ехте	ход-ихте
3 <sup>rd</sup> plural	ход-ят	ход-еха	ход-иха

When the theme vowel is accented, it appears as -e- in the second and third singular and -я- or -а- elsewhere. For example:

(type 3)

	<i>PRESENT</i>	<i>IMPERFECT</i>	<i>AORIST</i>
<i>1<sup>st</sup> singular</i>	върв-я́	върв-я́х	върв-я́х
<i>2<sup>nd</sup> singular</i>	върв-я́ш	върв-я́ше	върв-я́
<i>3<sup>rd</sup> singular</i>	върв-я́	върв-я́ше	върв-я́
<i>1<sup>st</sup> plural</i>	върв-я́м	върв-я́хмe	върв-я́хмe
<i>2<sup>nd</sup> plural</i>	върв-я́те	върв-я́хтe	върв-я́хтe
<i>3<sup>rd</sup> plural</i>	върв-я́т	върв-я́хa	върв-я́хa

The *endings* of the imperfect tense are straightforward: there are only the above types. *Stems*, though, can be different. This is because the imperfect tense is formed from the present tense stem. When the present (= imperfect) and aorist stems are identical, as in the above examples, the aorist and imperfect paradigms differ only in their endings. Indeed, when the stems are the same and the theme vowel is -a- or -я-, the aorist and imperfect paradigms are identical except for the second and third singular forms.

The following are examples of verbs whose imperfect stem differs from the aorist stem. Because the endings are predictable, only the first person plural forms are given. Note in each case the similarity with the present tense stem, *including accent*.

(type 5)

	<i>PRESENT</i>	<i>IMPERFECT</i>	<i>AORIST</i>
<i>1<sup>st</sup> plural</i>	чет-е́м	чет-я́хмe	че́т-охмe

(type 8)

	<i>PRESENT</i>	<i>IMPERFECT</i>	<i>AORIST</i>
<i>1<sup>st</sup> plural</i>	пи́ш-ем	пи́ш-ехмe	пи́с-ахмe

(type 9)

	<i>PRESENT</i>	<i>IMPERFECT</i>	<i>AORIST</i>
<i>1<sup>st</sup> plural</i>	бер-е́м	бер-я́хмe	бр-а́хмe

If there is a consonantal alternation within the present tense (as in *мо́га* and *сека́*), the stem is taken from the third singular (and not the first singular). For example:

	PRESENT	IMPERFECT	AORIST
<i>1<sup>st</sup> singular</i>	мог-а	мож-ех	мож-ах

	PRESENT	IMPERFECT	AORIST
<i>1<sup>st</sup> singular</i>	сек-а	сеч-ах	сяк-ох

### 14.2. Usage of the imperfect tense

The imperfect is formally unique in that it is marked both for past tense (by the presence of the consonant -x- in the endings) and for present tense (by the use of the present tense stem of the verb).

Its meaning is a similar mixture. In terms of time frame, it clearly locates an action in the past. In all other ways, the meaning is that of the present tense: it describes an action or state that is either in progress at the moment in question, is habitually repeated, or is a general fact. As examples, consider the following pairs, in which the verb forms are underlined to focus upon this contrast:

*present*

Всеки ден чете вестник.

He reads the newspaper every day.

*imperfect*

Макар и на морето,  
той четеше вестник всеки ден.

Even though [he was] at the seashore,  
he read the newspaper every day.

*present*

Тя ходи много на кино.

She goes to the movies a lot.

*imperfect*

По-рано много ходеше на кино.

She used to go to the movies a lot.

*present*

Ти какво правиш в момента?

What are you doing right now?

*imperfect*

Ти какво правеше в този момент?

What were you doing right then?

*present*

Ние сега вече не пием много.

We don't drink much any more.

*imperfect*

А тогава -- ах, как пиехме!

But back then -- boy, how we used to drink!

*present*

Той идва редовно  
да играе бридж с татко ти.

He comes over regularly  
to play bridge with your father.

*imperfect*

Той идваше редовно  
да играе бридж с татко ти.

He used to come over regularly  
to play bridge with your father.

In fact, the only essential thing that separates each of the two pairs is the time frame: the sentences with a present tense verb describe an action occurring “now”, and the sentences with an imperfect tense verb describe an action which was occurring “then”.

The most appropriate English translations of the imperfect are “used to do” or “would do” (in the case of a repeated or habitual action) and “was doing”, “were doing” (in the case of a single durative action).

### 14.3. Contrast of aorist and imperfect tenses

Both the aorist and imperfect tenses are concerned with past action. The aorist is the more neutral of the two: it focuses upon the fact of an action that happened in the past, but does not add any further information. The imperfect, however, concentrates on the duration of the action over a certain period of time. The English past progressive (“was doing”, “were going”) often renders this meaning exactly. In other instances, the English simple past is necessary. In these cases, context provides the necessary information of repetition or duration.

In the following examples, the main verb forms are underlined to focus on this contrast:

*aorist*

Мислих, мислих,  
но нищо не измислих.

I thought and thought,  
but didn't think up anything.

*imperfect*

То е, защото  
мислех под напрежение.

That's because  
I was thinking under pressure.

*aorist*

Вчера той отиде на конферен-  
цията и слуша два доклада.

Yesterday he went to the conference  
and listened to two papers.

*imperfect*

Първият беше много скучен.  
Отначало той внимателно  
слушаше, но после  
вниманието му се притъпи.

The first was very boring. In the  
beginning he listened  
attentively, but after that his  
attention wavered.

The usage of the imperfect is seen especially well in the narration of past events. The imperfect is used to set the frame for a story, and to involve the listener in the events of that time frame. For instance:

Вървях по улицата, рано-рано.  
Птиците пéеха. [...]

I was walking down the street,  
early in the morning. The  
birds were singing. [...]

Връщах се с такси от болницата.  
Ймаше голямо движение. [...]

I was coming from the hospital  
by taxi. There was a lot  
of traffic. [...]

If the speaker uses only imperfective verbs, the focus remains on the scene, and on the mood of the particular durative time frame. But if (as is often the case) the speaker goes on to narrate specific events that then happened within that time frame, s/he switches to the aorist. Thus, the imperfect is used to relate things that were going on in the background, while the aorist is used to relate things that happened, events in the foreground.

The following narrative illustrates this contrast between aorist and imperfect.

Imperfect

Готвех си вечеря. Пóмня, че  
се чюдех къде е солта.

I was making dinner. I remember  
wondering where the salt was.

*(actions going on in the background)*

Aorist

Изведнџ силно ме заболя  
коремът.

Suddenly I got a sharp pain in my  
abdomen.

*(foregrounded story-line event)*

Imperfect

Мислех отначало, че ще ми  
мине...

I thought in the beginning that it  
would go away...

*(state, background information)*

Aorist

...и продължих да готвя.

...and I resumed cooking.

*(foregrounded single event, i.e. the "decision" to continue)*

Но не отмина...

But it didn't go away...

*(foregrounded story-line event, leading to conclusion of story)*

Simple past

...и трябваше да извикам бърза  
пóмощ.

...and I had to call the ambulance.

*(conclusion of story)*

**14.4. Indirect discourse**

Speech which is quoted directly is called "direct discourse", and that which is rephrased in the speaker's own words is called "indirect discourse". The relationship between the two is particularly important when one rephrases something that was said, thought or felt at some time in the past. Consider the contrast between direct discourse and indirect discourse in the following English sentences:

<u>Type of discourse</u>		<u>verb</u>
<i>direct</i>	She said, "I am going to the movies."	am going
<i>indirect</i>	She said that she was going to the movies.	was going
<i>direct</i>	You wrote, "We will arrive today by train."	will arrive
<i>indirect</i>	You wrote that you would arrive today by train.	would arrive
<i>direct</i>	I thought: "It will be nice to visit Bulgaria."	will be
<i>indirect</i>	I thought it would be nice to visit Bulgaria.	would be
<i>direct</i>	My only desire was: "I wish you were with us."	were
<i>indirect</i>	I wished only that you had been with us.	had been

The speaker is talking of something in the past, and therefore the verb of the main sentence is in the past tense ("said", "wrote", "was"). The verb of a direct quote remains exactly as it was at the moment it was spoken, written, thought or felt. When an English speaker reformulates this quote as indirect discourse, however, s/he must indicate the time distance by shifting the quoted verb into the past.

Bulgarian does *not* make this shift. All verbs in indirect discourse remain in the same tense as when originally spoken, written or thought. Compare the Bulgarian translations of the above sentences:

<u>Type of discourse</u>		<u>verb</u>
<i>direct</i>	Кáза: "Отíвам на кíно."	отíвам
<i>indirect</i>	Кáза, че отíва на кíно.	отíва
<i>direct</i>	Вíе напíсахте: "Ще пристíгнем днéc с влáк."	ще пристíгнем
<i>indirect</i>	Вíе напíсахте, че ще пристíгнете днéc с влáк.	ще пристíгнете
<i>direct</i>	Помíслих си: "Хúбаво ще е да посетím Бългáрия."	ще е
<i>indirect</i>	Помíслих си, че ще е хúбаво да посетím Бългáрия.	ще е
<i>direct</i>	Едíнственото ми желáние бéше: "Искам тí да си с нáс!"	си
<i>indirect</i>	Едíнственото ми желáние бéше тí да си с нáс.	си

Note that this requirement applies not only to neutral speech or thought, but also to wishes and desires. Thus, while most instances of indirect discourse occur after the conjunction **че**, some also occur after **да**.

It is necessary for speakers of English to pay particular attention to this rule. The shift of tenses is made so naturally (and unconsciously) in English that it will seem second nature to reproduce it in Bulgarian. It will take practice to catch all the instances where this English-based tendency must be overcome.

### 14.5. Subordinate clauses

A complex sentence is one in which two simple sentences (each with its own verb) are joined. When they are part of a single sentence, each of the simpler sentences is called a "clause". One, the main clause, stands alone, while the other, the subordinate clause, is joined to it by a conjunction.

Many such conjunctions are already familiar to the student. They are summarized here to illustrate their use in complex sentences.

**че** that

Зна́я, че в та́зи сладка́рница има хубав сладолед. I know that there is nice ice cream in that sweet-shop.

**ако** if

Ако вали́, няма да мо́жем да оти́дем на Вито́ша у́тре. If it rains, we won't be able to go to Vitosha tomorrow.

**докато** while

Дока́то ви́е два́мата прика́звахте, аз приго́твих вся́чко. While you two were chatting, I got everything ready.

**като** as, when

Ка́то вървяхме по у́лицата, то́й ми разка́зваше за фести́вала. As we walked down the street, he told me about the festival.

Ка́то живее́х у тях на кварта́ира, пла́щах висо́к на́ем. I paid a high rent when I lived in their apartment.

**ка́кто** as, like

Ще напра́вим то́чно ка́кто ни съве́твате. We will do exactly as you advise us.



щом since, as, if, as soon as

Щом влакът спира, слізат  
пътниците от него.

As soon as the train stops, the  
passengers get off.

Щом те боли гърлото, облечи  
се!

If your throat hurts, put something  
on!

когато when

Намерих го, когато се върнах от  
работа.

I found it when I came home from  
work.

There are also a number of conjunctions which are formed of two components. The most common of these are the following:

преди да before

Преди да тръгнем, ще ти се  
обадем.

I'll give you a call before we set out.

Преди да ми каже, че е от  
Америка, мислех, че е  
българка.

Before she told me she was from  
America, I thought she was  
Bulgarian.

след като after, once, on

След като взех лекарството, се  
почувствувах по-добре.

After I took the medicine, I felt  
better.

Ще ви се обадя, след като  
нещата се изяснят.

I'll give you a call once things get  
clarified.

без да without

Търсихме, търсихме, без да  
намерим нищо.

We looked and looked without  
finding anything.

Note that the English translation of "без да + verb" must use a gerundial form (e.g. "finding") as its object.

## EXERCISES

I. Put each sentence into the frame "По-рано..., ама вече не." ("Earlier..., but not any more").

1. Камен и Надка стават всеки ден в седем часа.
2. През лятото често вали.
3. Те ходят всяка седмица на Витоша.
4. Те искат да се запознаем.
5. Ангел винаги закъснява за работа.
6. Ние често играем тенис заедно.
7. Димитър всеки ден се обажда на майка си по телефона.

II. Rewrite in indirect discourse.

1. Старата жена пита: "Кой звъни?"
2. Петър се интересува: "Кой беше този човек с очилата? Видях го, като говореше с Таня."
3. Таня пожела на младоженците: "Бъдете щастливи!"
4. Гостите помолиха: "Може ли да се обадим по телефона?"
5. Надка казва: "Боли ме гърлото."
6. Димитър предлага на приятелите си: "Останете още малко с нас!"
7. Джули моли децата: "Не викайте толкова, ще събудите майка си!"

III. Fill in the blanks with one of the following conjunctions: ако, без да, докато, както, като, когато, преди да, че, щом.

1. \_\_\_\_\_ не ми кажеш всичко, няма да си тръгна.
2. Той си тръгна, \_\_\_\_\_ филмът свърши.
3. Те винаги се обаждат, \_\_\_\_\_ ще закъснат.
4. \_\_\_\_\_ не искаш, не идвай с нас.
5. Вечер \_\_\_\_\_ заспи, тя четя роман.
6. Той, \_\_\_\_\_ подозира, беше пълно копие на знаменития актьор.
7. \_\_\_\_\_ я видя, ще ѝ кажа.

**ADDITIONAL GRAMMAR NOTES****14.1a. The imperfect tense: form**

Formally, the imperfect tense is a mixture of the present and the aorist: it has the stem of the present and the endings of the aorist. Indeed, those features which are *different from* the aorist are precisely those which are *identical to* the present. This is seen especially clearly in verbs of type 4 and 7. Note also that while the aorist sometimes lacks a theme vowel, the imperfect always has one.

(type 4)

	<i>PRESENT</i>	<i>IMPERFECT</i>	<i>AORIST</i>
<i>1<sup>st</sup> plural</i>	взѐм-ем	взѐм-ех-ме	взѐ- хме

(type 4)

	<i>PRESENT</i>	<i>IMPERFECT</i>	<i>AORIST</i>
<i>1<sup>st</sup> plural</i>	чѹ-ем	чѹ-ех-ме	чѹ- хме

(type 7)

	<i>PRESENT</i>	<i>IMPERFECT</i>	<i>AORIST</i>
<i>1<sup>st</sup> plural</i>	живѐ-ем	живѐ-ех-ме	жив- яхме

For all but type 1 verbs, the imperfect theme vowel is the alternating vowel *-я-/-е-*. According to the basic rule, *-е-* appears when unstressed or when the following syllable contains a front vowel, and *-а-* appears elsewhere. In the case of the imperfect tense, two exceptions must be made to this rule.

The first concerns the 1<sup>st</sup> and 2<sup>nd</sup> plural endings *-хме, -хте*. Despite the fact that these endings contain a front vowel, the theme vowel preceding them continues to be *-а-* if it is stressed (*четя́хме, четя́хте*). Apparently the consonant *-х-* blocks the application of this rule.

The second concerns verbs whose imperfect stem ends in *-ч, -ж, -ш* or *-й*. According to the rule, *-е-* should appear in 2-3sg., and *-а-* should appear elsewhere. This rule is indeed observed in the forming the imperfect of these verbs. Many Bulgarians, however, use the theme vowel *-е-* in all imperfect forms of these verbs. Below are given both the variant forms and the regular forms:

(type 3)

	PRESENT	IMPERFECT	IMPERFECT <i>variant</i>	AORIST
1 <sup>st</sup> singular	мълч-а́	мълч-а́х	мълч-е́х	мълч-а́х
2 <sup>nd</sup> singular	мълч-и́ш	мълч-е́ше	мълч-е́ше	мълч-а́
3 <sup>rd</sup> singular	мълч-и́	мълч-е́ше	мълч-е́ше	мълч-а́
1 <sup>st</sup> plural	мълч-и́м	мълч-а́хме	мълч-е́хме	мълч-а́хме
2 <sup>nd</sup> plural	мълч-и́те	мълч-а́хте	мълч-е́хте	мълч-а́хте
3 <sup>rd</sup> plural	мълч-а́т	мълч-а́ха	мълч-е́ха	мълч-а́ха

Verbs in which this variant is commonly heard are държа́, сто́я, сека́ and the like. The apparent tendency is to increase the formal differentiation between aorist and imperfect.

#### 14.2a. Additional uses of the imperfect tense

The imperfective aspect is used to express simultaneity with another ongoing action. In contrast to the aorist, which signifies the sequential occurrence of past actions, the imperfect emphasizes the fact that both actions are past, and that neither is any more specified in time than the other. For example:

То́й гово́реше по телефо́на,  
а ти́ какво́ пра́веше?

What were you doing while he was  
talking on the phone?

То́й и́дваше у на́с, докато  
та́тко ти рабо́теше в  
мини́стерството.

He used to come by to see us when \*  
your father was working at the  
Ministry.

*\* during the time period when*

С на́с пъту́ваха два́ма  
амери́канци -- ня́ма да  
повя́рваш ко́лко хубаво  
гово́реха бълга́рски!

There were two Americans traveling  
with us -- you wouldn't believe  
how well they spoke \* Bulgarian!

*\* during the time of the traveling*

The imperfect can also be used to ask someone to repeat something which was said in the present tense. Here, the meaning remains "present", but the added information is that of politeness. The distancing effect of the past tense verb form acts to smooth over somehow the fact that communication was not achieved properly the first time around. This usage is also found in English.

Ка́к бе́ше не́говото и́ме?

What was his name?

[= What did you say his name was?]

Кога́ присти́гаше самоле́тът?

When was the plane due?

[= When did you say the plane was due?]

**14.3a. Contrast of aorist and imperfect tenses**

In the case of the verb *мога* “can, be able”, the difference between aorist and imperfect usages is particularly tricky. This is partly because English translations are almost completely unable to convey this difference, and partly because of the ambiguous meaning of the verb in its past tense form, “could”.

When the past tense of “can” refers to the fact of (in)ability, the contrast between aorist *можáх* and imperfect *мóжех* is similar to the contrast in other verbs. For example:

*aorist: fact of action*

Тя не можá да понесé обидата  
и се разплáка. She couldn't deal with the insult  
and burst into tears.

*imperfect: emphasis on duration of action*

Тя си отиде, защото не мóжеше  
пóвече да понáся обидите му. She left, because she could  
no longer bear his insults.

*aorist: fact of action*

-- Ти можá ли да видиш филма  
снóщи? “Did you manage to watch that film  
last night?”  
-- Не можáх. Мнóго бях уморén  
и си лéгнах рáно. “I didn't. I was very tired and went  
to bed early.”

*imperfect: emphasis on duration of action*

-- А аз случáйно го видях.  
Не мóжех да заспя и затова  
включих телевизора. “I just happened to watch it.  
I couldn't fall asleep  
and so turned on the TV.”

When the past tense of “can” refers to the possibility of an action, however, then the imperfect form *мóжех* means “could have (but didn't)”. This conditional usage of the imperfect will be treated in greater detail in Lessons 22 and 23.

Here is one example of this contrast:

*aorist: fact of action*

Не можáх да ти се обáдя,  
защото нýмах време. I wasn't able to call because I  
didn't have time.

*imperfect: possibility of action*

Мóжех да ти се обáдя, но не  
и́сках да те притеснявам. I could have called but I  
didn't want to disturb you.

**14.3b. Imperfect tense and imperfective aspect**

The names of the two simple past tenses (imperfect and aorist) and of the two aspects (imperfective and perfective) are even more similar in Bulgarian than they are in English. The chart below, given already in shortened form in Lesson 12, shows the Bulgarian names and their English equivalents. Recall that the literal meaning of the Bulgarian adjective **свършен** is “completed.”

Aspect (вид)		свършен <i>Perfective</i>		несвършен <i>Imperfective</i>	
Tense (време)	минало	свършено <i>Aorist</i>	минало	несвършено	<i>Imperfect</i>

Such a striking similarity in names seems to suggest a corresponding similarity in fact. It is important to be aware of this similarity, but also of the differences. The imperfect and aorist tenses, and imperfective and perfective aspects, are *not* interchangeable.

The aorist tense can be formed from both perfective and imperfective verbs. The meaning of the aorist is the fact of action in the past, and the meaning of aspect is the presence or absence of the idea of boundedness. One can think of the fact of past action in either bounded or unbounded terms: if it is past bounded action, the verb is perfective aorist (**той го направи**), and if it is past unbounded action, the verb is imperfective aorist (**тя прави нещо**). There is some overlap between the idea “specific point in past time” (aorist tense) and “bounded action” (perfective aspect), but the two categories are far from synonymous.

Similarly, the imperfect tense can be formed from both imperfective and perfective verbs. The meaning of the imperfect is “durative or habitual past action, the frame of a narrative” -- action not bound to any particular point in time. Here there is more overlap of meaning. Verbs which lack the general idea of boundedness (imperfective verbs) tend to occur more often in contexts which express the absence of temporal boundedness. Nevertheless, there are situations in which a bounded (perfective) verb can be used with the meaning “repeated or habitual past action”. These specific situations, which are conditioned by the presence of certain conjunctions, will be studied in Lesson 17.

Yet the terminological parallel noted above is neither coincidental nor illusory: there is a similarity between the two sorts of boundedness. That expressed by the opposition aorist vs. imperfect is concerned with a perception of past time, and that expressed by the opposition perfective vs. imperfective is concerned with a perception of the nature of verbal activity. The general idea of aspect is present in both, and it is not altogether wrong to say that both these oppositions are aspectual in nature. Indeed, some grammarians speak of “subordinate aspect” (that which is limited to the frame of past time) and “superordinate aspect” (that which is concerned with all verbal activity). While the student must learn both the forms and the meanings as

they are associated with these separate categories, s/he should also be aware of the underlying importance of aspect as an organizing principle of the Bulgarian verb system.

### 14.5a. Subordinate clauses

The compound conjunctions *преди да* and *след като* mean “before” and “after”, respectively. *Both* components of the conjunction must be present. This is particularly important to remember in the case of *преди да*, because it is possible for these two components to be separated from one another in the sentence. That is, the word order rule which requires the verb of a *да*-phrase to follow immediately after it supersedes the word order rule which keeps the two components of the conjunction together. Thus when the subject of the verb following *да* must be included, it comes *between* the conjunction and the *да*. For instance:

Тя трябва да пристигнеш,  
преди той да си легне.

You must get here before he goes  
to bed.

Special care must be taken not to confuse the conjunctions *преди да* “before” and *след като* “after” with the prepositions *преди* (*пред*) and *след*, which also mean “before” (“in front of”) and “after”, respectively. Each of the conjunctions contains two words, and must be followed by an entire verbal phrase, whereas each of the prepositions is a single word, which must be followed by a noun or pronoun.

conjunction преди да

Тя навярно ще пристигне  
преди той да дойде.

She'll probably arrive before he does.

vs.

preposition пред

Четиримата стоят пред блока.

The four of them are standing in  
front of the apartment building.

preposition преди

Трябва да дойдеш преди един.

You have to come before 1:00.

conjunction след като

След като пристигнеш, ще ни  
разкажеш всичко.

After you get here, you'll tell us  
everything.

vs.

preposition след

След яденето поднесоха кафе.

After dinner, they served coffee.

След пет години никой няма да  
си спомня за това.

At the end of five years, no one will  
remember that.

**14.6. Neuter nouns, continued**

Foreign words ending in *-и* and *-у* are treated as neuter nouns in Bulgarian. For example:

<i>singular</i> <i>indefinite</i>	<i>singular</i> <i>definite</i>	<i>plural</i> <i>indefinite</i>	<i>plural</i> <i>definite</i>	<i>(meaning)</i>
такси	таксита	таксите	такситата	taxi
меню	менюто	менюта	менютата	menu

A number of other “words” are considered to be neuter in gender. Among these are the spoken form of certain very common abbreviations. Note that in these instances the letters are spoken followed by the vowel *-e-* (and not the vowel *-ъ-*, as in the normal “naming” of a letter of the alphabet).

ГДР	(Германска демократическа република) DDR [the former East German republic]	>	гедере (то)
СДС	(Съюз на демократическите сили): UDF [Union of Democratic Forces] *	>	седесе (то)
БСП	(Българска социалистическа партия): BSP [Bulgarian Socialist Party] *	>	бесепе (то)

\* political parties within Bulgaria



Former Communist Party headquarters, downtown Sofia



## SAMPLE SENTENCES

1. Един баща се караше на синовете си. Обърна се към по-големия.  
 -- Защо тук е толкова мръсно? Какво прави вчера цял ден?  
 -- Мотях се.  
 -- А брат ти какво правеше?  
 -- Помогаше ми.
2. Той гледаше телевизия по цял ден, но този филм някак му се изплъзна.
3. Изкъпа се, облече се, изчисти си обувките и, тъкмо като си връзваше вратовръзката, телефонът иззвъня. Докато говореше по телефона, кафето му изкипя. Стана му ясно, че и днес няма да му върви.
4. Вчера видях Георги на улицата. Той вървеше под ръка с едно много хубаво момиче и му разказваше нещо смешно. Момичето го гледаше влюбено. Като свърши разказът, момичето се разсмя, а Георги го целуна.
5. Тогава те трудно живееха, а сега им е по-добре.
6. Той беше толкова уморен, че не можеше да държи очите си отворени.
7. Те можаха да направят превода без грешка.
8. Те можеха да направят превода и без грешка, ако внимаваха.
9. В България като кихнеш, ти казват "Наздраве!", а като се окъпеш -- "Честита баня!"
10. Директорът диктуваше бързо на секретарката си, като поглеждаше от време на време през прозореца.
11. Като пораснеш, ще станеш инженер.
12. Професорът съобщи, че изпитът по български език ще се проведе след три дни.
13. Попитах го от кога се страхува, но той не ми отговори.
14. Аз много се зарадвах, когато той ми каза, че утре пристига в София.
15. Ще ти се разсърдя, ако не й кажеш, че той се обажда всеки ден да пита за нея.
16. Без да я питат, каза, че отдавна знае за това, но пет пари не дава.

### **SENTENCES FOR TRANSLATION**

1. He told us he would arrive today, but he's not here yet. Are you sure you heard him correctly?
2. "Tell me again what happened last night. You were washing the dishes..."  
"I was washing the dishes, and thinking about my exam the next day, when I heard a loud sound. Did something fall, I wondered. I went into the next room to look. Nothing. Nadka was sitting there, playing with her dolls, dressing them and undressing them. I asked her whether she had heard anything. And then I saw the mirror on the floor, all in pieces."
3. While I was talking on the phone, someone came into the house and took our television set! What a terrible world this is.
4. "What did Milena write in her letter?"  
"She said she was sorry there had been no letter from her for so long, but that she was very busy at her new job, and that she would write again as soon as she could."
5. Don't forget to put the money into the envelope before you mail the letter. After the postman takes the letter, it will be too late.
6. She wanted to call you earlier, but didn't have your phone number. I'll give it to her as soon as I see her. I know that you'll understand without asking.
7. I think Peter is in love. Did you see him this morning? He was standing in front of Katia's house and gazing at her window. He stood there for more than an hour without moving! And I myself stood there for a full fifteen minutes before he noticed me.
8. We used to study much more than we do now. Last year, for instance, we studied three hours every night. We used to drink a lot more coffee than too.
9. My mother told me that when she was young she used to write poems. She would lie in bed and look at the moon, and then she would get up, take her pencil and notebook, and write down her thoughts.

**READING SELECTION**Новини

2 април

Здравей Пламене,

Имам за тебе една добра и една лоша новина. Ще започна с лошата: Помниш ли новия ми костюм? Сигурно го помниш, защото май беше единствен. Купих си го за вашата сватба. Нали кумът трябва да е представителен. Избихме го заедно с Лиляна повече от два часа. Въртах се пред огледалото и се оглеждах. Мислех, че ще го нося дълго, защото изглеждаше много здрав, но сега от него става само парцал. Ето как стана това.

Отивах на работа както обикновено, с велосипеда. Лиляна ме убеждаваше да не карам велосипеда с костюма. Убеждаваше ме, но не ме убедя. Имахме банкет в службата и исках да се издокарам. Движех се по обичайния си път. Знам го наизуст и мога да го мина със затворени очи. Всичко беше добре, но се появи онзи хлапак. Изглеждаше съвсем обикновено момче -- седеше на една пейка на тротоара и ядеше сандвич. Носеше фланелка с надпис "University of California - Berkeley" и шапка от вестник. Със свободната ръка си подпираше брадичката. Тъкмо минавах покрай него, когато хлапакът извика: "Чичко, задното ти колело се върти напред!" Изтръпнах от ужас. Погледнах надолу и назад. Найстина се въртеше напред. Докато мислех дали това е наред, велосипедът продължаваше напред -- и с двете колела -- право към кофата за боклук. Сега сакото е скъсано, а панталоните са целите в петна. Обърнах се, но хлапакът изчезваше зад ъгъла. Като че ли се смееше.

Добрата новина е, че спечелих от тотото. Знаеш какво е то -- в тази игра може да спечелиш, но обикновено губиш (или почти винаги губиш) пари, като познаваш числа. Казват, че най-сигурният начин е да сънуваш числата. Приготвих закуска за децата, когато съобщавах числата по радиото. Не вярвах на ушите си -- четири от шест. Тази игра я играех от четири-пет години, но досега все нямах късмет. Така се зарадвах, че пържените филийки на децата почти изгоряха. Може би ще има за нов костюм!

Какви новини при тебе? Добри или лоши?

Марин

**GLOSSARY**

актьор	actor	иззвънявам / иззвъня	ring [out]
банкѐт	banquet	изкипявам / изкипя	boil over
бѐз да	without ( <i>relative conjunction</i> )	изкъпвам се / изкъпя се	bathe, take a bath
боклѹк	rubbish, garbage	изплъзвам се / изплъзна се	slip out, slip through
бридж	bridge (card game)	изтрѣпвам / изтрѣпна	fall asleep (of a body part)
БСП [ <i>pron. бѐсепѐ</i> ]	BSP (Bulgarian Socialist Party)	изтрѣпвам от ѹжас	freeze with terror
в слѹжбата	at work	изчиствам / изчиства	clean up, clean out
велосипѐд	bicycle	изяснявам / изясня	clear up
включѹвам / включѹча (-иш)	include	имам си рѹбота	have things to do
влѹбен	in love	инженѐр	engineer
внимѹние	attention	като че ли	as if, apparently
внимѹниѐто му се	his attention	като че ли се	he appeared to be
притѹпи	wandered	смѐеше	laughing
внимѹтелен	attentive	квартира	apartment, quarters
вървя под ръка	walk arm in arm	кихам ( <i>or</i> кихвам) / кихна	sneeze
въртя се	turn around, rotate	колелѹ	wheel; bicycle
ГДР [ <i>pron. гѐдерѐ</i> ]	GDR (DDR, former East Germany)	костѹм	suit
гердан	necklace, collar	кѹфа	pail, bucket
германски	German	кѹфа за боклѹк	garbage can
гѹбя	lose	кѹм, -ѹт	godfather
двѹжа се (-иш)	move, go	кѹмѹ	godmother
демократѹчески	democratic	макар	at least
диктѹвам	dictate	макар че	although, even though
днѐс нѹма да ми	today's not going to	махам	wave
върви	be my day	минало несвър- шено време	imperfect tense
желѹние	wish, desire	министѐрство	ministry
завѹси от вас	it depends on you	мѹтам се ( <i>or</i> мѹтѹя се)	fool around
завѹси тѹй каквѹ ще	it depends what he	мустѹци ( <i>pl.</i> )	mustache
каже	will say	навѹрно	probably
завѹся	depend	надпис	inscription
зад ѹгѹла	around the corner	нанѹзвам / нанѹжа (-иш)	string together
задѐн	back, rear ( <i>adj.</i> )	напред	ahead, forwards
закъснѐние	delay; tardiness	напрежѐние	pressure, tension
запознавам / запознаѹя	acquaint [someone] with	научѹвам се / наѹча се (-иш)	learn
игра	play, game; playing	нѹжа (-иш)	thread, string together
изваждам / извадя	take/bring out, produce, extract	обида	insult
изгарѹям / изгорѹя	get burned, burn up	обичѹен	customary
издокарвам се / издокаравам се	dress up		

Четиринайсети урок / Lesson 14

облечен, -ена	dressed	ра́бота	work, business
обръщам се / обръна се	turn	ра́дио	radio
оглеждам / огледам	survey, examine	ра́зка	story
оглеждам се / огледам се	look at one's reflection	разпла́квам се / разпла́ча се (-еш)	burst into tears
окъпвам се / окъпя се (-еш)	bathe	разсмивам се / разсмея се	burst out laughing
от време на време	from time to time	разсърдвам се / разсърдя се	get angry
отминавам / отмина	pass by, leave behind	ра́но-ра́но	very early
отначало	at the beginning	репу́блика	republic
о́хлюв	snail shell		
		с ма́лко	a little late
панталон (or панталони)	pants	закъсне́ние	
па́ртия	party	СДС [pron. sédesé]	SDS (UDF, Union of Democratic Forces)
па́рцал	rag	ска́ла	rock, cliff
пéт пари не давам	I don't give a damn	скъ́сан	torn
петно́	spot	сла́б	weak, thin
пла́ж	beach	сладка́рница	sweet shop
по изненадите съм	[I] like surprises	сле́д като	after ( <i>relative conjunction</i> )
по-ра́но	earlier, before; "used to"	слу́жба	service, position
	have/take a look	софи́янец	Sofia resident
поглеждам / погледна	look! look over there!	софи́янка	Sofia resident (f.)
погледни́	suspect, be suspicious	социалисти́чески	socialist
подозирам / подозра́	prop up, support	спече́ля	win, gain, earn
подпи́рам / подпíра	[sit] with chin in hand	страху́вам се	fear, be afraid of
подпи́рам си	pick/guess a number	състо́я се	consist of; take place
бради́чката	carry off; sustain, endure	съю́з	union
позна́вам число́	bear/sustain an insult	такси́ ( <i>neuter</i> )	taxi
пона́сям / понеса́	ask, inquire	току́-що	just, now, barely
	grow up	то́то	lottery, pool
пона́сям оби́да	have the feeling, become aware	трито́ар	sidewalk
попи́твам / попи́там	appear	убежда́вам	try to convince
пора́ствам / порáсна	translation	убе́дя	convince
почу́вствавам	before ( <i>relative conjunction</i> )	у́жас	horror
появя́вам се / появя́ се	personable, distinguished	флане́лка	T-shirt
пре́вод	adventure	(or фане́лка)	
преди́ да	blunt, dull	фили́йка	little slice
предста́вителен	be conducted, be implemented	фили́я	slice
приключе́ние	exact replica	хлапа́к	kid
притъпя́вам / притъпя́	French toast	число́	number
провеждам се / проведа́ се		шно́рхел	snorkel
пъ́лно ко́пие		ъ́гъл ( <i>pl. ўгли</i> )	corner
пържени филийки			

## **CULTURAL COMMENTARY**

### **Geography: Black Sea and its coastal cities**

The majority of Bulgarians try to go to the Black Sea for a summer holiday. There are many fine beaches: swimming, sunbathing, snorkeling, gathering of shells, and other normal beach sports are part of the holiday. There are also interesting historical sites nearby, particularly the scattered remains of the Byzantine town of Nesebăr (Несебър). These ruins, of especial interest to medievalists, are located on a peninsula only accessible over a long causeway. Nesebăr is located on the Black Sea coast to the north of the port of Burgas (Бургас).

### **Customs and beliefs: kum; April Fool's Day**

Important family ceremonies such as weddings and christenings are marked not only by the appropriate ritual events but also by the adoption into the family of someone as "sponsor" of this event. The name given to this sponsor is "kum" (кѹм, feminine form кумá). The custom corresponds to that of the "godfather" and "godmother" for a newly-born child. In Bulgaria, this custom is extended to weddings as well. The person chosen as one's "kum" bears that relationship throughout life.

The custom of playing practical jokes on "April Fool's Day" (April 1<sup>st</sup>) is widespread in Bulgaria, as in the West.

### **City life: lottery; T-shirts**

The state lottery in Bulgaria is called "toto" (тото). One buys a lottery ticket with 49 numbers printed on it, and guesses which will be the chosen numbers. Up to six numbers are chosen: he who guesses all six correctly wins the largest prize; one also wins with five or four correct guesses. The correct numbers are announced on the radio and printed in the newspaper.

T-shirts and sweatshirts with the names of Western universities on them are very popular in Bulgaria. Those who wear them may possibly have had some connection with the university named; normally, however, there is no such connection.

### **Food and drink: "fried slices"**

"Fried slices" (пържени филийки) of bread are a popular breakfast, especially for children. The Western equivalent is French toast.



## LESSON 15

### **DIALOGUE**

#### Да отидем да хапнем някъде?

Джули: В Сoфия е по-прохладно, отколкото на морето. Почакайте ме малко. Искam да си извадя жилетката от чантата.

Веселин: Сoфия е по-високо.

Дейвид: Така ли? А мястото изглежда съвсем равнo.

Веселин: Софийското поле е на петстотин и петдесет метра над морското равнище.

Ангел: По-хубаво от морето няма, нали Дейвид? При нас в Балчик и климатът е мек, и риба може да си хване човек. През лятото от софийнци не можем да се разминем. И чужденци идват на почивка.

Веселин: Дейвид, Джули, да отидем да хапнем някъде, а? Аз страшно съм огладнъл.

Ангел: Хайде да отидем. Аз знам едно много хубаво място. Миналата година, като бях в командировка в Сoфия, всяка вечер ходехме там с приятели.

Дейвид: Ами добре, аз съм вече много гладен. И жаден! Има ли там на това място хубави напитки?

Джули: Аз ще ви помоля да ме извините, много съм уморена. Две нощи не съм спала и днес искам да си легна по-рано.

Веселин: Човек трябва да яде три пъти на ден! Днес сте на един сандвич с кашкавал цял ден. Не е достатъчно!

Джули: Имам едно кисело мляко в стаята и това ми стига. Аз не съм свикнала да ям по много.

Веселин: Както искате. Аз ще ви изпратя до вкъщи. Виждам, че чантата ви е тежка. Ангеле, вие с Дейвид може да идете тогава да вечеряте без нас.

Ангел: Да тръгнем заедно, можем да намерим някое място по пътя.

// Джули, Дейвид, Ангел и Веселин си взимат багажа и излизат от чакалнята на гарата. Тръгват към спирката на трамвая. //

Веселин: Довечера ще се обадя на Сашо да уредя среща за утре.

Дейвид: Кой е този Сашо?

Веселин: Професорът, бе! Александър Попов! Нали искахте да се срещнете с него?

Джули: Да, разбира се. Много мило от ваша страна, че ни помагате.

Веселин: Къде да ви се обадя да ви кажа кога ще е срещата?

Джули: Не помня телефонния номер наизуст, трябва да попитам хазайката.

Веселин: Ето го нашия трамвай! Хайде да се качваме.

## GLOSSARY

мек	soft, mild	разминавам се / размина се	pass each other, blow over
мeтър	meter		
мoрски	sea ( <i>adj.</i> )		
мoрското равнище	sea level	свиквам / свикна	get used to, grow accustomed to
над	above	софийското поле страна	the plain around Sofia part, side
от ваша страна	on your part	хазайка	landlady
поле	field, plain	хапвам / хапна	eat, have a bite
прохладен	cool	чакалня	waiting room
равен	even, flat		
равнище	level, standard, plain		



**GRAMMAR**

*The style of this grammar lesson is telegraphic. Its aim is to summarize the essence of Bulgarian grammar, both those elements which have been learned and those which are to come. Brief examples are given after general statements; for fuller descriptions, usage and further examples, the student should consult the relevant grammar sections in preceding lessons.*

*The grammar summary is followed by a section summarizing word order rules, and by sample paradigms of all verbal tenses and moods.*

**15.1. Review of noun forms****Gender**

Nouns in Bulgarian are masculine, feminine, or neuter. To a large extent, one can tell the gender from the form of the noun. Most masculine nouns end in a consonant (мъж, ден, студент), but some end in -а or -о; these all refer to human beings (баща, колега, дядо). Most feminine nouns end in -а (жена, книга, порция) but a number end in a consonant (нощ, сутрин, младост). Most neuter nouns end in -о or -е (мляко, море) but a few loan words end in -и or -у/-ю (такси, кенгуру, меню). The category "plural" is often listed together with gender in charts of grammatical endings ("masculine/feminine/neuter/plural").

**Plural**

The plural ending for practically all feminine nouns and most masculine nouns is -и. The plural ending for all neuters is [-а]. It is written -я in some instances (общезития, цветя, лозя) and is preceded by the sequences -ен- or -ет- in others (времена, момчета). Most masculine monosyllabic nouns have the plural ending -ове (влакове, плодове). A few have -е (мъже), -а (листа, братя), -ища (пътища, краища) or -и (дни, зъби).

**Definiteness**

Nouns are made definite by affixing the definite article. If the noun form ends in -о or -а, the article rhymes with it (селото, дядото; селата, бащата, листата, жената). Otherwise the form of the article is determined by gender.

Feminine nouns take -та. This article is never stressed when it follows a vowel, and always stressed when it follows a consonant (порцията, жената, but сутринта). Neuter nouns take -то (селото, детето). Plural nouns take -те (жените, мъжете, влаковете, нощите).

Masculine nouns take -ът (влакът, студентът) unless the final consonant is soft, in which case the article is -ят (лекарят, денят). Consonant softness is apparent only before endings beginning in the back vowels -а (definite -- конят, or quantified -- 2 коня) or -о (plural -- огньовете). Masculine definite nouns distinguish two cases in the singular, subject (студентът, лекарят, часът) and object (студента, лекаря, часа). The latter definite article, when stressed, is always pronounced [ъ].

### Quantification

Feminine and neuter nouns are in the plural after numbers or other quantifiers (двѣ кнѣги, двѣ селá, нѣколко нещá). Masculine nouns add the “quantified” ending, which is identical to the definite object form except for a possible difference in accent placement (двá часá vs. двá чáса). Masculine nouns signifying human beings are in the plural after numbers; special numbers are used for 2-6 (двáма студѣнти, трѣма мъжѣ, but дѣвет лѣкари).

### Accent

Feminine nouns almost always keep their accent on the same syllable. Neuter plurals ending in -а are always end stressed; if the singular is stem stressed, the accent will shift (сѣло / селá, мляко / млекá but месó / месá). Neuter plurals in -ета or -я do not shift stress. Some masculine nouns shift stress to the article but others do not (чáс, часѣт but влáк, влáкѣт); similarly, some masculine plurals in -ове stress the ending but others do not (градóвѣ, дъждóвѣ, but блóковѣ, вкúсовѣ). The quantified ending is never accented.

## 15.2. Review of pronoun forms

### Personal pronouns

Subject personal pronouns are stressed (áз, тѣ, тóй). Object personal pronouns are of two types, stressed (also called “long form”, мѣне, тѣбе, нѣго) and unstressed (also called “short form”). Short form object pronouns distinguish two cases, direct object (ме, те, го) and indirect object (ми, ти, му). Short form pronouns are clitics and follow strict word order rules. Long forms distinguish “direct object” from “indirect object” by the addition of a preposition (мѣне vs. на мѣне). In certain instances long form and short form pronouns are used together.

The category “short form pronoun” also includes the so-called reflexive particles се and си, which are frequently added to verbs. In possessive constructions, short form indirect object pronouns are either attached to nouns or used adjacent to the copula in predicate constructions. All these short forms are clitics, and obey strict word order rules. A synopsis of these rules is given in section 15.6.

### Demonstrative, interrogative, indefinite, negative and intensive pronouns

Demonstrative (тóзи, óнзи), interrogative (кóй), and descriptive interrogative (какѣв) pronouns change form to agree with the noun which is referred to. If no noun is present the default form for demonstratives and descriptive interrogatives is neuter but for the simple interrogative it is masculine (товá, каквó; but кóй). Interrogative pronouns of both sorts (as well as various adverbs) can be made indefinite or negative by prefixing нѣ- or нѣ- (нѣкóй, нѣкакѣв; нѣкóй, нѣкакѣв). They can be made relative by the addition of the particle -то, which will be learned in Lesson 17.

The intensifier pronoun сáм changes form to agree with the noun which is referred to (самá, самó, самѣ). There is no default form.

**Possessive pronouns**

Possessive pronouns change form to agree with the noun modified (мóй, мóя; твóй, твóя; нéгов, нéгова). They are sometimes called “long form possessives” to differentiate them from the short form indirect object pronouns used to indicate possession. They function as adjectives in that they can affix a definite article if the noun modified is definite (мóят бащá, твóята сестрá). The possessive interrogative чíй is declined in the same way; the use of its definite form in relative constructions will be learned in Lesson 17.

Both the long form and short form possessives use the so-called “reflexive” form (свóй, свóя; си) if the identity of “possessor” is equivalent to that of “subject of the sentence”.

**15.3. Review of adjectives**

Adjectives agree with the noun modified: the possible endings are masculine (нóв), feminine (нóва), neuter (нóво) or plural (нóви). Adjectives take definite or indefinite form depending on the definiteness of the noun they modify. When they modify a definite noun, they (and not the noun) carry the definite article marker (нóвият блóк, нóвата кьща, нóвото място, нóвите градовé). In the case of a definite masculine noun, adjectives also carry the mark which differentiates subject from object (млáдият студéнт [subject] vs. млáдия студéнт [object]). They can also appear in the definite form without a noun, in which case a noun is understood (мáлките [децá]).

Most masculine adjectives end in a consonant in the indefinite form (нóв, хубав). Some adjectives have -и in the masculine indefinite form (бългáрски, девéти, etc.). All masculine adjectives have -и- before the definite article (нóвият, хубавият [= нóв-и-ът, хубав-и-ът]).

**15.4. Review of numbers****Cardinal numbers**

The number for 1 doubles as the indefinite article; it has forms for all three genders and the plural (едíн, еднá, еднó, еднí). The number 2 has one form for masculine (двá) and another for neuter and feminine (двé). Other numbers have only a single form (трí, чéтири, пéт, etc.). The teens are formed by affixing -на́йсет (дванáйсет, тринáйсет, etc.) and the decades by adding -йсет or -десéт (трíйсет, четирíйсет, петдесéт, etc.). Compound numbers are formed by addition, with the conjunction и (двáйсет и трí).

Variant “personal” numbers exist from 2 to 6 (двáма, трíма, etc.). They are used when the quantified group includes at least one male person.

All cardinal numbers can take the definite article. The number 1 takes adjectival definite forms (едíният, еднáта, etc.). Numbers ending in -а take a rhyming article (двáта, двáмата), and all others take -те. For numbers 4 and above, this article is accented (четиритé, девéттé, осемдесеттé). Adding the conjunction и focuses on the group as an entirety (и двáмата, и двéте).

### Ordinal numbers

The ordinals for 1 and 2 are unrelated to the cardinals (първи, втори), those for 3 and 4 are similar (трети, четвърти), and those from 5 on are formed by adding -и to the cardinal (пéти, шéсти, сéдми, etc.). In rare instances the ordinal for 1 can appear without the final -и (as in за пръв път). Ordinals take the regular endings for adjectives, including the definite article (първият, първата, etc.)

## 15.5. Review of verbal forms

*Note: summary paradigms of all verbal forms are given in section 15.7.*

### Unity of individual verbs

Every verb is a unit, and can appear in all conjugational forms. The verb is composed of a prefix (such as в-, от-, раз-), a stem (such as -каз-, пис-), one or more suffixes (such as -в-, -ав-, -н-) and an ending. Endings are composed of a theme vowel (such as -е-, -и-) and one of the personal endings (such as -я, -м, -ме). Not every verb form has all these components.

Prefixes can change the meaning of the verb, but they do not change its conjugational forms. Once a verb form is known, all verbs formed from it by prefixation are conjugated in the same manner. A "simplex" verb is a verb without a prefix.

### Aspect

Most verbs exist in two separate forms, one of which carries the added meaning of "boundedness". The verb with the bounded meaning is called perfective, and the one without it is called imperfective. A number of verbs exist only in the imperfective form (съм, ймам). Most simplex imperfective verbs can be prefixed and thereby made perfective; when this happens an imperfective verb is created to make an aspect pair (пиша > о-пиша > о-пис-вам); this process is reviewed in Lesson 18. Some verbs are paired from the outset (връщам / върна or ставам / стана); a very few of these pairs can, via prefixation, yield a new aspect pair (о-ставам / о-стана).

Some prefixes carry a predictable meaning, and the system whereby these prefixes create verb "clusters" is known to linguists as *Aktionsarten*. This system is the topic of Lesson 26. The manner in which aspect pervades the Bulgarian verbal system, and its expression in a generalized past form, is the topic of Lesson 29.

### Tense

Verb tenses are simplex or compound. Simplex tenses are expressed in a single word (present, пиша; aorist, писах; imperfect пишех), and compound tenses are composed of auxiliary plus verb form (future, ще остана, няма да остана; past indefinite, останах съм). Compound tenses yet to be learned, and the lesson in which they are to be presented, comprise the past indefinite with transitive verbs (Lesson 16), the past anterior (Lesson 18), and several tenses connected with future forms (future in the past, Lesson 22; future anterior, future anterior in the past -- Lesson 23).

There are three conjugations in the present tense, identified by the three theme vowels (-а-, -и-, -е-). The 1<sup>st</sup> singular present is the dictionary form, and the conjugation type to which each verb belongs is largely predictable from this form.

The form of the aorist tense is only partially predictable from that of the present tense, and it is best to learn the two tenses together. There are nine types which govern the organization of simplex tenses (and, as it happens, of passive participles).

The future tense is formed by prefixing an unchanging particle to the present tense forms. Word order rules concerning clitic pronoun objects are slightly more complex with compound tenses.

### Mood

Verbal mood expresses the attitude of a speaker. Moods are also either simplex or compound. Simplex moods are the indicative and the imperative. The imperative (елá!, пиши́!, ви́ж!) is formed from both perfective and imperfective verbs and has two forms, a singular and a plural (ви́ж/ви́жете, кажи́/каже́те). The indicative covers all the nine tenses summarized above (some of which are simplex in form and others of which are complex).

Complex moods are yet to be learned; these are the renarrated (Lessons 24-25) and the conditional (Lesson 27-28).

### Participles

Participles are both verbal and nominal. They are formed from verbs and carry the idea of the verbal action, but they function like adjectives and change to agree with a particular noun or nominal idea.

Past active participles, also called "L-participles" (ми́нал, дошѣл, остáнал), are used attributively, predicatively, and in the formation of verbal tenses and moods (the past indefinite tense, the past and future anterior tenses, and the renarrated mood). These participles constitute the backbone of the Bulgarian tense-mood system. The aorist L-participle, formed from the aorist stem, is used in the majority of these tenses and moods. The imperfect L-participle, formed from the imperfect stem (Lesson 24), is used in the remainder.

Past passive participles (жéнен, познáт) will be learned in Lesson 17; summary paradigms are given below in 15.7. They are used as adjectives and in the passive verbal constructions which will be learned in Lesson 18.

Present active participles (слéдващ) are used primarily as adjectives; their formation will be learned in Lesson 23. The verbal noun (губене) and the verbal adverb (глéдайки) also express the idea of verbal activity. These unchanging forms will be learned in Lessons 19 and 23, respectively.

## 15.6. Word order rules

Examples of word order rules were given in Lessons 5 through 13. Below is a synopsis of these rules, followed by a list of the abbreviations used in them. The lesson number where the rule was introduced appears in the left margin.

**Rules**

- [5] *(x) + DIR + verb*  
*verb + DIR*  
*Cnj. + DIR + verb*  
*Neg. + DIR + verb*  
*verb + INT + DIR*  
*Neg. + DIR + INT + verb*  
*Neg. + verb + INT*

*predicate + COP*  
*Neg. + COP + predicate*  
*predicate + INT + COP*  
*Neg. + COP + INT + predicate*

- [6] *Part. + verb*  
*Part. + DIR + verb*

- [7] *any DIR can be replaced by IND*

- [8] *Fut. + DIR + verb*  
*neg. + Cnj. + DIR + verb*  
*Fut. + verb + INT*  
*Fut. + DIR + verb + INT*  
*neg. + INT + Cnj. + verb*  
*neg. + INT + Cnj. + DIR + verb*  
*neg. + INT + subject + Cnj. + verb*

*Fut. + DIR + verb + Cnj. + DIR + verb*  
*Fut. + verb + INT + Cnj. + DIR + verb*

- [9] *verb + IND + DIR*

*any IND or DIR can be replaced by IND + DIR sequence*

- [10] *subject + COP + IND + predicate*  
*subject + Neg. + COP + IND + predicate*  
*subject + IND + 3<sup>d</sup>COP + predicate*  
*subject + Neg. + IND + 3<sup>d</sup>COP + predicate*  
*subject + Neg. + COP + INT + IND + predicate*  
*subject + Neg. + INT + IND + 3<sup>d</sup>COP + predicate*

- [11] *direct obj. + (x) + Neg. + DIR + verb*  
*indirect obj. + (x) + Neg. + IND + verb*  
*Neg. + DIR + verb + direct obj.*  
*Neg. + IND + verb + indirect obj.*

*Neg. can be replaced by Fut. or Cnj. in the above*

[12] *direct obj. + (x) + DIR + verb + subject*  
*direct obj. + Neg. + DIR + verb + subject*  
*direct obj. + verb + INT + DIR + subject*

[13] *Neg. + IND + INT + DIR + verb*  
*Neg. + IND + INT + 3<sup>d</sup>COP + predicate*  
*Neg. + COP + INT + IND + predicate*

## Abbreviations

### CLITICS

always unstressed  
 cannot stand in initial position  
 must obey strict word order rules

<i>DIR</i>	direct object pronoun	ме те се го я ни ви ги
<i>IND</i>	indirect object pronoun	ми ти си му ѝ ни ви им
<i>INT</i>	interrogative particle	ли
<i>COP</i>	copula/auxiliary except 3 <sup>rd</sup> sg.	съм си сме сте са
<i>3<sup>d</sup>COP</i>	copula/auxiliary 3 <sup>rd</sup> sg.	е

### PARTICLES

unstressed  
 unchanging in form  
 must stand at head of clitic string  
 can be in initial position

<i>Cnj.</i>	subordinating/modal conjunction	да
<i>Neg.</i>	negative particle	не
<i>Fut.</i>	future particle	ще
<i>Part.</i>	hortative particle	я

### WORDS

fully stressed  
 changing in form  
 no normal word order restrictions

(x)	optional stressed word(s)	varied
<i>subject</i>	noun, pronoun	varied
<i>verb</i>	simplex or participle	varied
<i>predicate</i>	noun, adjective, phrase	varied
<i>direct obj.</i>	full form pronoun	мене тебе него нея нас вас тях
<i>indirect obj.</i>	preposition + pronoun	на + above
<i>neg.</i>	negative [+ <i>Cnj.</i> ]	няма

**15.7. Sample verbal paradigms**

**SIMPLEX TENSES**

**1 Present**

*a-conjugation*

*и-conjugation*

*e-conjugation*

1 <sup>st</sup> singular	гледам	отв́арям	ви́дя	държа́	пи́я	чета́
2 <sup>nd</sup> singular	гледаш	отв́аряш	ви́диш	държи́ш	пи́еш	чете́ш
3 <sup>rd</sup> singular	гледа	отв́аря	ви́ди	държи́	пи́е	чете́
1 <sup>st</sup> plural	гледаме	отв́аряме	ви́дим	държи́м	пи́ем	чете́м
2 <sup>nd</sup> plural	гледа́те	отв́аря́те	ви́дите	държи́те	пи́ете	чете́те
3 <sup>rd</sup> plural	гледа́т	отв́аря́т	ви́дят	държа́т	пи́ят	чета́т

**2 Aorist**

*a-conjugation*

*и-conjugation*

1 <sup>st</sup> singular	гледах	отв́арях	но́сих	видя́х	държа́х
2 <sup>nd</sup> singular	гледа	отв́аря	но́си	видя́	държа́
3 <sup>rd</sup> singular	гледа	отв́аря	но́си	видя́	държа́
1 <sup>st</sup> plural	гледахме	отв́аряхме	но́сихме	видя́хме	държа́хме
2 <sup>nd</sup> plural	гледахте	отв́аряхте	но́сихте	видя́хте	държа́хте
3 <sup>rd</sup> plural	гледаха	отв́аряха	но́сиха	видя́ха	държа́ха

*e-conjugation*

1 <sup>st</sup> singular	пи́х	че́тох	в́рнах	живя́х	пи́сах	пра́х
2 <sup>nd</sup> singular	пи́	че́те	в́рна	живя́	пи́са	пра́
3 <sup>rd</sup> singular	пи́	че́те	в́рна	живя́	пи́са	пра́
1 <sup>st</sup> plural	пи́хме	че́тохме	в́рнахме	живя́хме	пи́сахме	пра́хме
2 <sup>nd</sup> plural	пи́хте	че́тохте	в́рнахте	живя́хте	пи́сахте	пра́хте
3 <sup>rd</sup> plural	пи́ха	че́тоха	в́рнаха	живя́ха	пи́саха	пра́ха

**3 Imperfect**

*a-conjugation*

*и-conjugation*

*e-conjugation*

1 <sup>st</sup> singular	гледах	отв́арях	но́сех	държа́х	пи́ших	четя́х
2 <sup>nd</sup> singular	гледаше	отв́аряше	но́сеше	държе́ше	пи́шеше	чете́ше
3 <sup>rd</sup> singular	гледаше	отв́аряше	но́сеше	държе́ше	пи́шеше	чете́ше
1 <sup>st</sup> plural	гледахме	отв́аряхме	но́сехме	държа́хме	пи́шихме	четя́хме
2 <sup>nd</sup> plural	гледахте	отв́аряхте	но́сехте	държа́хте	пи́шихте	четя́хте
3 <sup>rd</sup> plural	гледаха	отв́аряха	но́сеха	държа́ха	пи́шиха	четя́ха

All these tenses are negated by placing не before the verb form.



## COMPOUND TENSES

4

### Future affirmative

	a-conjugation	и-conjugation	e-conjugation
1 <sup>st</sup> singular	ще глѣдам	ще видя	ще четá
2 <sup>nd</sup> singular	ще глѣдаш	ще видиш	ще четéш
3 <sup>rd</sup> singular	ще глѣда	ще види	ще четé
1 <sup>st</sup> plural	ще глѣдаме	ще видим	ще четém
2 <sup>nd</sup> plural	ще глѣдате	ще видите	ще четéте
3 <sup>rd</sup> plural	ще глѣдат	ще видят	ще четáт

### Future negative

	a-conjugation	и-conjugation	e-conjugation
1 <sup>st</sup> singular	няма да глѣдам	няма да видя	няма да четá
2 <sup>nd</sup> singular	няма да глѣдаш	няма да видиш	няма да четéш
3 <sup>rd</sup> singular	няма да глѣда	няма да види	няма да четé
1 <sup>st</sup> plural	няма да глѣдаме	няма да видим	няма да четém
2 <sup>nd</sup> plural	няма да глѣдате	няма да видите	няма да четéте
3 <sup>rd</sup> plural	няма да глѣдат	няма да видят	няма да четáт

5

### Past indefinite affirmative

	a-conjugation	и-conjugation	e-conjugation
1 <sup>st</sup> singular	глѣдал съм	нóсил съм    видял съм	прáл съм    чéл съм
2 <sup>nd</sup> singular	глѣдал си	нóсил си    видял си	прáл си    чéл си
3 <sup>rd</sup> singular	глѣдал е	нóсил е    видял е	прáл е    чéл е
1 <sup>st</sup> plural	глѣдали сме	нóсили сме    видѣли сме	прáли сме    чéли сме
2 <sup>nd</sup> plural	глѣдали сте	нóсили сте    видѣли сте	прáли сте    чéли сте
3 <sup>rd</sup> plural	глѣдали са	нóсили са    видѣли са	прáли са    чéли са

### Past indefinite negative

	a-conjugation	и-conjugation	e-conjugation
1 <sup>st</sup> singular	не съм глѣдал	не съм нóсил	не съм чéл
2 <sup>nd</sup> singular	не си глѣдал	не си нóсил	не си чéл
3 <sup>rd</sup> singular	не é глѣдал	не é нóсил	не é чéл
1 <sup>st</sup> plural	не сме глѣдали	не сме нóсили	не сме чéли
2 <sup>nd</sup> plural	не сте глѣдали	не сте нóсили	не сте чéли
3 <sup>rd</sup> plural	не са глѣдали	не са нóсили	не са чéли

Singular forms of the participle change according to the gender of the subject; глѣдала съм (не съм глѣдала), нóсила съм (не съм нóсила), видяла съм (не съм видяла), прáла съм (не съм прáла), чéла съм (не съм чéла), etc. are used if the subject is feminine.

6

**Past anterior**

*a-conjugation*

*и-conjugation*

*e-conjugation*

<i>1<sup>st</sup> singular</i>	бях гледал	бях нѳсил	бях видял	бях чѳл
<i>2<sup>nd</sup> singular</i>	бѳше гледал	бѳше нѳсил	бѳше видял	бѳше чѳл
<i>3<sup>rd</sup> singular</i>	бѳше гледал	бѳше нѳсил	бѳше видял	бѳше чѳл
<i>1<sup>st</sup> plural</i>	бяхме гледали	бяхме нѳсили	бяхме видѳли	бяхме чѳли
<i>2<sup>nd</sup> plural</i>	бяхте гледали	бяхте нѳсили	бяхте видѳли	бяхте чѳли
<i>3<sup>rd</sup> plural</i>	бяха гледали	бяха нѳсили	бяха видѳли	бяха чѳли

19 2180

Singular forms of the participle change according to the gender of the subject; бях гледала, бях нѳсила, бях видяла, бях чѳла, etc. are used if the subject is feminine. The negative is formed by placing не before the entire form.

7

**Future anterior affirmative**

*a-conjugation*

*и-conjugation*

*e-conjugation*

<i>1<sup>st</sup> singular</i>	ще съм гледал	ще съм нѳсил	ще съм чѳл
<i>2<sup>nd</sup> singular</i>	ще си гледал	ще си нѳсил	ще си чѳл
<i>3<sup>rd</sup> singular</i>	ще е гледал	ще е нѳсил	ще е чѳл
<i>1<sup>st</sup> plural</i>	ще сме гледали	ще сме нѳсили	ще сме чѳли
<i>2<sup>nd</sup> plural</i>	ще сте гледали	ще сте нѳсили	ще сте чѳли
<i>3<sup>rd</sup> plural</i>	ще са гледали	ще са нѳсили	ще са чѳли

22 2180

28

**Future anterior negative**

*a-conjugation*

*и-conjugation*

*e-conjugation*

<i>1<sup>st</sup> singular</i>	няма да съм гледал	няма да съм нѳсил	няма да съм чѳл
<i>2<sup>nd</sup> singular</i>	няма да си гледал	няма да си нѳсил	няма да си чѳл
<i>3<sup>rd</sup> singular</i>	няма да е гледал	няма да е нѳсил	няма да е чѳл
<i>1<sup>st</sup> plural</i>	няма да сме гледали	няма да сме нѳсили	няма да сме чѳли
<i>2<sup>nd</sup> plural</i>	няма да сте гледали	няма да сте нѳсили	няма да сте чѳли
<i>3<sup>rd</sup> plural</i>	няма да са гледали	няма да са нѳсили	няма да са чѳли

Singular forms of the participle change according to the gender of the subject; ще (няма да) съм гледала, ще (няма да) съм нѳсила, ще (няма да) съм чѳла, etc. are used if the subject is feminine.

8

**Future in the past affirmative**

*a-conjugation*

*и-conjugation*

*e-conjugation*

<i>1<sup>st</sup> singular</i>	щях да гледам	щях да нѳся	щях да четá
<i>2<sup>nd</sup> singular</i>	щѳше да гледаш	щѳше да нѳсиш	щѳше да четѳш
<i>3<sup>rd</sup> singular</i>	щѳше да гледа	щѳше да нѳси	щѳше да четѳ
<i>1<sup>st</sup> plural</i>	щяхме да гледаме	щяхме да нѳсим	щяхме да четѳм
<i>2<sup>nd</sup> plural</i>	щяхте да гледате	щяхте да нѳсите	щяхте да четѳте
<i>3<sup>rd</sup> plural</i>	щяха да гледат	щяха да нѳсят	щяха да четáт

22 2180

**Future in the past negative**

	<i>a-conjugation</i>	<i>и-conjugation</i>	<i>e-conjugation</i>
<i>1<sup>st</sup> singular</i>	ня́маше да глѣдам	ня́маше да но́ся	ня́маше да четá
<i>2<sup>nd</sup> singular</i>	ня́маше да глѣдаш	ня́маше да но́сиш	ня́маше да четéш
<i>3<sup>rd</sup> singular</i>	ня́маше да глѣда	ня́маше да но́си	ня́маше да четé
<i>1<sup>st</sup> plural</i>	ня́маше да глѣдаме	ня́маше да но́сим	ня́маше да четéм
<i>2<sup>nd</sup> plural</i>	ня́маше да глѣдате	ня́маше да но́сите	ня́маше да четéте
<i>3<sup>rd</sup> plural</i>	ня́маше да глѣдат	ня́маше да но́сят	ня́маше да четáт

9 **Future anterior in the past affirmative**

	<i>a-conjugation</i>	<i>и-conjugation</i>	<i>e-conjugation</i>
9/18'0 <i>1<sup>st</sup> singular</i>	щя́х да съ́м глѣдал	щя́х да съ́м но́сил	щя́х да съ́м чѣл
<i>2<sup>nd</sup> singular</i>	щѣше да си глѣдал	щѣше да си но́сил	щѣше да си чѣл
23 <i>3<sup>rd</sup> singular</i>	щѣше да е глѣдал	щѣше да е но́сил	щѣше да е чѣл
<i>1<sup>st</sup> plural</i>	щя́хме да сме глѣдали	щя́хме да сме но́сили	щя́хме да сме чѣли
<i>2<sup>nd</sup> plural</i>	щя́хте да сте глѣдали	щя́хте да сте но́сили	щя́хте да сте чѣли
<i>3<sup>rd</sup> plural</i>	щя́ха да са глѣдали	щя́ха да са но́сили	щя́ха да са чѣли

**Future anterior in the past negative**

	<i>и-conjugation</i>	<i>e-conjugation</i>
<i>1<sup>st</sup> singular</i>	ня́маше да съ́м но́сил	ня́маше да съ́м чѣл
<i>2<sup>nd</sup> singular</i>	ня́маше да си но́сил	ня́маше да си чѣл
<i>3<sup>rd</sup> singular</i>	ня́маше да е но́сил	ня́маше да е чѣл
<i>1<sup>st</sup> plural</i>	ня́маше да сме но́сили	ня́маше да сме чѣли
<i>2<sup>nd</sup> plural</i>	ня́маше да сте но́сили	ня́маше да сте чѣли
<i>3<sup>rd</sup> plural</i>	ня́маше да са но́сили	ня́маше да са чѣли

Singular forms of the participle change according to the gender of the subject; щя́х/ня́маше да съ́м но́сила, щя́х/ня́маше да съ́м чѣла, etc. are used if the subject is feminine.

**MOODS**

**Indicative:** all the paradigms given above.

23 7/18'0

40 **Imperative**

	<i>type 1</i>		<i>type 2</i>		<i>irregular</i>	
7/18'0 <i>singular</i>	чети́	носи́	глѣдай	бро́й	ви́ж	влѣз
13,4 <i>plural</i>	четѣ́те	носѣ́те	глѣда́йте	бро́йте	ви́жете	влѣ́зте

11 **Conditional**

	a-conjugation	и-conjugation		e-conjugation
78'e 28, 27 1 <sup>st</sup> singular	бѣх глѣдал	бѣх нѣсил	бѣх видѣл	бѣх чѣл
2 <sup>nd</sup> singular	бѣ глѣдал	бѣ нѣсил	бѣ видѣл	бѣ чѣл
3 <sup>rd</sup> singular	бѣ глѣдал	бѣ нѣсил	бѣ видѣл	бѣ чѣл
1 <sup>st</sup> plural	бѣхмѣ глѣдали	бѣхмѣ нѣсили	бѣхмѣ видѣли	бѣхмѣ чѣли
2 <sup>nd</sup> plural	бѣхтѣ глѣдали	бѣхтѣ нѣсили	бѣхтѣ видѣли	бѣхтѣ чѣли
3 <sup>rd</sup> plural	бѣха глѣдали	бѣха нѣсили	бѣха видѣли	бѣха чѣли

Singular forms of the participle change according to the gender of the subject; бѣх глѣдала, бѣх нѣсила, бѣх видѣла, бѣх чѣла, etc. are used if the subject is feminine. The negative is formed by placing не before the entire form.

78'e  
25, 24  
29  
12 **Renarrated**

The form of the renarrated mood depends on the tense which is being renarrated.

**Present/imperfect affirmative renarrated**

	a-conjugation	и-conjugation	e-conjugation
24 78'e 29 1 <sup>st</sup> singular	глѣдал сѣм	нѣсел сѣм	четѣл сѣм
2 <sup>nd</sup> singular	глѣдал си	нѣсел си	четѣл си
3 <sup>rd</sup> singular	глѣдал	нѣсел	четѣл
1 <sup>st</sup> plural	глѣдали смѣ	нѣсели смѣ	четѣли смѣ
2 <sup>nd</sup> plural	глѣдали стѣ	нѣсели стѣ	четѣли стѣ
3 <sup>rd</sup> plural	глѣдали	нѣсели	четѣли

**Present/imperfect negative renarrated**

	a-conjugation	и-conjugation	e-conjugation
1 <sup>st</sup> singular	не сѣм глѣдал	не сѣм нѣсел	не сѣм четѣл
2 <sup>nd</sup> singular	не си глѣдал	не си нѣсел	не си четѣл
3 <sup>rd</sup> singular	не глѣдал	не нѣсел	не четѣл
1 <sup>st</sup> plural	не смѣ глѣдали	не смѣ нѣсели	не смѣ четѣли
2 <sup>nd</sup> plural	не стѣ глѣдали	не стѣ нѣсели	не стѣ четѣли
3 <sup>rd</sup> plural	не глѣдали	не нѣсели	не четѣли

Singular forms of the participle change according to the gender of the subject; глѣдала сѣм (не сѣм глѣдала), нѣсела сѣм (не сѣм нѣсела), четѣла сѣм (не сѣм четѣла), etc. are used if the subject is feminine.

13 Future/future in the past affirmative renarrated

	a-conjugation	и-conjugation	e-conjugation
7180 1 <sup>st</sup> singular	щя́л съ́м да гле́дам	щя́л съ́м да но́ся	щя́л съ́м да четá
2 <sup>nd</sup> singular	щя́л си да гле́даш	щя́л си да но́сиш	щя́л си да четéш
24 3 <sup>rd</sup> singular	щя́л да гле́да	щя́л да но́си	щя́л да четé
1 <sup>st</sup> plural	щéли сме да гле́даме	щéли сме да но́сим	щéли сме да четéм
2 <sup>nd</sup> plural	щéли сте да гле́дате	щéли сте да но́сите	щéли сте да четéте
3 <sup>rd</sup> plural	щéли да гле́дат	щéли да но́сят	щéли да четáт

Singular forms of the participle change according to the gender of the subject; щя́ла съ́м да гле́дам, щя́ла съ́м да но́ся, щя́ла съ́м да четá, etc. are used if the subject is feminine.

Future/future in the past negative renarrated

	a-conjugation	и-conjugation	e-conjugation
1 <sup>st</sup> singular	ня́мало да гле́дам	ня́мало да но́ся	ня́мало да четá
2 <sup>nd</sup> singular	ня́мало да гле́даш	ня́мало да но́сиш	ня́мало да четéш
3 <sup>rd</sup> singular	ня́мало да гле́да	ня́мало да но́си	ня́мало да четé
1 <sup>st</sup> plural	ня́мало да гле́даме	ня́мало да но́сим	ня́мало да четéм
2 <sup>nd</sup> plural	ня́мало да гле́дате	ня́мало да но́сите	ня́мало да четéте
3 <sup>rd</sup> plural	ня́мало да гле́дат	ня́мало да но́сят	ня́мало да четáт

14 Future anterior/future anterior in the past affirmative renarrated

	и-conjugation	e-conjugation
7180 1 <sup>st</sup> singular	щя́л съ́м да съ́м но́сил	щя́л съ́м да съ́м чéл
2 <sup>nd</sup> singular	щя́л си да си но́сил	щя́л си да си чéл
3 <sup>rd</sup> singular	щя́л да е но́сил	щя́л да е чéл
25 1 <sup>st</sup> plural	щéли сме да сме но́сили	щéли сме да сме чéли
2 <sup>nd</sup> plural	щéли сте да сте но́сили	щéли сте да сте чéли
3 <sup>rd</sup> plural	щéли да са но́сили	щéли да са чéли

Future anterior/future anterior in the past negative renarrated

	и-conjugation	e-conjugation
1 <sup>st</sup> singular	ня́мало да съ́м но́сил	ня́мало да съ́м чéл
2 <sup>nd</sup> singular	ня́мало да си но́сил	ня́мало да си чéл
3 <sup>rd</sup> singular	ня́мало да е но́сил	ня́мало да е чéл
1 <sup>st</sup> plural	ня́мало да сме но́сили	ня́мало да сме чéли
2 <sup>nd</sup> plural	ня́мало да сте но́сили	ня́мало да сте чéли
3 <sup>rd</sup> plural	ня́мало да са но́сили	ня́мало да са чéли

Singular forms of the participle change according to the gender of the subject; щя́ла съ́м да съ́м гле́дала (ня́мало да съ́м гле́дала), щя́ла съ́м да съ́м но́сила (ня́мало да съ́м но́сила), щя́ла съ́м да съ́м чéла (ня́мало да съ́м чéла), etc. are used if the subject is feminine.

15 Past indefinite/past anterior affirmative renarrated

25 218'e

	a-conjugation	и-conjugation	e-conjugation
1 <sup>st</sup> singular	бѣл съм глѣдал	бѣл съм нѣсил	бѣл съм чѣл
2 <sup>nd</sup> singular	бѣл си глѣдал	бѣл си нѣсил	бѣл си чѣл
3 <sup>rd</sup> singular	бѣл глѣдал	бѣл нѣсил	бѣл чѣл
1 <sup>st</sup> plural	бѣли сме глѣдали	бѣли сме нѣсили	бѣли сме чѣли
2 <sup>nd</sup> plural	бѣли сте глѣдали	бѣли сте нѣсили	бѣли сте чѣли
3 <sup>rd</sup> plural	бѣли глѣдали	бѣли нѣсили	бѣли чѣли

Past indefinite/past anterior negative renarrated

	a-conjugation	и-conjugation	e-conjugation
1 <sup>st</sup> singular	не съм бѣл глѣдал	не съм бѣл нѣсил	не съм бѣл чѣл
2 <sup>nd</sup> singular	не си бѣл глѣдал	не си бѣл нѣсил	не си бѣл чѣл
3 <sup>rd</sup> singular	не бѣл глѣдал	не бѣл нѣсил	не бѣл чѣл
1 <sup>st</sup> plural	не сме бѣли глѣдали	не сме бѣли нѣсили	не сме бѣли чѣли
2 <sup>nd</sup> plural	не сте бѣли глѣдали	не сте бѣли нѣсили	не сте бѣли чѣли
3 <sup>rd</sup> plural	не бѣли глѣдали	не бѣли нѣсили	не бѣли чѣли

Singular forms of the participle change according to the gender of the subject; бѣла съм глѣдала (не съм бѣла глѣдала), бѣла съм нѣсила (не съм бѣла нѣсила), бѣла съм чѣла (не съм бѣла чѣла), etc. are used if the subject is feminine.

16 Aorist affirmative renarrated

24 218'e  
29

	a-conjugation	и-conjugation	e-conjugation
1 <sup>st</sup> singular	глѣдал съм	нѣсил съм видял съм	прал съм чѣл съм
2 <sup>nd</sup> singular	глѣдал си	нѣсил си видял си	прал си чѣл си
3 <sup>rd</sup> singular	глѣдал	нѣсил видял	прал чѣл
1 <sup>st</sup> plural	глѣдали сме	нѣсили сме видѣли сме	прали сме чѣли сме
2 <sup>nd</sup> plural	глѣдали сте	нѣсили сте видѣли сте	прали сте чѣли сте
3 <sup>rd</sup> plural	глѣдали	нѣсили видѣли	прали чѣли

Aorist negative renarrated

	a-conjugation	и-conjugation	e-conjugation
1 <sup>st</sup> singular	не съм глѣдал	не съм нѣсил	не съм чѣл
2 <sup>nd</sup> singular	не си глѣдал	не си нѣсил	не си чѣл
3 <sup>rd</sup> singular	не глѣдал	не нѣсил	не чѣл
1 <sup>st</sup> plural	не сме глѣдали	не сме нѣсили	не сме чѣли
2 <sup>nd</sup> plural	не сте глѣдали	не сте нѣсили	не сте чѣли
3 <sup>rd</sup> plural	не глѣдали	не нѣсили	не чѣли

Singular forms of the participle change according to the gender of the subject; глѣдала съм (не съм глѣдала), нѣсила съм (не съм нѣсила), видяла съм (не съм видяла), прала съм (не съм прала), чѣла съм (не съм чѣла), etc. are used if the subject is feminine.

## TENSE / MOOD neutralization

### Generalized past (perfective)

718'6

29

	a-conjugation	и-conjugation	e-conjugation
1 <sup>st</sup> singular	гледал съм	носил съм	чёл съм
2 <sup>nd</sup> singular	гледал си	носил си	чёл си
3 <sup>rd</sup> singular	гледал е	носил е	чёл е
1 <sup>st</sup> plural	гледали сме	носили сме	чели сме
2 <sup>nd</sup> plural	гледали сте	носили сте	чели сте
3 <sup>rd</sup> plural	гледали са	носили са	чели са

### Generalized past (imperfective)

	a-conjugation	и-conjugation	e-conjugation
1 <sup>st</sup> singular	гледал съм	носел съм	четял съм
2 <sup>nd</sup> singular	гледал си	носел си	четял си
3 <sup>rd</sup> singular	гледал е	носел е	четял е
1 <sup>st</sup> plural	гледали сме	носели сме	четели сме
2 <sup>nd</sup> plural	гледали сте	носели сте	четели сте
3 <sup>rd</sup> plural	гледали са	носели са	четели са

Singular forms of the participle change according to the gender of the subject; гледала съм (не съм гледала), носила/носела съм (не съм носила/носела), чела/четяла съм (не съм чела/четяла), etc. are used if the subject is feminine.

## PARTICIPLES AND OTHER FORMS

### 17 Past active participle - aorist stem

	a-conjugation			и-conjugation		
masc. singular	гледал	отв́арял	носил	видял	държа́л	
fem. singular	гледала	отв́аряла	носила	видя́ла	държа́ла	
neut. singular	гледало	отв́аряло	носило	видя́ло	държа́ло	
plural	гледали	отв́аряли	носили	виде́ли	държа́ли	

	e-conjugation					
masc. singular	пи́л	чёл	в́рнал	живя́л	пи́сал	пра́л
fem. singular	пи́ла	чела	в́рнала	живя́ла	пи́сала	пра́ла
neut. singular	пи́ло	чело	в́рнало	живя́ло	пи́сало	пра́ло
plural	пи́ли	чели	в́рнали	живе́ли	пи́сали	пра́ли

18 Past active participle - imperfect stem

	a-conjugation	и-conjugation	e-conjugation
2280 masc. singular	гледал	отв́арял	но́сел държа́л
23 fem. singular	гледала	отв́аряла	но́села държа́ла
neut. singular	гледало	отв́аряло	но́село държа́ло
plural	гледали	отв́аряли	но́сели държе́ли
			пи́шел четя́л
			пи́шела четя́ла
			пи́шело четя́ло
			пи́шели четя́ли

19 Past passive participle

	a-conjugation	и-conjugation	e-conjugation
17 2280 masc. singular	гле́дан	отв́арян	но́сен
fem. singular	гле́дана	отв́аряна	но́сена
23, 19 neut. singular	гле́дано	отв́аряно	но́сено
plural	гле́дани	отв́аряни	но́сени
			же́нен държа́н
			же́нена държа́на
			же́нено държа́но
			же́нени държа́ни
			пи́сан пра́н
			пи́сана пра́на
			пи́сано пра́но
			пи́сани пра́ни

20 Present active participle

	a-conjugation	и-conjugation	e-conjugation
2280 masc. singular	сле́дващ	но́сец	пи́шец
fem. singular	сле́дваща	но́сеца	пи́шеца
23 neut. singular	сле́дващо	но́сецо	пи́шецо
plural	сле́дващи	но́сеци	пи́шеци

21 Verbal adverb

	a-conjugation	и-conjugation	e-conjugation
23 2280	гле́дайки	но́се́йки	четя́йки

22 Verbal noun

	a-conjugation	и-conjugation	e-conjugation
20 2280	гле́дане	но́сене	че́тене пи́сане





# CUMULATIVE GLOSSARY

(PART 1)

## Bulgarian - English

1823

The following glossary contains all the Bulgarian words used in the first fifteen lessons of *Intensive Bulgarian*. Each entry is indexed to the lesson where the word or phrase first appeared. Most idioms or phrases are fully cross-referenced; for instance, the phrase *има́м ну́жда от* "need, have need of" is glossed under *има́м*, *ну́жда* and *от*.

All entries are accented. Accentual doublets are given where they are mentioned in all major dictionaries (such as *чѐло* or *чѐло́*); other accentual variants are not noted. Accepted accentual variations in the aorist and L-participle of unprefixated verbs are not noted, either in glossaries or in textual usage. Stress shifts onto the masculine definite article are noted: *ди́м*, *-ѓ́т*.

Plural forms for nouns are given only when not predictable from grammar rules presented in the lessons. Thus, only plural forms in *-ове* where either ending syllable is stressed, plurals in *-и* of masculine monosyllables, feminine plural forms with shifted stress, or unpredictable neuter plural forms are specifically noted. Gender is noted only when not predictable: feminine nouns in a consonant other than in *-ост* are given with the article (*вѐчер*, *-та́*) and neuter nouns ending in other than *-о* or *-е* are given with the gender specified: *меню́* (*neuter*).

Adjectives are given in the masculine singular indefinite form. The absence of a fleeting vowel is noted only when it is not predictable from rules presented in the lessons (thus *червѐн*, but *вѐлнен*, *-ена*). In the case of shifting vowels in the root (as in *вѐрен*, *вѐрна* or *рѐдѓк*, *рѐдки*), the non-masculine form is cross-referenced to the main entry.

Simplex imperfectives are given a single entry; all other verbs are given as aspect pairs with the imperfective listed first. All verbs are given in the standard 1<sup>st</sup> singular present form. The conjugation class of verbs whose stems end in *-ш*, *-ч* or *-ж*, or which is not predictable from the citation form, is noted: *пи́ша* (*-еш*), *пу́ша* (*-иш*), *кѓ́пя* (*-еш*).

English glosses are given as simply as possible; for a larger range of meanings, the full Bulgarian-English dictionary (the source taken as standard for this glossary listing) should be consulted. When the English noun and adjective forms are homonymous, the notation *adj.* or an explanatory note such as [person] is added. Grammatical information such as *interrogative* or *relative conjunction* has been given in the relevant instances.

This glossary list consolidates and reproduces the fifteen separate glossary listings given at the end of each of the lessons. The form is slightly different, in that idioms and phrases are listed here under each of their major components (as opposed to alphabetically according to the first element in the phrase, as in the lessons). A somewhat fuller listing is given herein: certain definitions are more detailed, and certain phrases are given here which were omitted from the lesson glossaries.



Българо-английски речник

a [1] and  
 абонирам [11] subscribe  
 август [5] August  
 автентичен [13] authentic  
 автобус [2] bus  
 автограф [13] autograph  
 авторски [12] author's ; авторско право [12] copyright  
 адвокат (ка) [2] lawyer  
 адрес [9] address  
 аеробика [8] aerobics  
 аз [1] I ; аз се казвам my name is  
 ако [4] if ; ако обичате [4] if you please  
 актьор [14] actor  
 албум [9] album, picture-book  
 алкохол [2] alcohol  
 ало [12] hello (on the phone)  
 ама [12] but  
 американец [3] American (male)  
 американка [3] American (female)  
 американски [8] American (*adj.*)  
 ами [7] but, well  
 английски [2] English (language)  
 англичанин [3] Englishman, English person  
 англичанка [3] Englishwoman  
 апарат [5] [piece of] apparatus, equipment  
 апартамент [8] apartment  
 апетит [9] appetite  
 април [9] April  
 апропо [13] apropos, by the way  
 арабски [11] Arab (*adj.*)  
 ароматен [10] aromatic  
 армия [12] army  
 археолог [3] archaeologist  
 архитектура [7] architecture  
 асансьор [11] elevator  
 аспирин [12] aspirin  
 атмосфера [3] atmosphere  
 аха [5] aha

баба [8] grandmother  
 Баба Марта [11] Granny March (harbinger of spring)  
 бавен [3] slow  
 багаж [2] baggage, luggage  
 бай [1] uncle, old man (*term of address*)  
 балкон [13] balcony  
 баница [10] banitsa (baked pastry) ; баница с късмѐти [10] banitsa filled with fortunes  
 банкет [14] banquet  
 бански [13] bathing; swimming suit ; по бански [13] wearing swimsuits  
 баня [3] bath, bathroom

барок [10] Baroque  
 барокков [9] baroque (*adj.*)  
 баща [8] father  
 бе [6] (*vocative particle*) ; как се казваш бе? [6] what's your name, fella?  
 бедрó [12] thigh  
 без [6] without ; пет без десет [6] ten to five (4:50)  
 без да [14] without (*relative conjunction*)  
 безмѐсен [7] vegetarian (i.e. without meat)  
 белѐжа (-иш) [7] mark  
 белѐжка [7] note; remark  
 белѐжник [7] notebook, notepad  
 бѐли [2] see бял  
 берá [12] pick, gather  
 бѐше [6] was (*2nd, 3rd singular*)  
 библиотека [5] library  
 билѐт [11] ticket  
 бѐра [4] beer  
 благодарност [9] thanks, gratitude ; ден на благодарността [9] Thanksgiving Day  
 благодаря [10] thank, pay gratitude  
 благодаря [2] thank you  
 блѐд [11] pale  
 близък [10] close (*adj.*) ; близки са [10] they are very close friends  
 блóк [8] apartment building  
 бóб [10] beans  
 бóг [9] god, God ; слава Бóгу [9] thank God ; Бóже [9] oh God, oh my God  
 богáт [7] rich  
 бóдър [13] lively, cheerful  
 Бóже see бог  
 боклúk [14] rubbish, garbage  
 боледувам [10] be ill  
 бóлен [2] sick, ill ; бóлен от грип [13] down with the flu  
 боли (*3rd person only*) [12] hurt ; боли ме главáта [12] I have a headache ; болят ме очѐте [12] my eyes hurt ; болѐше [13] was hurting  
 бóлка [12] pain  
 бóлница [6] hospital  
 бонбóн [10] candy  
 бóс [13] barefoot ; хóдя бóс [13] go barefoot  
 ботанически [13] botanical ; ботаническа градина [13] botanical garden  
 боя [10] paint  
 боя се [8] fear ; не сѐ бой [8] don't be afraid  
 бояджѐя, -ѐйка [10] house painter; paint or dye merchant  
 боядисвам [10] paint, color; dye

- браво [10] bravo  
 брада (*also* брадичка) [12] chin  
 брада [12] beard; chin  
 брак [10] marriage  
 брат (*plural* братя) [8] brother  
 братовчед (ка) [2] cousin  
 бридж [14] bridge (card game)  
 броя [3] count  
 БСП (*pron.* бѐсепе) [14] BSP (Bulgarian Socialist Party)  
 буза [12] cheek  
 буква [8] letter (of alphabet); четá до последната буква [8] read every last word  
 булка [10] bride  
 буркан [6] jar, can  
 бутам [6] push, shove  
 бъда [7] be  
 бъдещ [9] future (*adj.*); бъдеще време [9] future tense  
 Бъдни вечер [10] Christmas Eve  
 българин [3] Bulgarian (male)  
 българка [3] Bulgarian (female)  
 български [1] Bulgarian; Bulgarian language  
 българче [13] young Bulgarian  
 бърз [6] fast, quick; urgent; става бързо [6] it's quick, it goes quickly  
 бързам [4] hurry, be in a hurry  
 бърша (-еш) [13] wipe, rub  
 бял, бѐли [2] white; бял дроб [12] lung (*see also* дроб)  
 бях [6] was (*1st singular*)  
 бяха [6] were (*3rd plural*)  
 бяхме [6] were (*1st plural*)  
 бяхте [6] were (*2nd plural*)
- в [1] [6] in, into, on, at  
 вагон [6] wagon, car  
 важен [8] important  
 ваканция [6] vacation  
 вали (*3rd person only*) [12] rain, etc. (precipitation); вали (дъжд) [12] it's raining; вали сняг [12] it's snowing; вали град [12] it's hailing; валият силни дъждове [12] it's raining heavily; вали като из ведро [12] it's raining buckets  
 варя [3] boil, cook  
 вас [10] you (*plural/polite; direct object pronoun*)  
 ваш [8] your, yours (*plural/polite*)  
 вдигам / вдигна [6] raise, lift; вдигам шум [6] make noise  
 вдясно [11] on the right  
 вегетерианец [3] vegetarian (male)
- вегетерианка [3] vegetarian (female)  
 веднага [4] immediately, at once  
 веднъж [7] once  
 ведро [12] bucket; вали като из ведро [12] it's raining buckets  
 вежда [12] eyebrow  
 век, -ѐт (*plural* векове) [12] century  
 велосипед [14] bicycle  
 верен, върна [10] true, faithful; върно е, че [10] it's true that  
 весел [9] happy, gay, lively  
 вестник [6] newspaper  
 ветрове *see* вятър  
 вече [3] already, by now  
 вечер, -та [9] evening; добър вечер [9] good evening (*fixed phrase*); вечер, вечерта [9] in the evening; тази вечер [9] this evening; утре вечер [9] tomorrow evening  
 вечерен [9] evening (*adj.*)  
 вечерям [9] eat dinner  
 взимам (*or* взѐмам) / взѐма [4] take; begin, take to; вземй моливите! [4] pick up the pencils!; взѐмам си довиждане [13] make one's farewells  
 ви [5] you (*plural/polite, direct object pronoun*)  
 ви [7] (to) you (*plural/polite, indirect object pronoun*)  
 вид, -ѐт [12] aspect, view, appearance; (не)свършен вид [12] (im)perfective aspect  
 видеокáмера [5] videocamera  
 видеокасета [12] video cassette  
 вие [1] you (*plural/polite subject pronoun*)  
 виждам / видя [3] [4] see; виж какво [12] look, well (*topic focuser in conversation*)  
 византийски [8] Byzantine  
 викам [12] shout, yell; викам на воля [12] shout to one's heart's content  
 вила [10] pitchfork  
 вилица [10] fork  
 винаги [4] always  
 вино [2] wine  
 висок [5] tall, high; elevated; loud  
 виц [12] joke; разпáрям виц [12] tell a joke  
 вкарвам / вкарам [12] push in, drive in; вкарвам гол [12] score [a goal]  
 включвам / включа (-иш) [14] include  
 вкус, -ѐт [7] taste; по вкуса на всеки човек [7] to everyone's taste  
 вкусен [6] tasty, delicious  
 вкъщи [6] home, at home  
 влак [2] train; пътувам с влак [2] travel by train  
 влизам / вляза [4] enter, go in

## Българо-английски речник

- влюбен [14] in love  
 вляво [11] on the left  
 внимавам [6] pay attention ;  
 внимавайте, бутате човека [6]  
 careful, you're pushing someone  
 внимание [14] attention ; вниманието  
 му се притъпи [14] his attention  
 wandered  
 внимателен [14] attentive  
 вну́к [10] grandson  
 вну́чка [10] granddaughter  
 вода́ [4] water  
 вода [8] lead, take  
 война́ [7] war  
 войни́к [7] soldier  
 воля́ [12] will, desire ; ви́кам на воля́  
 [12] shout to one's heart's content  
 врат [12] back of the neck  
 врата́ [2] door  
 вратовръзка [13] necktie  
 вре́ме (*plural* временá) [2] [9] time ;  
 weather; season ; времето е то́пло [2]  
 the weather is warm ; в последно  
 вре́ме [6] recently ; по това́ вре́ме  
 [7] at about that time ; годи́шните  
 временá [9] seasons (of the year) ;  
 доброто ста́ро вре́ме [11] the good  
 old days ; от вре́ме на вре́ме [14]  
 from time to time  
 вре́ме [9] verbal tense ; сегáшно вре́ме  
 [9] present tense ; бъ́деще вре́ме [9]  
 future tense ; мина́ло свършено вре́ме  
 [12] aorist tense ; мина́ло  
 несвършено вре́ме [14] imperfect  
 tense  
 връзка [13] tie, string, shoelace  
 връ́х, върхът (*plural* върховé) [11]  
 summit; tip  
 връщам / върна [5] return (*transitive*)  
 връщам се / върна се [11] return, go  
 back  
 вря́ [9] boil (*intransitive*)  
 все́ [10] always, constantly; surely ; все́  
 ме няма [10] I'm never there ; все́  
 още избира́м [10] I'm still looking ;  
 все́ едно и съ́що [10] [it's] always the  
 same thing  
 все́ки, вся́ка, вся́ко [6] every ; все́ки  
 момéнт [6] any minute ; на вся́ка  
 ценá [12] at any price, at all costs,  
 absolutely  
 вси́чко [2] all, everything ; вси́чко шéст  
 [6] six in all ; вси́чко хубаво [2]  
 all the best  
 вто́ри [8] second ; вто́ра ма́йка [10]  
 stepmother ; вто́ри баща́ [10]  
 stepfather  
 вто́рник [9] Tuesday
- вуйчо (*plural* вуйчовци) [10] uncle  
 (mother's brother)  
 вход [8] entrance  
 вче́ра [9] yesterday ; вче́ра следобед  
 [9] yesterday afternoon ; вче́ра  
 сутринта́ [9] yesterday morning  
 вче́рашен [9] yesterday's  
 във = в [7] in, into, on, at  
 въздух [4] air  
 възрастен [4] adult; elderly  
 възрастни [4] grownups  
 възто́рг [10] delight, rapture ;  
 предизви́квам възто́рг у [10]  
 enrapture  
 вълк (*plural* вълци) [8] wolf  
 вълнен, -ена [13] wool (*adj.*), woolen  
 вълше́бник [11] magician, wizard  
 в́н [11] out  
 въобщé [11] in general; at all  
 въпрóс [11] question  
 вървя́ [3] walk, move, go ; вървя́ с  
 [10] go well with ; вървя́ си [10]  
 get going ; вървя́ под ръка́ [14]  
 walk arm in arm ; днес́ няма да ми  
 върви́ [14] today's not going to be my  
 day  
 въртя́ се [14] turn around, rotate; move  
 в́тре [11] in, inside  
 вярвам [7] believe  
 вярно *see* véрен  
 вятър (*plural* ветровé) [2] [7] wind ;  
 има си́лен вятър [2] there's a strong  
 wind, it's very windy
- г. = годи́на [9]  
 гара́ [5] station (train or bus)  
 гарни́тура [4] garnish ; пържо́ла с  
 гарни́тура [4] steak with the  
 trimmings  
 ГДР (*pron.* гедерé) [14] GDR (DDR;  
 former East Germany)  
 герда́н [14] necklace, collar  
 герма́нски [14] German  
 ги [5] them (*direct object pronoun*)  
 гимна́зия [3] academically oriented high  
 school  
 глава́ [12] head  
 гла́вен [9] main, chief  
 гла́вно [9] mainly  
 глáд [7] hunger  
 глáден [2] hungry  
 глáс, -ът (*plural* гласовé) [12] voice  
 гле́дам [4] [9] look at; look after  
 гле́зен [12] ankle  
 глътвам / глътна [7] (take a) swallow  
 глътка [3] swallow, gulp

гнездó [13] nest  
 гнѹс ме е [12] feel nauseated  
 го [5] him, it (*direct object pronoun*)  
 говоря [3] speak, talk  
 годенѣк [10] fiancé  
 годенѣца [10] fiancée  
 годѣна [3] year; през 1975 г. [9] in 1975  
 годѣшен [9] yearly, annual; годѣшните  
 временá [9] seasons (of the year)  
 годѣшнина [10] anniversary  
 гóзба [5] dish  
 гóл [12] goal (in sports); вкарвам гóл  
 [12] score [a goal]; изпѹскам гóл  
 [12] miss [a goal]  
 голѣм, голѣми [2] large, big; голѣмите  
 [4] big ones, adults; голѣмо  
 движѣние [12] lots of traffic  
 горá [3] woods, forest  
 гóре [11] up; гóре-дóлу [11] more or  
 less  
 горѣщ [11] hot  
 горя [11] burn  
 господá [3] gentlemen; дáми и господá  
 [3] ladies and gentlemen (*vocative*)  
 господѣн [1] Sir, Mr.  
 госпожá (*plural* госпóжи) [1] Ma'am,  
 Mrs.  
 госпóжица [1] Miss  
 гóст (*plural* гóсти) [5] [8] guest; ѣдвам  
 на гóсти [5] come/go over to visit  
 готвáрски [7] cooking, culinary;  
 готвáрска кнѣга [7] cookbook  
 гóтвя [4] prepare, cook  
 гóтвя се [9] prepare, get ready  
 гóтов [6] prepared, ready  
 грáд [12] hail  
 грáд, -ѣт (*plural* градóвѣ) [6] [7] town,  
 city  
 градѣна [3] garden  
 грешá (-ѣш) [7] sin, err  
 грѣшка [3] mistake  
 грѣя [9] warm, heat (up); shine;  
 слѣнцето грѣе [9] the sun is shining  
 грип [13] influenza, flu; бóлен от грип  
 [13] down with the flu  
 грóзде [9] grapes (*collective*)  
 грóздов [2] [made] of grapes  
 грѣб, грѣбѣт (*plural* грѣбóвѣ) [12] back  
 грѣд, -тá (*or* грѣдѣ) [12] chest  
 грѣк, грѣкѣт (*plural* грѣрци) [6] Greek  
 (male)  
 гѹбя [14] lose  
 гѹша [12] neck, throat  
 гѣба [4] mushroom; омлѣт с гѣби [4]  
 mushroom omelet

гѣтам [8] swallow; гѣтам лекáрство  
 [8] take medicine  
 гѣрдá [12] breast, bosom  
 гѣрло [12] throat  
 гѣрци *see* грѣк

97

да [5] (*subordinating/modal conjunction*);  
 ѣскам да дóйда [5] I want to come;  
 не мóга да дóйда [5] I can't come;  
 ако и да [9] even though; да сте  
 жѣви и здрáви [11] here's to your life  
 and health; и тóй да дóйде [13] he  
 should come too  
 дá [1] yes  
 дáвам / дáм (дáдѣш) [9] give; allow;  
 дáй, дáйте [4] give (*imperative*);  
 дáвам под нáем [12] rent out;  
 дáвам на зáем [12] loan  
 дáже [11] even  
 дáй *see* дáвам  
 далѣче (and далѣч) [4] far, far away  
 далѣ [11] whether, if (*relative/question  
 particle*); далѣ ѣма смѣсл? [11]  
 does it make any sense?; не знáя далѣ  
 ѣма смѣсл [11] I don't know whether  
 it makes any sense  
 дáма [3] lady; дáми и господá [3]  
 ladies and gentlemen (*vocative*)  
 данó [10] let's wish, if only, I hope;  
 данó пристѣгне наврѣме [10] let's  
 hope it gets there on time  
 двá [6] two (*masculine*)  
 двáйсет [6] twenty  
 двáма [6] two (*masculine animate*)  
 дванáйсет [6] twelve  
 двѣ [2] [6] two (*feminine, neuter; in  
 counting*)  
 двѣста [9] two hundred  
 двѣжа се (-ѣш) [14] move, go  
 движѣние [12] movement; traffic;  
 голѣмо движѣние [12] lots of  
 traffic; правилá на пѣтното  
 движѣние [12] traffic laws, rules of  
 the road  
 двóйка [10] [13] pair; "2" (failing mark in  
 school)  
 двóйкаджия, -ѣйка [10] high school  
 dropout  
 двóр [11] yard; игрáя на двóра [11]  
 play in the yard  
 двуцвѣтен [13] two-colored  
 де [10] (*intensifying particle*); вземѣте  
 де! [10] so take [some] already!  
 дѣвет [6] nine

## Българо-английски речник

- деветдесѣт [6] ninety  
 девѣти [8] ninth  
 деветнайсет [6] nineteen  
 деветстотин [9] nine hundred  
 дежурен [10] on duty  
 дежурство [10] duty  
 декѣмври [9] December  
 декламирам [7] declaim, recite  
 демократически [14] democratic  
 демокрация [13] democracy  
 ден, -ят (*plural* дни, *quantified form* дѣна or дѣня) [4] [6] day; рожден ден [5] birthday; добър ден (*fixed accent*); [6] hello, good day; днешен ден [9] this very day; други ден [9] the day after tomorrow; онзи ден [9] the day before yesterday; през деня [9] in the daytime; Ден на благодарността [9] Thanksgiving Day  
 дерá [12] skin, fleece, tear, scratch  
 дѣсен, дясна [11] right (as opposed to left)  
 десѣрт [6] dessert  
 дѣсет [6] ten  
 детѣ (*plural* деца) [1] [3] child; от детѣ [12] since childhood  
 детински [13] children's; детински работи [13] kid's stuff  
 джѣнси [13] jeans  
 диктувам [14] dictate  
 дѣм, -ѣт [4] smoke  
 директен [8] direct  
 директор (ка) [13] director  
 длán [12] palm of the hand  
 днѣвник [10] diary  
 днѣс [1] today  
 днешен [9] today's; днешен ден [9] this very day  
 до [2] [5] [6] by, near, next to; [up] to; until; то е до вратата [2] it's by the door  
 добре [2] well, fine; O.K.; добре дошли! [2] welcome!; добре ли си сегá? [3] are you O.K. now?  
 добър [2] good; добър вечер [9] good evening (*fixed phrase*); добър ден (*fixed accent*) [6] hello, good day; добро утро [9] good morning; доброто старо време [11] the good old days  
 довѣчера [9] this evening  
 довиждане [8] goodbye; вземам си довиждане [13] make one's farewells  
 доволен [6] pleased, satisfied  
 догодина [7] next year  
 дѣйда *see* дохождам  
 докарвам / докарам [10] drive to, bring to  
 докато [9] while, until  
 докато не [13] until  
 доклад [12] report, (scholarly) paper  
 долѣтам / долѣтя [13] come flying, fly up to  
 долу [11] down; горе-долу [11] more or less  
 дом, -ѣт (*plural* домовѣ) [7] home, house; у дома [10] at home  
 домáт [6] tomato  
 домашен [2] [7] homemade; home (*adj.*)  
 домашно [8] homework  
 донáсям / донесá [7] bring  
 допълнение [8] addition, supplement  
 дори [8] even  
 досегá [6] until now  
 досмѣшава ме / досмѣшее ме (*3rd person only*) [13] [I] feel like laughing  
 досрамѣва ме / досрамѣе ме (*3rd person only*) [13] [I] feel ashamed  
 достáтъчен [7] enough  
 дохождам / дѣйда [5] come, arrive  
 дочуване [12] goodbye (on the phone)  
 дошгъл, дошла, дошли [11] come (*active participle*); добре дошгъл [11] welcome (*to a male friend*); добре дошла [11] welcome (*to a female friend*); добре дошли! [11] welcome (*to group or formal acquaintance*)  
 драг [2] [3] dear; Драги Боб, [2] Dear Bob, (*beginning of a letter*)  
 дрѣха [10] article of clothing; дрѣхи [10] clothes  
 дрѣб, -ѣт (*plural* дрѣбове or дрѣбовѣ) [12] lung (*see also* бял дрѣб); чѣрен дрѣб [12] liver  
 друг [2] [7] other, another; next; на другата спѣрка [7] at the next stop; други ден [9] the day after tomorrow; другата нѣщ [9] tomorrow night  
 другáр (ка) [1] comrade  
 другáрче [13] playfellow, playmate  
 дѣма [7] word; за каквѣ стáва дѣма? [11] what's the matter? what's it about?  
 дѣхам blow; дѣха [1] it's blowing, there is air coming  
 дѣши [6] people (*counting form*); кѣлко дѣши [6] how many people  
 дѣжд, -ѣт (*plural* дѣждовѣ) [12] rain; валият силни дѣждовѣ [12] it's raining heavily  
 дѣлго [8] [for] a long time  
 дѣлг [2] long

дървен (-ена) [13] wood (*adj.*), wooden  
 дърво (*plural* дървета) [7] tree  
 дърво (*plural* дърва) [11] wood  
 държá (-йш) [11] hold, keep  
 дъх [8] breath, wind; поемам [си] дъх  
 [8] catch one's breath  
 дъщеря [10] daughter  
 дядо (*plural* дядовци) [8] [10]  
 grandfather; Дядо Мраз [10] Jack  
 Frost; Дядо Коледа [10] Santa  
 Claus  
 дясна *see* десен

е [1] is (*3rd singular*); *see* съм  
 европéйски [8] European  
 евтин [9] cheap, inexpensive  
 едѝн [2] [3] one, a (*masculine*); едѝн  
 и сѝщ [10] the same, one and the  
 same

27  
 единайсет [6] eleven  
 едѝнствен, -ена [11] single, only  
 еднá [3] one (*feminine*); в еднá стáя с  
 [10] in the same room as  
 еднó [2] [3] one (*neuter; in counting*)  
 еднóврѝменен [11] simultaneous  
 едър [9] large, robust; на едро [9]  
 wholesale  
 езеро [3] lake, pond  
 езѝк [3] language, tongue  
 ёй! [1] hey, oh  
 екзóтика [7] exotica, exoticism  
 екзотѝчен [5] exotic  
 екскúрзия [8] excursion  
 елá [5] come (*imperative of дóйда*) елá  
 да ти полéя [13] come let me pour  
 water [over your hands]  
 елeгáнтен [5] elegant  
 елѝн [8] deer, stag  
 елхá [13] fir tree; нoвoгoдѝшнa елхá  
 [13] New Year's tree  
 ёра [9] era; прeдѝ н.е. [9] B.C.;  
 от н.е. [9] A.D.  
 ергѝн [11] bachelor  
 ёсен, -тá [9] fall, autumn  
 етáж [8] floor (of a multi-story building)  
 ёто [2] here (*pointing*)  
 ефѝктен [5] effective  
 ефѝнди [1] effendi, sir (*archaic term of  
 address*)

17  
 жáден [2] thirsty  
 жáлко [11] too bad, pity  
 желáние [14] wish, desire

желáя [7] wish, desire  
 женá [2] woman, wife  
 жѝнен, -ена [10] married  
 жѝня [11] marry off  
 жѝня се [11] get married  
 жѝв [11] live, living; lively; жѝв да го  
 оплáчеш [11] it makes your heart  
 bleed to see him; да сте жѝви и  
 здрáви [11] here's to your life and  
 health  
 живéя [3] live  
 живóт [9] life  
 животѝнче [13] little animal  
 живóтно [8] animal; прáвá на  
 живóтните [12] animal rights  
 жилéтка [12] waistcoat, cardigan sweater  
 жѝлищен [8] residential; жѝлищен  
 комплѝкс [8] housing development,  
 block of apartments  
 журнáлист (кa) [5] journalist  
 жѝлт [8] yellow

76  
 за [1] [6] [10] [11] for, to; about; here's  
 to; за къдѝ пѝтúватe? [1] where are  
 you traveling to?; за сѝжалѝние [1]  
 unfortunately; за двѝ сѝдмици [6]  
 for two weeks; кажѝ ни за тѝх [10]  
 tell us about them; знáя за нѝго [10]  
 I know about him; за мнóго гoдѝни  
 [11] many happy returns; за каквó  
 стáва дýма? [11] what's it about?  
 what's the matter?  
 за да [11] in order to (*conjunction of  
 purpose*); за да не стáва тeчѝние  
 [11] so there won't be a draft  
 забáвен [11] amusing, fun  
 забелáзвам / забелéжа (-иш) [5] notice,  
 spot  
 забóждам / забодá [13] stick, pin  
 заболéя (мe) / заболѝ (мe) (*3rd person  
 only*) [12] start to hurt  
 заболéвам / заболéя [12] get sick  
 забрáвам / забрáвя [7] forget  
 завалéя / завалѝ (*3rd person only*) [12]  
 begin to precipitate [rain, unless otherwise  
 specified]  
 завѝждам / заведá [10] take somewhere,  
 lead  
 завѝвам / завѝя [6] turn, bend, wrap  
 завѝся [14] depend; завѝси от вáс  
 [14] it depends on you; завѝси тóй  
 каквó щѝ кáже [14] it depends on  
 what he will say  
 завѝрзвам / завѝржа (-еш) [13] tie;  
 завѝрзвам врѝзките на обúвки [13]  
 tie [one's] shoelaces

## Българо-английски речник

- заглавие [13] title  
зад [13] behind, beyond ; зад ъгъла [14] around the corner  
заден [14] back, rear (*adj.*)  
задник [12] behind, rear end  
задúшен [4] stuffy  
заедно [5] together  
заемам / заема [12] take up, occupy  
заёт [7] busy, occupied  
закачвам / закача (-иш) [13] hang, suspend  
заключвам / заключа (-иш) [8] lock  
закрátко [11] for a short while  
заку́свам / заку́ся [11] eat breakfast  
заку́ска [10] breakfast  
закъснение [14] delay; tardiness ; с малко къснение [14] a little late  
закъснявам / къснѣя [7] be late  
зала [12] hall ; всё едно си в залата [12] it's just like being in the concert hall  
заязвам / заяза [9] set (of the sun)  
заминавам / замина [9] leave, depart  
занасям / занеса [7] carry, take to  
занимавам [11] interest, occupy  
занимавам се (с) [11] be occupied (with)  
запис [13] recording  
заповядвам / заповядам [5] command, order ; заповядай [5] help yourself  
запознавам / запозная [14] acquaint [someone] with  
запознавам се / запозная се [10] meet, get acquainted  
запóмням / запóмня [9] remember  
запóчвам / запóчна [6] begin  
зарадвам се [12] cheer up  
заради [13] for the sake of, because of  
засегá [9] at present, for now  
заслужавам / заслужа (-иш) [11] deserve, be worthy of  
заспíвам / заспá [14] fall asleep  
затвáрям / затвóря [3] [4] close ; затвáрям вратата под носá [на] [13] shut the door in [someone's] face  
затвóрен, -ена [2] closed  
затовá [5] therefore, thus  
затрúпвам / затрúпам [11] cover up, bury under; pile up ; затрúпвам с въпрóси [11] burden with questions  
захар, -та [12] sugar  
защíта [12] defense  
защó [3] why  
защóто [3] because  
звучá (-иш) [12] sound, resound ; звучí добрѣ [12] that sounds good  
звъне́ц [5] bell  
звънá [5] ring ; звънá по телефóна [10] telephone  
здрав [2] healthy, lasting, strong  
здрáве [2] health ; полéзно за здравето [8] good for you [for one's health]  
здравей [6] hi  
зѣле [4] cabbage ; сала́та от зѣле [4] cabbage salad  
зелѣн [8] green  
зеленчу́к [7] vegetable  
зýма [9] winter  
зýмен [11] winter (*adj.*) ; зýмен курóрт [11] ski resort  
зимóрничав [11] sensitive to the cold  
зла́тен [9] golden  
злѣ [13] bad, badly  
зна́к [9] sign  
зна́м [4] see зна́я  
знаменíт [14] famous, renowned  
зна́чи [1] that means, so, thus  
значѣние [9] meaning ; нýма значѣние [9] it doesn't matter  
знáя [3] know  
зрѣя [9] ripen  
зѣб, -ѣт (*plural зѣби*) [6] [8] tooth  
зѣболѣкар [12] dentist  
и [1] and, also ; и аз [1] me too ; и to [11] at that  
й [7] [to] her (*indirect object pronoun*)  
и ... и [8] both...and  
игра́ [14] play, game  
игра́я [5] play ; игра́я на двóра [11] play in the yard ; игра́я си [11] play around  
йда [5] come, go ; идѣ за хля́б [5] go get some bread  
йдвам [5] come  
идеáлен [5] ideal  
идѣя [5] idea  
идили́чен [3] idyllic  
иди́лия [7] idyll  
из [11] around, throughout; out of ; пътуване из Бългáрия [11] a trip throughout Bulgaria ; разхóдка из градá [11] city tour ; из кѣщи [11] around the house (*fixed phrase*)  
изб́ирам / избѣра́ [4] choose, select  
йзбор [7] selection, choice  
избѣрсвам / избѣрша (-еш) [13] wipe, dry  
изва́ждам / изва́дя [14] take/bring out, produce, extract  
изведнѣж [5] suddenly  
изве́ждам / изведá [9] take out, lead away ; изве́ждам кúчето на разхóдка [9] walk the dog  
и [1] and, also ; и аз [1] me too ; и to [11] at that  
й [7] [to] her (*indirect object pronoun*)  
и ... и [8] both...and  
игра́ [14] play, game  
игра́я [5] play ; игра́я на двóра [11] play in the yard ; игра́я си [11] play around  
йда [5] come, go ; идѣ за хля́б [5] go get some bread  
йдвам [5] come  
идеáлен [5] ideal  
идѣя [5] idea  
идили́чен [3] idyllic  
иди́лия [7] idyll  
из [11] around, throughout; out of ; пътуване из Бългáрия [11] a trip throughout Bulgaria ; разхóдка из градá [11] city tour ; из кѣщи [11] around the house (*fixed phrase*)  
изб́ирам / избѣра́ [4] choose, select  
йзбор [7] selection, choice  
избѣрсвам / избѣрша (-еш) [13] wipe, dry  
изва́ждам / изва́дя [14] take/bring out, produce, extract  
изведнѣж [5] suddenly  
изве́ждам / изведá [9] take out, lead away ; изве́ждам кúчето на разхóдка [9] walk the dog



извѣквам / извѣкам [13] cry, call out  
 извинѣние [13] excuse, pardon  
 извинѣвам / извинѣя [5] pardon, excuse ;  
 извинѣте [2] excuse me  
 извън [10] out of, outside  
 изгáрям / изгоря [14] get burned, burn  
 up  
 изглѣждам [4] look, appear, seem ;  
 изглѣжда [6] it seems  
 издокáрвам се / издокáрам се [14] dress  
 up  
 издържам / издържá (-иш) [7] stand,  
 endure  
 иззвѣнявам / иззвѣня [14] ring (out)  
 изкипявам / изкипя [14] boil over  
 изкѣпвам се / изкѣпя се (-еш) [14]  
 bathe, take a bath  
 излет [3] excursion  
 излѣзам / излѣза [4] leave, go  
 измѣвам / измѣя [13] wash up  
 измѣслям / измѣсля [12] think up,  
 invent  
 измóкрям / измóкря [12] drench, soak ;  
 измóкрям се до кóсти [12] get  
 soaked to the skin  
 изненáда [12] surprise ; по  
 изненáдите съм [14] I like surprises  
 изóбщо [8] in general, at all ; тѣ  
 изóбщо не мóгат да чáкат [8] they  
 can't wait at all  
 изпѣвам / изпѣя [5] drink up  
 изпѣрам / изпѣра [12] do laundry, wash  
 изпит [5] exam, test  
 изплѣтам / изплѣта [12] knit, twist  
 изплѣзвам се / изплѣзна се [14] slip  
 out, slip through  
 изпращам / изпратя [8] send off, see  
 off, accompany  
 изпýскам / изпýсна [7] drop, let go ;  
 miss  
 изпѣвам / изпѣя [11] sing (to the end)  
 изстѣвам / изстѣна [8] grow/become  
 cold  
 изтрѣпвам / изтрѣпна [14] fall asleep (of  
 a body part) ; изтрѣпвам от úжас  
 [14] freeze with terror  
 изумѣтелен [13] amazing, astounding  
 изучáвам / изучá (-иш) [2] [4] study,  
 make a study of  
 изчѣзвам / изчѣзна [10] disappear  
 изчѣствам / изчѣстя [14] clean up, clean  
 out  
 изяждам / изям (-ядѣш) [9] eat up  
 изяснявам / изясня [14] clear up ;  
 слѣд като нещáта се изяснят [14]  
 when things get clarified  
 или [3] or  
 или ... или [8] either...or

им [7] [to] them (*indirect object pronoun*)  
 има [2] there is, there are ; каквó има  
 в чáнтатa? [2] what is there in the  
 bag? ; има мáлко врѣме [2] there's  
 not [very] much time ; има óще мнóго  
 рáбота [2] there's still a lot of work  
 [to do] ; има сѣлен вятър [2] it's  
 very windy; there's a strong wind ; има  
 смѣсл [11] it makes sense  
 имама [2] [3] have ; имама нýжда от  
 [4] need, have need of  
 име (*plural* именá) [6] name  
 инженер [14] engineer  
 интерес [7] interest ; проявявам  
 интерес към [8] take an interest in  
 интересен [2] interesting  
 интересно [1] interesting ; мнóго  
 интересно [1] that's very  
 interesting ; интересно, тѣ как си  
 [3] I wonder how you are  
 интересúвам [8] interest (*transitive*)  
 интересúвам се от [11] be interested in  
 йскам [5] want  
 йстина [1] truth  
 йстински [8] real, true  
 истóрия [7] history, story

кабинѣт [4] office (e.g. doctor's)  
 кавгá [10] quarrel, dispute  
 кавгаджѣя, -ййка [10] quarrelsome  
 person, brawler  
 кáзвам / кáжа (-еш) [1] [4] say  
 кáзвам се [1] my name is ; кáзва се  
 [1] his/her name is ; как се кáзвате?  
 [1] what is your name?  
 каймá [6] ground meat  
 как [1] how ; как се кáзвате? [1]  
 what is your name? ; как такá? [11]  
 how is it that, how can that be? ; как  
 не тѣ е срám! [12] you should be  
 ashamed!  
 каквó [1] [4] what, what for ; каквó е  
 "течѣние"? [1] what's a "течение",  
 what does течение mean? ; каквó е  
 товá? [3] what's this? ; каквó  
 глѣдаш тóлкова в... ? [4] why are you  
 so absorbed in... ? ; каквó работите?  
 [5] what [kind of] work do you do? ;  
 каквó ще кáжеш [7] what do you  
 think ; каквó ли нѣ [12] whatever,  
 whatnot  
 каквóто [12] whatever  
 както [9] as  
 кактв [3] what kind of, what ; кактв е  
 тóй? [3] what [work] does he do? ;  
 каквá хýбава къща [3] what a nice

Българо-английски речник

- house ; какъв ли е той [5] what's he like, I wonder  
 кáня [10] invite  
 кáня се [11] plan, intend  
 капрíзен [13] capricious  
 кáпя (-еш) [11] drip, dribble  
 кáрам [6] drive, ride, push ; кáрам кола́ [6] drive a car  
 кáрам се [11] scold, quarrel  
 карнава́лен [12] carnival (*adj.*)  
 кáрта [5] card; map, chart  
 картинка [3] small picture  
 кáртичка [11] postcard  
 касетофо́н [5] cassette player; tape recorder  
 като [3] like, as; when ; аз пра́вя като лéлята [3] I'm doing [just] like auntie ; като бях [6] when I was ; като ма́лък [11] when he was little  
 като че ли́ [14] as if, apparently ; като че ли́ се смееше [14] he appeared to be laughing  
 кафе́ [5] coffee, cup of coffee  
 кафе́ен, -ейна [6] coffee (*adj.*) ; кафе́на лъжи́чка [6] coffee spoon  
 кáчвам / кача́ (-йш) [7] carry up, take up  
 кáчвам се / кача́ се (-йш) [7] ascend, get on  
 кашкава́л [4] kashkaval (yellow cheese) ; омле́т с кашкава́л [4] cheese omelet  
 кварта́л [9] district, living area  
 кварта́ра [14] apartment, quarters  
 кеба́п [13] grilled or stewed meat  
 кеба́пче [6] kebab  
 килогра́м [6] kilogram  
 ки́но [5] cinema, movies  
 ки́р [1] sir (*archaic term of address*)  
 ки́ра [1] ma'am (*archaic term of address*)  
 ки́сел [6] sour ; ки́село зе́ле [6] sauerkraut ; ки́село мля́ко [6] yogurt  
 китка [12] wrist  
 ки́хам (*or* ки́хвам) / ки́хна [14] sneeze  
 клáс, -ът [7] class, grade in school ; от класá [7] from the same [school] class  
 класи́чески [3] classical  
 кли́мат [11] climate  
 клю́н [13] beak  
 клю́ч [7] key  
 кни́га [2] book  
 кня́з (*plural* князе́) [8] prince  
 кни́жка [10] booklet; driver's license  
 кога́ [6] when (*interrogative*)  
 кога́то [11] when (*relative conjunction*)  
 кого́ [8] whom (*interrogative*)  
 ко́жа [12] skin; hide, fur  
 ко́й, ко́я, ко́е, ко́й [3] [5] who, which (*interrogative*)  
 ко́кал [12] bone  
 коко́шка [11] hen, fowl ; коко́шка с ки́село зе́ле [11] chicken and sauerkraut casserole  
 кола́ [4] car, automobile ; кáрам кола́ [6] drive a car  
 коле́га [10] colleague  
 Ко́леда [10] Christmas  
 ко́леден [10] Christmas (*adj.*)  
 коле́жка [10] female colleague  
 коле́кция [7] collection  
 колелó [14] wheel; bicycle  
 колéт [5] parcel, package  
 коли́чка [7] pushcart  
 ко́лко [4] [6] how much, how many ; ко́лко стру́ва това? [4] how much does this cost? ; ко́лко стру́ва? [4] how much is it? ; ко́лко ду́ши сме? [6] how many of us are there? ; на ко́лко сте годи́ни? [6] how old are you? ; ко́лко е часéт? [6] what time is it? ; в ко́лко часá? [6] when, at what time?  
 коля́но (*plural* коленá *or* коленé) [12] knee  
 командирóвка [10] business trip  
 комéдия [11] comedy  
 коми́н [13] chimney  
 компáкт дй́ск [12] compact disk  
 комплéкс [8] complex ; жи́лищен комплéкс [8] block of apartments  
 ко́н, -ят (*plural* конé) [8] horse  
 кондýктор (ка) [5] conductor  
 консерви́рам [6] preserve, can  
 консерви́ран [6] preserved, canned  
 контро́лен [8] control (*adj.*) ; контро́лна ра́бота [8] exam, quiz  
 контро́лно [8] exam, quiz  
 конфе́ренция [12] conference  
 копа́я [10] dig  
 ко́пие [13] copy ; пéлно ко́пие [14] exact replica  
 ко́пър [6] dill  
 корéм [12] abdomen, belly  
 коридóр [2] corridor, passageway; entryway  
 косá [12] hair  
 ко́ст, -та́ [12] bone ; измо́крям се до ко́сти [12] get soaked to the skin  
 костену́рка [9] turtle  
 костю́м [14] suit  
 ко́тка [10] cat  
 ко́фа [14] pail, bucket ; ко́фа за боклу́к [14] garbage can  
 кошма́р [6] nightmare  
 кра́й [7] edge, end  
 кра́й (*plural* краи́ща) [8] district  
 кра́к, -ът (*plural* крака́) [8] leg ; на кра́к [12] hastily  
 кра́л, -ят (*plural* кралé) [8] king

Българо-английски речник

красавица [6] cucumber  
 кратък [9] short  
 крив [3] crooked  
 кротък [13] gentle  
 кръв, -та (*plural* кръви) [12] blood  
 кръг, -ът [10] circle; тесен семеен  
 кръг [10] immediate family  
 кръгъл [10] round, circular; кръгла  
 годишнина [10] decade anniversary  
 кръстословица [8] crossword puzzle;  
 решавам кръстословица [8] do a  
 crossword puzzle  
 кубински [8] Cuban  
 кукла [13] doll, puppet  
 култура [9] culture  
 културен [12] cultural  
 кум, -ът [14] godfather  
 кума [14] godmother  
 купе [2] compartment; купе № 7 [2]  
 compartment No. 7; купето е тясно  
 [2] the compartment is cramped  
 купувам / купя [5] buy, purchase  
 курорт [11] resort; зимен курорт [11]  
 ski resort  
 кутія [10] box; пощенска кутія [10]  
 mailbox  
 кухня [5] [7] kitchen; cuisine  
 кúфар [2] suitcase  
 кúче [4] dog  
 къде [1] where (*interrogative*)  
 към [8] toward  
 къпя (-еш) [3] bathe  
 кърпа [13] cloth, towel  
 къс [12] short  
 късен [4] late  
 късмёт [10] fortune, luck; баница с  
 късмёти [10] banitsa with fortunes  
 къща [2] house  
 къщичка [7] little house

лакът, лакътят (*plural* лакти) [8] elbow  
 лая [11] bark  
 лев [4] lev (Bulgarian currency); 120  
 лева [4] 120 levs (*or* leva)  
 лéви *see* ляв  
 легло [4] bed  
 лёгна *see* лягам  
 лёден, -ена [8] ice (*adj.*), frozen  
 лежа (-иш) [4] lie, be lying  
 лёк [9] light, easy; лёка нощ [9]  
 good night  
 лёкар (ка) [1] doctor, physician  
 лёкарство [8] medicine; гълтам  
 лёкарство [8] take medicine  
 лёкция [6] lecture, class  
 лёля [3] aunt (father's sister); "auntie"

лёсен [6] easy  
 ли [1] [5] (*question particle*); от Варна  
 ли сте? [1] are you from Varna?;  
 какъв ли е този човек [5] what is this  
 person like, I wonder; каквó ли нé  
 [12] all sorts of [things]  
 лист [4] sheet of paper  
 лист (*plural* листá) [6] leaf  
 лицé [12] face  
 ловя [9] catch; ловя рíба [9] fish,  
 catch fish  
 логичен [12] logical  
 лозá [6] vine  
 лóзе (*plural* лозя) [10] vineyard  
 лóзов [6] grape, vine (*adj.*); лóзови  
 листá [6] grape leaves  
 лóш [3] bad  
 лук [6] onion  
 лунá [9] moon  
 лъжйца [6] spoon, spoonful  
 лъжйчка [6] teaspoon, teaspoonful  
 лъскав [10] shining, bright  
 любя [13] love, be in love with  
 любезен [2] kind  
 любйм [8] favorite  
 любйтел [8] lover, fan  
 ляв (*plural* лéви) [11] left, Left  
 лягам / лёгна [4] lie down, go to bed  
 лягам си / лёгна си [8] go to bed  
 лято (*plural* летá) [9] summer

магазин [5] store  
 май [9] May  
 май [12] it seems, in all probability;  
 май остава да отидем там [12] I  
 guess we have to go there  
 майка [2] mother  
 макáр [14] at least; although  
 макáр че [14] although, even though  
 малина [3] raspberry  
 мáлко [1] [2] a little, [very] little; тóй е  
 мáлко бóлен [2] he's a bit under the  
 weather  
 мáлък [2] small; мáлко врéме [2]  
 not much time; мáлките [4] small  
 ones, children; като мáлък [11]  
 when he was little; от мáлък [13]  
 since he was little/a child; с мáлко  
 закъснéние [14] a little late  
 мáма [2] Mom; мáмо [2] Mom  
 (*when addressed*); а нйе, мáмо? [2]  
 and what about us, Mom?  
 манастир [8] monastery  
 мáрт [1] March  
 мáртеница [13] entwined red and  
 white tassels worn as a sign of spring

## Българо-английски речник

- мартеничка [13] small martenitsa  
 маса [7] table  
 масичка [13] little table  
 матура [8] matriculation [exam]  
 махам [14] wave  
 мач [12] [sports] match, game  
 мащеха [10] stepmother  
 ме [4] [5] me (*direct object pronoun*)  
 между [12] between, among  
 мек [15] soft, mild  
 мѐн [12] (*same as мѐне*)  
 мѐне [10] me (*direct object pronoun*)  
 мѐнѹ (*neuter*) [4] menu  
 мѐсец [9] month  
 месѹ [6] meat  
 местá [6] see място  
 мѐтър [15] meter  
 мечѐ [11] bear cub  
 Мѐчо Пѹх [11] Winnie the Pooh  
 ми [7] [to] me (*indirect object pronoun*)  
 мѐгла [12] eyelash  
 мѐл [4] dear; добрѐ, мѐло [4] all right, darling  
 милѐя [13] hold dear, care for  
 минавам / мѐна [5] pass  
 мѐнал [9] past; мѐналата нѹщ [9] last night; мѐнало свѐршено врѐме [12] aorist tense; мѐнало несвѐршено врѐме [14] imperfect tense  
 министѐрство [14] ministry  
 минѹта [6] minute  
 миризмá [11] smell, scent  
 мѐсля [5] think  
 мѐшка [11] mouse  
 мѐя [8] wash  
 млáд [7] young  
 младожѐнец [10] bridegroom, newlywed  
 младожѐнка [10] bride, newlywed  
 млѐчност [10] milkiness  
 мля́ко (*plural* млякá) [6] milk  
 мнѹго [1] [2] very; much; many; мнѹго рáбота [2] a lot of work; мнѹго интѐресно [1] very interesting  
 мѹга (-жеш) [4] can, be able  
 мѹден [13] fashionable; мѹдно ревѹ [13] fashion show  
 мѹже [4] [11] possible, OK; it's possible; бѐра мѹже [4] OK, I can [have a] beer  
 мѹже би [9] maybe  
 мѹзѹк (*plural* мѹзѹци) [12] brain  
 мѹй [8] my, mine  
 мѹлив [2] pencil  
 мѹля [4] please; мѹля ви се, госпѹдине [4] please, sir; мѹля! [4] at your service  
 момѐнт [5] moment; в тѹзи момѐнт [5] then, at that point in time; в момѐнта [10] at the moment  
 момѐче [1] girl  
 момчѐ [1] boy  
 мѹмѹк (*plural* мѹмѹци) [13] young man  
 монѐта [10] coin  
 морáвски [8] Moravian  
 морѐ [6] sea; на морѐто [6] at the [Black] Sea  
 мѹрков [4] carrot; салáта от мѹркови [4] carrot salad  
 мѹрски [15] sea (*adj.*); мѹрското равнѐще [15] sea level  
 мѹст (*plural* мѹстѹве) [6] bridge  
 мѹтам се (*or* мѹтáя се) [14] fool around  
 мрáз [10] frost, chill; Дя́до Мрáз [10] Jack Frost  
 мрѐсен [9] dirty  
 му [7] [to] him/it (*indirect object pronoun*)  
 мѹзика [5] music  
 мѹскул [12] muscle  
 мустáци (*plural*) [14] mustache  
 мѹж, -ѹт (*plural* мѹжѐ) [8] man, husband  
 мѹжки [8] male, masculine  
 мѹлчá (-ѹш) [10] be silent, fall silent  
 мѹчен [13] hard, difficult; стáна ми мѹчно [13] I had a hard time  
 мѹсто [2] place, seat; мѹстото е свѹбѹдно [2] the seat is not taken  
 н.е. = новáта ѐра [9]  
 на [1] [2] [3] [7] of; in, on, at; per; for (*indirect object*); тѹ си на № 2 [2] you've got No. 2; на сѐло [3] in the village; на бѹлгарски [3] in Bulgarian; на [...] годѐни [6] [...] years old; на кѹлко сте годѐни? [6] how old are you?; на ѐдро [9] wholesale; на телефѹна [12] speaking! [on the phone]; по три пѹти на дѐн [13] three times a day  
 наблѐзо [4] nearby  
 навѐчѐрие [10] the eve of; vigil  
 нáвик [11] habit  
 наврѐме [5] on time; съвсѐм наврѐме [5] at exactly the right moment  
 навѹн [11] outside (*directional*)  
 навѹтре [11] inside (*directional*)  
 навѹрно [14] probably  
 нагѹре [11] up (*directional*)  
 нагрáда [13] reward, prize  
 над [15] above  
 надѐжда [8] hope  
 надѹлу [11] down (*directional*)  
 нáдпис [14] inscription

- надясно [11] to the right  
 наём [12] rent ; давам под наём [12] rent out  
 наёсен [9] in the fall  
 назаём [12] loan ; давам назаём [12] loan  
 наздрáве [11] cheers, to your health! (toast)  
 наизúст [4] by heart, verbatim ; аз зна́м меню́то наизúст [4] I can recite the menu by heart  
 наистина [2] really, truly  
 на́й- [10] most... (superlative degree particle) ; на́й-пóсле [1] finally ; на́й-мнóго [10] the most ; на́й-разл́ични неща́ [10] all sorts of things  
 накрáтко [10] in short, briefly  
 накъде́ [11] to where  
 нали́ [3] (added to form negative question) ; нали́ виждаш [3] don't you see ; нали́ зна́еш, че аз съм... [3] you know, don't you, that I'm... ; голя́м е, нали́? [3] it's big, isn't it?  
 наля́во [11] to the left  
 нами́рам / наме́ря [5] find  
 намръ́щен (-ена) [13] sullen, gloomy  
 нани́звам / нани́жа (-еш) [14] string together  
 нао́коло [9] around, round about  
 напи́свам / напи́ша (-еш) [5] write, write down, finish writing  
 напи́тка [4] beverage, drink  
 напоследъ́к [8] lately  
 напра́вям / напра́вя [6] do, make ; напра́вя мя́сто на то́зи човéк [6] make room for this man  
 напರೆ́д [14] ahead, forwards  
 напರೆ́дък [9] progress, gain  
 напರೆ́жение [14] pressure, tension  
 напರೆ́мер [8] for example  
 напರೆ́лет [9] in the spring  
 наರೆ́д [7] in order ; вс́ичко е наರೆ́д [7] everything's O.K.  
 наರೆ́ждам / наರೆ́дя [6] set up, arrange  
 нари́чам / нарека́ (-чеш) [13] call, name  
 наро́д [7] people, folk  
 наро́ден [5] national, folk  
 на́с [8] [10] us (direct object pronoun)  
 настъ́пвам / настъ́пя [13] come on, set in, occur; step on; advance  
 научáвам / нау́ча (-иш) [6] [9] learn; teach  
 научáвам се / нау́ча се (-иш) [14] learn to, learn about; get used to  
 нахрáнвам / нахрáня [11] feed  
 нача́лен [3] beginning, elementary ; нача́лно образова́ние [3] elementary education  
 на́чин [6] way, manner; по то́зи на́чин [6] in this way  
 на́ш [8] our, ours  
 на́яждам се / на́ям се (-ядеш) [9] eat one's fill, gorge on  
 не [1] not ; не те е сра́м! [12] shame on you!  
 не́ [3] [5] no; (contrastive negation) ; не́ та́м [5] not there [but somewhere else]  
 небце́ [12] palate (roof of mouth)  
 не́го [10] him, it (direct object pronoun)  
 не́гов [8] his  
 неде́ля [6] Sunday  
 не́ин, не́йна [8] her, hers  
 непозна́т [5] unknown  
 непременен [13] indispensable, necessary  
 непременно [13] by all means  
 несв́ършен [12] incomplete, imperfect ; несв́ършен ви́д [12] imperfective aspect ; ми́нало несв́ършено вре́ме [14] imperfect tense  
 неспоко́ен [4] uneasy, restless  
 несравни́м [11] incomparable  
 нестинáр [11] fire-dancer  
 нестинáрство [11] fire-dancing, fire-walking  
 нетърпéние [8] impatience ; ча́кам с нетърпéние [8] await eagerly  
 неудобен [13] inconvenient, uncomfortable  
 нечéтен [11] odd-numbered  
 не́що [5] something  
 не́я [10] her (direct object pronoun)  
 ни [5] us (direct object pronoun)  
 ни [7] [to] us (indirect object pronoun)  
 ни [8] not, neither  
 ни ... ни [8] neither...nor  
 ни́ва [10] [corn]field  
 ни́е [1] we  
 ни́жа (-еш) [14] thread, string together  
 ни́как [8] not at all  
 ни́какъв [8] none, no kind of  
 ни́кога [8] never  
 ни́кой [8] no one  
 ни́кого [8] no one (object)  
 ни́къде [8] nowhere  
 ни́то [8] not, neither ; ни́то една́ дýма [8] not a single word  
 ни́що [8] nothing ; ни́що, че няма [10] no matter that there isn't [any]  
 но [2] but  
 но́в [7] new ; Но́ва годи́на [10] New Year's  
 новина́ [5] [a piece of] news  
 новогоди́шен [11] New Year's (adj.) ; новогоди́шна честитка [11] New

Българо-английски речник

- Year's greeting ; *новогодишна елха* [13] New Year's tree  
 ногá [12] leg (*dialectal, poetic*)  
 ноёмври [9] November  
 нóж (*plural ножове*) [7] knife  
 нóжче [13] [razor] blade  
 нóкът, нóкътят (*plural нóкти*) [8] nail  
 (on finger or toe)  
 нóмер (*plural номерá*) [2] [3] number;  
 size ; *пáвя номерá на* [8] play  
 dirty tricks on  
 нóс, -ът (*plural носовé*) [11] nose ;  
*затвáрям вратáта под нóс* [13] shut  
 the door in [someone's] face  
 нóся [3] carry; wear  
 нóщ, -тá [9] night ; *през нощá* [9]  
 at night ; *тáзи нóщ* [9] tonight  
 нóщен [9] night (*adj.*) ; *нóщно врéме*  
 [9] nighttime  
 нúжда [2] need ; *нýма нúжда* [2]  
 there's no need, it's not necessary ;  
*ýмаме нúжда от вúздyх* [4] we need  
 air ; *ýмáте нúжда от прéглед* [4]  
 you need to be examined  
 нýкак [8] somehow  
 нýкакъв [8] some sort  
 нýкогá [8] sometime  
 нýкой [8] someone  
 нýколко [6] several  
 нýкúде [8] somewhere  
 нýма [2] there isn't/aren't any ; *нýма*  
*нúжда* [2] there's no need, it's not  
 necessary ; *нýма мýсто зá пáника*  
 [3] there's no need to worry ; *нýма*  
*знáчение* [9] it doesn't matter ;  
*нýма нúщо стрáшно* [11] there's  
 nothing to be afraid of  
 нýмá да [7] won't (*negative future*  
*particle*) ; *нýмáше дá* [16]  
 wasn't/weren't going to  
 нýмáм [2] [3] not have
- обáждам се / обáдя се [10] [12] call, get  
 in touch; come to the phone ; обáждам  
 се по телeфóнa [11] call on the  
 phone ; *мóже ли дá се обáди* [12]  
 can s/he come to the phone
- обáче [7] however  
 обéд (*or обýд*) [8] lunch  
 обéден [9] lunch, noon (*adjective*) ;  
*обéдно врéме* [9] lunch time  
 обещáвам / обещáя [10] promise  
 обúдa [14] insult ; *понáсям обúдa*  
 [14] bear/sustain an insult  
 обикновén [8] usual  
 обикновéно [2] usually
- обúрам / обeрá [8] plunder, pick  
 обичáен, -áйна [14] customary  
 обичáй [13] custom, convention  
 обúчам [2] [3] like, love  
 облéчен, -eнa [14] dressed  
 облúчам / облeкá (-чéш) [13] dress  
 [someone]  
 облúчам се / облeкá се (-чéш) [13] put  
 on, don ; облúчам се спóртно [13]  
 wear/put on casual clothing  
 обрoзováние [3] education  
 обрúщам се / обúрна се [14] turn  
 обúвам / обúя [13] put someone's shoes,  
 stockings, etc. on  
 обúвам се / обúя се [13] put on shoes,  
 stockings, etc.  
 обúвка [3] shoe  
 обúщa [13] footwear  
 обúщ [7] general, common  
 общeствó [12] society  
 обýд [9] (*see also обéд*) lunch, noon ;  
*слeд обýд* [9] afternoon, after lunch  
 оглaднúвам / оглaднéя [4] get hungry  
 оглeдáло [11] mirror  
 оглéждам / оглeдам [14] survey, examine  
 оглéждам се / оглeдам се [14] look at  
 one's reflection  
 óгън (*plural oгнúбe*) [7] fire  
 oжéнвам / oжéня [11] marry (*transitive*)  
 oжéнвам се / oжéня се [11] get married  
 окúчвам / окúчa (-иш) [13] adorn,  
 decorate  
 окó (*plural очú*) [12] eye  
 октóмври [6] October  
 окúпвам се / окúпя се (-eш) [14] bathe  
 óлио [6] cooking oil  
 омéквам / омéкнa [11] soften, grow  
 milder  
 омлét [4] omelet  
 омрúзвам / омрúзва [12] tire, bore ;  
 омрúзва ми [12] I'm bored  
 онáзи [8] that (*feminine*)  
 онáя [11] that (*variant of онáзи*)  
 онéзи [8] those  
 óнзи [8] that (*masculine*) ; *óнзи дéн*  
 [9] the day before yesterday  
 онúя [11] those (*variant of онéзи*)  
 оновá [8] that (*neuter*)  
 онúй [11] that (*variant of оновá*)  
 óня [11] that (*variant of óнзи*)  
 опáсен [4] dangerous  
 опáшка [11] tail; line, queue ; *чáкам*  
*нá опáшка* [11] wait in/on line  
 óпepa [12] opera  
 опúсвам / опúшa (-eш) [7] describe  
 оплáквам / оплáчa (-eш) [11] mourn,  
 lament, weep ; *жúв дá го оплáчeш*

106

[11] it makes your heart bleed to see him  
 оплаквам се / оплача се (-еш) [11] complain, grumble  
 опознавам / опозная [7] recognize, get to know  
 опобням се / опобня се [12] come to [one's] senses ; опомни се! [12] snap out of it!  
 организирам [12] organize  
 орех [6] walnut  
 ориз [6] rice  
 освен [4] except [for]; in addition to ; освен това [4] besides, in addition  
 осем [6] eight  
 осемдесет [6] eighty  
 осемнайсет [6] eighteen  
 осемнайсети [8] eighteenth  
 осемстотин [9] eight hundred  
 осми [8] eighth  
 особен [10] special, particular  
 особено [8] especially  
 оставам / остава [3] [4] remain, stay ; остава още малко [3] there's still a little left  
 остана [9] remained; remaining, left, left-over  
 оставам / остава [8] leave (transitive)  
 от [1] [4] [6] [8] from; of; since (time); than ; салата от зеле [4] cabbage salad ; имавам нужда от [4] need, have need of ; от всички страни [6] from/on all sides ; от един час само [6] for only an hour ; от н.е. [9] A.D. ; от дете [12] since childhood ; от ваша страна [15] on your part  
 отбор [12] team  
 отворям / отворя [2] [3] [4] open  
 отворен, -ена [2] open  
 отвън [11] from outside  
 отвътре [9] from within  
 отговарям / отговоря [10] answer  
 отговор [7] answer  
 отгоре [11] from above  
 отдавна [6] long ago ; отдавна вече [6] for a long time now  
 отделен [3] separate  
 отделно [2] separately, under separate cover  
 отдолу [11] from below  
 отдясно [11] from the right  
 отзад [3] in back, in the rear, behind  
 отивам / отида [5] go  
 отказвам / откажа (-еш) [13] cancel, refuse  
 откакто [10] [ever] since  
 отколкото [10] than, in as much

открито [13] openly, above board, without hiding  
 откъде [1] whence, from where (interrogative)  
 отляво [11] from the left  
 отминавам / отмина [14] pass by, leave behind  
 отначало [14] at the beginning  
 отново [2] again, once more  
 отопление [11] heating  
 отпуса [2] break, time off, vacation ; в отпуса [2] on a break, on vacation  
 отпътувам [7] set off for, depart  
 отскоро [11] [since] quite recently ; женени сме съвсем отскоро [11] we've just gotten married  
 отстъпвам / отстъпя [8] step back, yield, give up  
 оттам [3] from there  
 оттук, оттука [5] from here  
 охлюв [14] snail shell  
 очаквам [7] await, expect  
 очи see око  
 очила (plural) [11] eyeglasses  
 още [2] still, yet ; още много [2] a lot more, still a lot ; още не говоря [3] but I don't/can't speak yet ; тя още не четё [3] she doesn't [know how to] read yet ; още не [5] not yet  
 падам / падна [7] fall ; пада голям сняг [7] it's snowing heavily  
 пазя [8] guard, preserve  
 пак [9] again  
 палец [12] thumb, big toe  
 палто [13] coat  
 паника [3] panic, worry ; няма място за паника [3] there's no need to worry  
 панталон (or панталони) [14] pants  
 папагал [9] parrot  
 парá [11] coin  
 парен [11] steam (adj.) ; парно отопление [11] central heating  
 пари [11] money ; пет пари не давам [14] I don't give a damn  
 партия [14] party  
 парцал [14] rag  
 пациент (ка) [4] [medical] patient  
 певец [10] singer  
 пейзаж [3] landscape, natural scene  
 пейка [3] bench  
 пекá (-чеш) [13] bake, roast  
 пекá се на слънце [13] sunbathe  
 перá [12] wash

257

- перон [7] (railway) platform  
 песен, -та (*plural* песни) [9] song  
 пет [6] five; пет пари не давам [14] I don't give a damn  
 петá [12] heel  
 петдесет [6] fifty  
 петима [6] five (*masculine animate*)  
 пети [8] fifth  
 петіца [10] "5" (next to top mark in school)  
 петнайсет [6] fifteen  
 петно [14] spot  
 петстотин [9] five hundred  
 петък [9] Friday  
 пешá [9] on foot; ходя пешá [9] go for a walk, walk (not ride)  
 пeя [11] sing  
 пиеса [12] play (theater)  
 пипам / пипна [9] touch, handle  
 писател (ка) [10] writer  
 пискюл [13] tassel, pendant  
 писмо [8] letter  
 пита́м [4] ask  
 пи́ша (-еш) [3] write  
 пия [3] drink  
 пияница [10] drunkard  
 плаж [14] beach  
 пла́н [7] plan  
 планина [3] mountain  
 пла́ша (-иш) [9] frighten  
 пла́ша се (-иш) [11] be frightened, fear  
 плащам / пла́тя [4] pay  
 племенник [10] nephew  
 племенница [10] niece  
 пло́д (*plural* плодове) [7] fruit  
 плóча [7] [13] tile, slab; phonograph record  
 плóчка [3] tile  
 плу́вам [9] swim  
 по [3] [5] [7] each; along, down; according to, in the manner of; about; хайде по една глътка [3] let's each have a drink; по коридора [5] down the corridor; преподавател по български [5] teacher of Bulgarian; по това време [7] at about that time  
 по- [8] [10] more... (*comparative degree particle*); по-хубав [8] nicer, prettier; по-голям [10] older; по-малък [10] younger; по-рано [14] before, earlier; "used to..."  
 побързвам / побързам [7] hurry up  
 повече [7] more; повечето [11] the majority  
 пови́квам / пови́кам [13] call, call out  
 по́вод [13] occasion, cause; по по́вод [13] regarding, in connection with  
 повта́рям / повто́ря [12] repeat  
 повторéние [12] repeat, replay  
 повя́рвам [8] believe, give credence to  
 поглéждам / поглéдна [14] have/take a look, look at; погледни́ [14] look! look over there!  
 поговóрвам / поговóря [12] talk for a bit  
 погрі́жвам се / погрі́жа се (-иш) [11] take care of, look after  
 под [3] under, below; затвáрям вратáта под нóс [13] shut the door in [someone's] face  
 пóд [4] floor  
 подáвам / подáм (-дадеш) [11] hand, pass, reach  
 подáрък [7] present, gift  
 подаря́вам / подаря́ [9] give (away), give a present  
 подгóтвям / подгóтвя [12] prepare, make ready  
 подгóтовка [5] preparation; подгóтовката върви́ [5] the preparation's coming along  
 подна́сям / поднесá [6] present, offer, serve  
 подóбен [8] similar; ни́що подóбно [8] nothing of the sort  
 подозі́рам / подозрá [14] suspect, be suspicious  
 подпíрам / подпрá [14] prop up, support; подпíрам си брадичката [14] [sit] with chin in hand  
 подпрáвка [6] spice (cooking)  
 подрóбен [13] detailed  
 подрóбно [13] in detail  
 подсéщам / подсéтя [4] remind, call to mind; тоvá ме подсéща [4] that reminds me  
 подскáзвам / подскáжа (-еш) [13] hint, prompt  
 поéмам / поéма [8] take, take up; поéмам [си] дъх [8] catch one's breath  
 пожела́вам / пожела́я [8] wish; пожела́вам от сърце́ [10] send heartfelt wishes  
 позволя́вам / позволáя [6] allow  
 позвъ́нявам / позвъ́ня [9] call  
 пóздрав [2] greeting  
 позна́вам [3] know, be acquainted with  
 позна́вам / позна́я [1] [3] [7] know; guess; позна́вам по очите́ [7] tell by [some]one's eyes; позна́вам числó [14] pick/guess a number  
 позна́йник [13] acquaintance  
 позна́йница [13] female acquaintance  
 позна́т [8] acquaintance



- поигравам / поиграя [10] play for a while
- поисквам / пойскам [12] want, wish, ask for
- показвам / покажа (-еш) [7] show
- поканвам / покáня [10] invite
- покрай [10] because of
- пóкрив [3] roof
- полé [15] field, plain ; софийското полé [15] the plain around Sofia
- полéзен [8] useful ; полéзно за здравето [8] good for you [for one's health] ; мога ли с нещó да бéда полéзен? [13] can I help in some way?
- пóлза [12] use, advantage ; каквá е пóлзата [12] what's the use
- поливам / полéя [13] pour ; елá да ти полéя [13] let me pour water over your hands ; поливам цветята [13] water the flowers
- половин(а) [6] half
- полунóщ [9] midnight
- получáвам / полúча (-иш) [8] receive, get
- помáгам / помóгна [7] help
- помислям / помисля [12] think about
- помóлвам / помóля [13] beg, ask
- пóмня [13] remember
- пóмощ, -тá [9] help
- понасям / понесá [14] carry off; sustain, endure ; понасям обéда [14] bear/sustain an insult
- пóне [9] at least
- понеделник [9] Monday
- пóнякога [8] sometimes
- попитвам / попитам [14] ask, inquire
- попитвам се / попитам се [13] ask oneself, wonder
- поприказвам [11] have a chat
- популярен [12] popular
- попявам / попея [11] sing a little
- поразхóждам / поразхóдя [11] take for a brief stroll
- порáствам / порáсна [14] grow up
- портокал [10] orange
- портокалов [10] orange (*adj.*)
- пóрция [7] portion, serving
- поръчвам / поръчам [4] order
- посáждам / посадя [8] seat, plant
- посещáвам / посетя [11] visit
- пóсле [2] [6] later, afterwards; then
- пóследен [6] last ; в пóследно време [6] lately ; четá до пóследната бúква [8] read every last word
- посóка [6] direction ; пита́м за посóката [6] ask directions
- посолявам / посоля [9] salt
- посрещам / посрещна [5] meet, greet, entertain
- пóст [10] Lent; fast
- пóстен [10] Lenten, pertaining to fasting
- постоянен [10] constant
- постоянно [10] constantly
- постягам / постéгна [11] tighten, fasten; prepare, fix up
- потичам / потекá (-чеш) [12] start flowing
- потърсвам / потърся [7] look for, seek
- почáквам / почáкам [7] wait
- пóчвам / пóчна [10] begin, start, commence
- почерпвам / почерпя [6] treat someone to ; почерпвам всíчки с по двé [6] treat everyone to two each
- почивам / почи́на [3] [4] rest, go on holiday
- почивам си / почи́на си [8] rest
- почивен [8] rest (*adj.*) ; почи́вен дéн [8] day off, holiday
- почивка [3] vacation trip, rest
- почи́на [8] die
- почита́м / почетá [11] read for a bit
- почти́ [8] almost
- почувствувам (*or* почувствам) [14] have the feeling, realize, become aware
- пóща [3] mail, post office
- пóщаджия, -ийка [10] letter carrier, postman
- пóщенски [10] postal ; пóщенска кутия́ [10] mailbox
- появявам се / появя́ се [14] appear
- прáв [4] straight, upright ; стоя́ прáв [4] stand, remain standing
- прáвило [12] rule ; прáвила на пъ́тното движéние [12] traffic laws, rules of the road
- прáво [12] [legal] right ; ймам прáво [12] have the right ; áвторско прáво [12] copyright ; прáвата на живóтните [12] animal rights
- правослáвен [8] Orthodox [religion] (*adj.*)
- прáвя [3] do, make ; прáвя излет [3] go on an excursion ; прáвя номерá на [8] play dirty tricks on
- прáзен [6] empty
- прáзник [10] holiday; feast
- празну́вам [10] celebrate
- пращам / прáтя [2] [3] [4] send
- преброявам / преброя́ [6] count out
- прэвод [14] translation
- прэглед [4] examination (medical) ; ймате нúжда от прэглед [4] you need to be examined
- преглэждам / прэглéдам [8] examine
- прéден [10] front, anterior

## Българо-английски речник

- преди [6] ago  
 преди [6] before; previously; преди  
 н.е. [9] В.С.; преди Р.Хр. [9]  
 В.С.  
 преди да [14] before (*relative conjunction*)  
 предизвиквам / предизвикам [10]  
 provoke, defy; cause, evoke, induce  
 предимно [9] primarily  
 предишен [9] previous  
 предлагам / предложи (-иш) [8] proffer,  
 propose  
 предложение [9] proposition, suggestion  
 предпочитам / предпочета [4] prefer  
 представителен [14] representative;  
 personable, distinguished  
 представям / представя [13] present,  
 offer  
 представям си / представя си [13]  
 imagine  
 предстоящ [9] forthcoming, impending  
 през [4] [8] [9] during; through; at intervals  
 ; гледам през прозореца [6] look  
 out the window; през седмица [8]  
 every other week; през деня [9] in  
 the daytime; през нощта [9] at  
 night  
 прекален [13] excessive, unconscionable;  
 прекалено голям [13] way too big  
 прекарвам / прекарам [7] spend  
 преписвам / препиша (-еш) [13] rewrite,  
 copy  
 преподавател (ка) [1] teacher (university  
 level)  
 прясен, прясна [8] fresh  
 пресечка [11] intersection  
 прехвърлям се / прехвърля се [12]  
 transfer; shift  
 преча (-иш) [8] bother  
 при [7] at, by  
 прибирам / прибера [8] gather, collect  
 прибирам се / прибера се [8] arrive  
 home  
 приближавам / приближа (-иш) [14]  
 approach  
 привличам / привлеча (-чеш) [9] attract,  
 draw  
 привързан [11] tied, bound, attached  
 приготвям / приготвя [10] prepare, make  
 ready  
 приемам / приема [10] accept, adopt  
 приказвам [9] talk, converse; say  
 приказка [12] tale, story; chat, talking  
 приключение [14] adventure  
 приличам [10] look like, resemble  
 природа [7] nature  
 пристигам / пристигна [6] arrive  
 притеснявам / притесня [8] worry, cause  
 concern to, embarrass  
 притеснявам се / притесня се [7]  
 worry; не се притеснявай [7] don't  
 worry  
 притъпявам / притъпя [14] blunt, dull;  
 вниманието му се притъпи [14] his  
 attention wandered  
 прическа [12] haircut, hair style  
 приятел (ка) [1] friend  
 приятен [9] pleasant  
 проверявам / проверя [13] check, verify,  
 test  
 програма [8] program  
 продавам / продам (-дадеш) [6] sell  
 продавач (ка) [7] salesperson  
 продължавам / продължа (-иш) [5]  
 continue  
 прозорец (*plural* прозорци) [3] window  
 прозорче [13] small window  
 пролет, -та [9] spring  
 пролетен [13] spring (*adj.*); пролетно  
 равнодънствие [13] vernal equinox  
 променям / променя [11] change, alter  
 променям се / променя се [11] change  
 промяна (*plural* промени) [13] change  
 пропасть, -та [11] abyss, cavern  
 пропускам / пропуска [10] skip, let pass;  
 miss  
 простiram / простра [12] stretch out;  
 простiram дрехи [12] hang clothes  
 out to dry  
 простуда [2] cold (illness)  
 професор [13] professor  
 прохладен [15] cool  
 прочитам / прочета [5] read (to  
 completion)  
 проявявам / проявя [8] appear, show;  
 проявявам интерес към [8] take an  
 interest in  
 пръст (*plural* пръсти) [12] finger, toe  
 прясна *see* прясен  
 птица [7] bird  
 публика [10] public  
 пуканка (*singular rare*) [9] popcorn  
 пускам / пусна [10] let, allow; drop;  
 пускам писмо [10] mail a letter  
 пуст [10] empty; wretched, damned  
 пуша (-иш) [4] smoke  
 пушене [4] smoking  
 пък [11] but, yet, and, while  
 пълен [5] full; plump; пълно копие  
 [14] exact replica  
 пъlnя [6] fill  
 първенство [10] championship  
 първи [4] first  
 пържа (-иш) [6] fry  
 пържен, -ена [14] fried; пържени  
 филийки [14] French toast

- пържѳла [4] chop, steak ; пържѳла с гарнѳтура [4] steak with the trimmings
- пѳстѳрва [9] trout
- пѳт (*plural* пѳти) [4] [6] time (*instance*) ; за пѳрви пѳт сѳм тѳка [4] this is the first time I've been here
- пѳт, -ят (*plural* пѳтища) [6] [8] way, path, road ; дѳлѳг пѳт [6] a long way [to go] ; ѳмам 6 чѳса пѳт [6] have 6 hours to go ; по пѳтя [8] along the way
- пѳтѳка [11] [foot]path
- пѳтен [12] road (*adj.*), traveling ; правилѳ на пѳтното движѳние [12] traffic laws, rules of the road
- пѳтешѳствие [11] trip
- пѳтник [7] traveler
- пѳтѳвам [1] [3] travel
- пѳтѳване [7] travels, trip
- 
- рѳбота [2] [11] work, job ; на рѳбота сѳм [4] be at work ; ще свѳрши рѳбота [11] it'll do the job ; ѳмам си рѳбота [14] have things to do
- рѳботен [6] work (*adj.*) ; рѳботно врѳме [6] office hours, hours of operation
- рѳботоспѳсѳбен [9] efficient, productive
- рѳбѳтя [4] [11] work, be in operation ; каквѳ рѳботите? [5] what [kind of] work do you do? ; не рѳботи [11] it's out of order
- рѳвен [15] even, flat; equal
- равнѳще [15] level, standard, plain ; мѳрското равнѳще [15] sea level
- равнодѳствие [13] equinox
- рѳдвам се [5] rejoice, be happy
- рѳдио [14] radio ; сѳбщѳвам по рѳдиѳто [14] announce on the radio
- рѳдост [10] joy, pleasure
- рѳдостен [5] happy, joyful
- рѳждам / родѳ [10] bear, give birth to, be fruitful
- разбѳрам / разберѳ [1] [3] [4] understand
- разбѳрам се / разберѳ се [12] come to an understanding, agree ; разбѳра се [3] of course
- разбѳране [12] understanding ; ширѳко разбѳране [12] liberal interpretation
- развалѳн [11] spoiled, rotten
- развлѳчѳние [12] amusement
- разглѳждам / разглѳдам [4] examine, study
- разговѳрям [10] converse
- раздѳвам / раздѳам (-дѳдѳш) [8] give out, distribute
- рѳзказ [14] story
- разкѳзвам / разкѳжа (-ѳш) [8] relate, tell
- разлѳчен [10] different, various ; нѳй-разлѳчни нещѳ [10] all sorts of things
- разминѳвам се / разминѳ се [15] pass each other, blow over
- разплѳквам се / разплѳча се (-ѳш) [14] burst into tears
- разпѳзнавам / разпѳзнѳя [8] distinguish, discern
- разпрѳвям / разпрѳвя [12] tell, relate ; разпрѳвям вѳц [12] tell a joke
- разрѳшѳние [13] permission
- разсмѳвам се / разсмѳя се [14] burst out laughing
- разсѳрдвам се / разсѳрдѳ се [14] get angry
- разѳмен [13] sensible, rational
- разхѳдка [9] walk, stroll ; извѳждам кѳчетѳ на разхѳдка [9] walk the dog ; разхѳдка из градѳ [11] city tour
- разхѳждам / разхѳдѳ [10] take for a walk
- разхѳждам се / разхѳдѳ се [8] walk around, take a walk
- разчѳтам [12] rely on, count [on] ; мѳжеш да разчѳташ на мѳне [12] you can count on me
- ракѳя [2] rakia (strong brandy from fruits)
- рѳмо (*plural* раменѳ or раменѳ) [12] shoulder
- рѳнен [13] early
- рѳно [9] early ; рѳно-рѳно [14] very early ; пѳ-рѳно [14] before, earlier; "used to..."
- реваншѳрам се [5] make up, return a favor ; с нѳщо да се реваншѳрам [5] make [it] up with/by doing something
- ревѳр [13] lapel
- ревю (*neuter*) [13] revue, show ; мѳдно ревю [13] fashion show
- рѳдки *see* рѳдѳк
- редѳвен [13] regular; in order
- редѳвно [13] at regular intervals, regularly
- редѳ [12] arrange, put in order ; редѳ се на опѳшка [12] get/wait in line
- рѳжа (-ѳш) [12] cut, slice
- режисѳр [12] director
- рекѳ (-чѳш) [7] say, utter
- рекѳ [9] river
- ремѳнтѳрам [2] redo, make repairs
- рѳпѳблика [14] republic
- рѳсторѳнт [4] restaurant
- рѳцѳпта [6] recipe

## Българо-английски речник

- речник [7] dictionary  
 рѣша (-ѣш) [13] comb  
 рѣшавам, рѣшá (-ѣш) [8] [11] solve;  
 decide ; рѣшавам кръстослóвица [8]  
 do a crossword puzzle ; твърдо  
 рѣшавам [11] firmly resolve  
 рѣба [9] fish ; ловя рѣба [9] fish,  
 catch fish ; хóдя за рѣба [9] go  
 fishing  
 рѣза [13] shirt, chemise  
 рѣлски [8] Rila (*adj.*)  
 рѣсýвам [3] draw  
 рѣсýнка [3] drawing  
 рóден [11] one's own, native ; рóдно  
 мя́сто [11] birthplace  
 родѣтел [9] parent  
 роднѣна [10] relative  
 родя́ *see* раждам  
 рождѣн [5] birth (*adj.*) ; рождѣн дѣн  
 [5] birthday  
 рождѣствó [9] Christmas ; Рождѣствó  
 Христóво [9] Christmas ; предѣ  
 Р.Хр. [9] B.C. ; след Р.Хр. [9]  
 A.D.  
 рóкля [12] dress  
 ромán [3] novel  
 рѣкá (*plural* рѣцѣ) [12] hand, arm  
 рѣкавица [9] glove  
 рѣдѣк, рѣдки [10] rare  
 рѣдко [10] rarely
- 207
- с [2] [9] with; by ; пѣтýвам с влák [2]  
 travel by train ; с всѣчки сѣли [9]  
 with all one's strength, full tilt ; с еднá  
 дýма [9] in a word ; с часовѣ [9]  
 for hours (on end) ; с мálко  
 закъснѣние [14] a little late  
 са [1] are (*3rd plural*) ; *see* сѣм  
 сакó [13] jacket  
 салám [11] sausage  
 салáта [4] salad  
 сáм, самá, самó, самѣ [12] alone, [the]  
 very, by oneself ; самѣят áз [12] I  
 myself  
 сáмо [1] only  
 самолѣт [11] airplane  
 сáндвич [9] sandwich  
 сармѣ [6] stuffed cabbage or vine leaves  
 сáтира [5] satire  
 СÁЩ = Съединѣните америкánски щáти  
 [1] USA (United States of America)  
 сбóрник [12] collection  
 сваря́вам / сваря́ [5] cook, boil  
 свáт (*or* свáтя) [10] in-law  
 свáтба [10] wedding  
 свáтбен, -ѣна [11] wedding (*adj.*) ;  
 свáтбѣно пѣтѣшѣствие [11]  
 honeymoon  
 свѣкѣр [10] father-in-law (to bride)  
 свѣкѣрва [9] mother-in-law (to bride)  
 свѣтóвен [10] world (*adj.*)  
 свѣтъл [10] light (*adj.*)  
 свѣвам / свѣя [13] bend, fold, roll ;  
 свѣвам гнездó [13] build a nest  
 свѣквам / свѣкна [15] get used to, grow  
 accustomed to  
 свободá [7] freedom  
 свобóден [2] free ; мя́стото е свобóдно  
 [2] the seat is not taken ; свобóден  
 сѣм сѣгá [2] I'm free [not busy] now  
 свóй [10] own (*adj.*)  
 свѣршвам / свѣрша (-ѣш) [6] complete,  
 finish ; ще свѣрши рáбота [11] it'll  
 do the job  
 свѣршен, -ѣна [12] complete, perfect ;  
 мѣнало свѣршено врѣме [12] aorist  
 tense ; свѣршен вѣд [12] perfective  
 aspect  
 сгóтвям / сгóтвя [5] cook, make  
 СДС (*pron.* сѣдесѣ) [14] SDS (UDF,  
 Union of Democratic Forces)  
 сѣ [1] verbal particle  
 сѣ [5] oneself (*direct object pronoun*)  
 сѣ [7] oneself, themselves, itself, etc.  
 сѣбе си [11] oneself (*reflexive object form*)  
 сѣгá [1] now ; сѣгá излѣзам [4] I'll  
 go out right away  
 сѣгáшен [9] present-day, current ;  
 сѣгáшно врѣме [9] present tense  
 сѣдем [2] seven  
 сѣдемдесѣт [6] seventy  
 сѣдемнáйсѣт [6] seventeen  
 сѣдемстóтин [9] seven hundred  
 сѣдми [8] seventh  
 сѣдмица [6] week  
 сѣдна *see* сядам  
 сѣдя [4] sit, be seated ; сѣдя на течѣние  
 [4] sit in a drafty place  
 сѣкá (-чѣш) [9] cut  
 секретáр (ка) [1] secretary  
 сѣло [2] village  
 сѣмѣен [10] family, domestic ; тѣсен  
 сѣмѣен кръг [10] immediate family  
 сѣмѣйство [11] family  
 сѣптѣмври [5] September  
 сѣрвѣрам [4] serve, have available ; не  
 знáм каквó сѣрвѣрат тýка [4] I don't  
 know what they have here  
 сѣрвѣтóр (ка) [4] waiter  
 сѣстрá [10] sister  
 сѣщам сѣ / сѣтя сѣ [11] recall, come to  
 mind, think of, remember  
 си [1] are (*2nd singular*) ; *see* сѣм

- си [5] [7] to oneself (*indirect object pronoun*); казвам си [5] say to oneself
- сигурен [6] sure, certain
- сигурно [9] surely, certainly
- сила [7] strength, force
- силен [2] strong; има силен вятър [2] it's very windy, there's a strong wind; валият силни дъждове [12] it's raining heavily
- син (синя, синьо, сини) [8] blue
- син, -ът (*plural* синове) [9] son
- сирене [7] white cheese
- скала [14] rock, cliff
- скачам / скоча (-иш) [9] jump
- скоро [1] soon
- скоро [19] speed
- скоча *see* скачам
- скривам / скрия [13] hide
- скучен [13] boring
- скъсан [14] torn
- слаб [14] weak, thin
- слава [9] glory; слава Бóгу [9] thank God
- слагам / сложа (-иш) [4] put; слагам да легне [5] put [someone] to bed
- сладолед [6] ice cream
- сладкарница [14] sweet shop
- сладко [3] thick sweet preserves
- сладък [3] sweet
- след [6] after; след 15 минути [6] in 15 minutes; след обяд [9] afternoon, after lunch; след Р.Хр. [9] A.D.
- след като [14] after (*relative conjunction*)
- следващ [8] next, following
- следобед [4] afternoon; следобед съм на работа [4] I have to work this afternoon
- следобеден [9] afternoon (*adj.*)
- сливица [12] tonsil
- слизам / сляза [7] get off, go down, descend
- сложен [5] difficult, complex
- служба [14] service, position; в службата [14] at work
- случаен, -айна [12] accidental, chance
- случайно [12] by chance, accidentally
- случай [12] instance; chance; в такъв случай [12] in that case
- слушам [4] listen, obey
- слънце [9] sun; слънцето грее [9] the sun is shining
- слънчев [10] sunny
- сме [1] are (*1st plural*); *see* съм
- сменям / сменя [3] [4] change, replace
- смешен [13] funny, humorous
- смея се [13] laugh
- смисъл [11] sense, meaning; има смисъл [11] it makes sense
- смущавам се / смутя се [13] get confused, be embarrassed
- смъртен [4] mortal
- смятам / сметна [13] reckon, count; смятам (за) [13] consider (to be)
- смях, смехът (*plural* смехове) [11] laughter; умирам от смях [11] burst one's sides/die laughing
- снегове [7] *see* сняг
- снежен [11] snow (*adj.*); снежен човек [11] snowman
- снежинка [10] snowflake
- снимка [6] photograph
- снощен [9] last night's
- снощи [9] yesterday evening, last night
- сняг, снегът (*plural* снегове) [3] [7] snow; бял като сняг [3] white as snow
- собствен, -ена [12] one's own; виждам със собствените си очи [12] see with one's own eyes
- сок [7] juice
- сол, -та [9] salt
- солен [9] salted
- солница [9] salt shaker
- софийски [8] of Sofia; софийското поле [15] the plain around Sofia
- софиянец [14] Sofia resident (male)
- софиянка [14] Sofia resident (female)
- социалистически [14] socialist
- специален [9] special
- спечелвам / спечеля [14] win, gain, earn
- спирам / спра [11] stop
- спирка [7] bus/tram stop; на другата спирка [7] at the next stop
- списание [8] magazine, journal
- спомням си / спомня си [8] recall
- спортен [9] sports (*adj.*)
- споря [13] dispute, contend; не споря [13] don't argue
- спя [4] sleep
- срам, -ът (*plural* срамовете or срамове) [12] shame, modesty; срам ме е [12] I'm ashamed, I'm too shy; не те е срам! [12] you should be ashamed; как не те е срам [12] shame on you
- средá [2] middle
- среден [3] middle (*adj.*)
- средище [9] center
- средновековен [9] medieval
- средновековие [8] Middle Ages
- среща [9] meeting, appointment
- срещам / срещна [10] meet
- срещу [12] against, opposite; across from
- сряда [9] Wednesday

Българо-английски речник

- ставам / стана [1] [4] [10] get up, stand up; become, happen; be; става течение [1] there's a draft; ставаме много [10] there gets to be a lot of us; синът им стана на четири [10] their son has turned four; ще ти стане топло [11] you'll be/get [too] hot; за какво става дума? [11] what's it about?; стана ми мъчно [13] I had a hard time
- стадион [12] stadium
- стар [7] old; доброто старо време [11] the good old days
- стая [9] room
- сте [1] are (2nd plural); see съм
- стига [3] enough, that's enough; стига с този прозорец [3] enough about that window; стига толкова [10] that's enough
- стигам / стигна [13] reach, arrive at
- стихотворение [3] poem
- сто [5] (a) hundred
- стока [9] goods, commodity
- стомач [12] stomach
- стол [4] chair
- стоп [10] stop-sign, hitchhiking
- стопаджия, -ийка [10] hitchhiker
- стоя [4] [11] stand, be standing; stay (in one place); стоя прав [4] stand, remain standing
- страна [6] [7] [15] side; country; part; от всички страни [6] from/on all sides; от ваша страна [15] on your part
- страница [3] page
- страхотен [5] horrible, dreadful, terrifying; страхотна идея [5] [a] terrific idea
- страх, -ът (plural страхове) [12] fear, dread; страх ме е (от) [12] I'm afraid (of)
- страхувам се [14] fear, be afraid of
- страшен [9] terrible, fearful; няма нищо страшно [11] there's nothing to be afraid of
- струвам [4] cost; това колко струва? [4] how much does this cost?; колко струва? [4] how much is it?
- стрикам / стресна [11] startle, scare
- стрикам се / стресна се [11] be startled, take fright
- студ, -ът (plural студове) [7] cold, chill
- студен [4] cold
- студенина cold, frigidity
- студент (ка) [1] university student
- стълба [11] step, ladder; качвам се по стълбите [11] climb the stairs
- стъпало [12] sole (of the foot)
- сурвакар [10] survakar (New Year's wassailer)
- суров [11] severe
- сутрин, -та [9] morning; сутрин, сутринта [9] in the morning; утре сутринта [9] tomorrow morning
- сушен [10] dried
- счупен, -ена [11] broken
- събирам / събера [3] [4] gather, collect
- събличам / съблека (-чеш) [13] undress [someone]
- събличам се / съблека се (-чеш) [13] undress, get undressed
- събота [8] Saturday
- събувам / събуя [13] take [something] off [someone's] foot
- събувам се / събуя се [13] take [something] off one's foot
- събуждам / събудя [11] wake
- събуждам се / събудя се [11] wake up, awaken
- съвет [10] advice
- съветвам [5] advise
- съвпадам / съвпадна [10] coincide, concure
- съвсем [5] completely; съвсем навреме [5] at exactly the right moment; женени сме съвсем отскоро [11] we've just gotten married
- съгласен [12] in agreement
- съжаление [1] pity; за съжаление [1] unfortunately
- съжالياвам / съжاليا [8] regret, be sorry
- съкровище [13] treasure
- сълза (plural сълзи or сълзи) [12] tear (from the eye)
- съм [1] am (1st singular); to be (citation form)
- сън (plural сънища) [8] dream
- сън, -ят [8] sleep
- сънувам [6] dream; сънувам кошмари [6] have nightmares
- съобщавам / съобщя [5] announce, inform
- съобщение [5] announcement; съобщение за колет [5] postal notice (for a package)
- съпруг, съпруга [3] [10] spouse
- сърби (3rd person only) [12] itch
- сърдечен [2] hearty
- сърна [8] deer, doe
- сърце [10] heart; пожелавам от сърце [10] send heartfelt wishes
- със = с [7] with
- съсед (ка) [5] neighbor
- състои се [14] consist of; take place
- същ [3] same; същото [4] the same thing

Българо-английски речник

сѣщо [1] also  
 съюз [14] union  
 сѣдам / сѣдна [4] sit down, take a seat ;  
 седнѣте, господѣне! [4] have a seat,  
 sir!

та [13] and; so that  
 тѣзи [3] this (*feminine*)  
 83 такѣ [4] that way, like that ; как такѣ  
 [11] how is it that; how can that be  
 таксѣ (*neuter*) [14] taxi  
 такѣв (такѣва, такѣва, такѣва) [11]  
 such ; такѣва нещѣ [11] such  
 things  
 там [4] there  
 таралѣж [9] hedgehog  
 таратѣр [6] yogurt and cucumber soup  
 тѣтко (*plural* тѣтковци) [10] Dad  
 тѣча (-иш) [13] respect  
 тѣя [11] this (*variant of тѣзи*)  
 твѣй [8] your, yours (*singular*)  
 твѣрд [11] hard, firm, steadfast  
 твѣрдо [11] firmly, staunchly ; твѣрдо  
 рѣшѣвам [11] firmly resolve  
 те [5] you (*direct object pronoun*)  
 тѣ [1] they  
 теѣтр (*plural* теѣтри) [6] theater  
 тѣбе [10] you (*direct object pronoun*)  
 тѣжѣк [2] heavy  
 тѣзи [3] these  
 текѣ (-чѣш) [9] flow  
 телевизѣя [6] television  
 телефон [5] telephone ; на телефонѣ  
 сѣм [5] be [talking] on the phone  
 телефонен [13] telephone (*adj.*)  
 тѣнджерѣ [6] (cooking) pot  
 тѣнис [13] tennis  
 тѣсен, тѣсна [2] tight, cramped, narrow ;  
 тѣсен семѣен крѣг [10] immediate  
 family  
 тетрѣдка [7] notebook  
 тѣхен, тѣхна [8] their, theirs  
 тѣхника [12] technology  
 тѣхникум [3] technical high school  
 течѣние [1] current, draft ; стѣва  
 течѣние [1] there's a draft  
 тѣ [1] you (*singular, familiar*)  
 ти [7] [to] you (*indirect object pronoun*)  
 тип [7] type  
 типѣчен [3] typical  
 тѣчам [8] run  
 тѣя [11] these (*variant of тѣзи*)  
 то [11] then (*particle*) ; и то [11] at  
 that  
 тѣ [1] it (*rarely, he or she*)

товѣ [2] [3] this (*neuter*) ; товѣ не ѣ  
 ли шишѣ? [2] isn't that a bottle? ;  
 товѣ е [13] that's that  
 тогѣва [4] then, in that case; at that  
 point ; пѣй еднѣ бѣра тогѣва [4]  
 have a beer, then  
 тѣзи [3] this (*masculine*)  
 тѣй [1] he, it  
 току-щѣ [14] just now  
 тѣлкова (*or* тѣлкоз) [4] so much, so  
 many, to such a degree  
 тѣпка [8] ball  
 тѣпѣл [2] warm  
 торбѣ [11] bag, sack  
 тѣто [14] lottery, pool  
 тѣчен [6] exact, precise  
 тѣчно [6] [12] just, exactly  
 тѣя [11] this (*variant of тѣзи*)  
 трѣкам [13] rattle  
 трѣмѣен, -ѣйна [7] tram (*adj.*)  
 трѣмѣй [2] tram  
 трѣсѣ [12] shake ; трѣсѣ ме [12]  
 I've got the shakes; I've got a fever  
 трѣти [8] third  
 трѣтирам [8] treat  
 трѣ [2] three  
 трѣйсѣт (*or* трѣдѣсѣт) [6] thirty  
 трѣма [6] three (*masculine animate*)  
 трѣнайсѣт [6] thirteen  
 трѣста [9] three hundred  
 трѣтоѣр [14] sidewalk  
 трѣден [5] difficult  
 трѣгвам / трѣгна [1] [4] set out, leave ;  
 трѣгвам на учѣлище [5] start school  
 трѣбѣва (*3rd person only*) [12] must,  
 should ; тѣй трѣбѣва да дѣйде [12]  
 he needs to come  
 трѣбвам [12] be necessary to ; трѣбѣва  
 му адѣокѣт [12] he needs a lawyer  
 тѣй [11] this (*variant form of товѣ*)  
 тѣк (*or* тѣка) [2] here (*location*)  
 турѣст [8] tourist  
 тѣрци [6] Turks (*plural of тѣрчин*)  
 туршѣя [10] pickles; pickled vegetables  
 тѣй [11] thus (*variant of такѣ*)  
 тѣкмо [10] just, exactly; only ; тѣкмо  
 сѣгѣ [10] just this minute  
 тѣргѣвец [9] merchant  
 тѣрпѣлив [3] patient (*adj.*)  
 тѣрся [7] seek, look for  
 тѣст [10] father-in-law (to husband)  
 тѣща [10] mother-in-law (to husband)  
 тѣя [1] she, it  
 тѣх [10] them (*direct object pronoun*)

Българо-английски речник

у [10] at the home of ; у домá [10] at home, at one's house  
 убеждавам / убедя [11] persuade ;  
 убеждавам [14] try to convince  
 убедя [14] succeed in convincing  
 удобен [11] convenient, comfortable  
 ужас [14] horror  
 ужасен [12] terrible  
 улица [3] street  
 умен [10] smart, intelligent  
 умирам / умра [11] die ; умирам от смях [11] die laughing, die from laughter  
 уморен [8] tired  
 уморявам се / уморя се [12] get tired, become exhausted  
 университет [7] university  
 университетски [12] university (adj.)  
 уреждам / уредя [9] arrange, settle  
 урок [5] lesson  
 усилено [3] intensively  
 успех [5] success ; успех на изпита [5] good luck on the test  
 успявам / успея [8] succeed, manage to  
 уста [12] mouth  
 усна [12] lip  
 устройвам / устрой [13] arrange, organize  
 утре [4] tomorrow ; утре вечер [9] tomorrow evening ; утре сутринта [9] tomorrow morning  
 утрешен [9] tomorrow's  
 утринен [9] morning (adj.)  
 утро [9] morning ; добро утро [9] good morning  
 ухо (plural уши) [12] ear  
 уча (-иш) [5] learn, teach  
 учебник [2] textbook, manual  
 ученик [7] student, pupil  
 ученичка [7] female student or pupil  
 училище (plural училища) [5] [6] school ; тръгвам на училище [5] start school  
 училищен [10] school (adj.) ; училищен звънец [10] school bell  
 учител (ка) [1] teacher (up to 12th grade)  
 уши see ухо

фанелка (or фланелка) [14] sweatshirt, T-shirt  
 февруари [9] February  
 фестивал [5] festival  
 филийка [14] little slice ; пържени филийки [14] French toast  
 филия [14] slice  
 филм (plural филми) [8] film, movie  
 фланелка see фанелка

фотоапарат [5] camera  
 фурор [13] furor ; предизвиквам фурор [13] cause a ruckus  
 футбол [10] soccer

хазайка [15] landlady  
 хайде [3] come on, let's ; хайде по една глътка! [3] [come on,] let's each have a drink! ; хайде да се чукнем [11] let's have a toast  
 хамстер [9] hamster  
 хапвам / хапна [15] eat, have a bite  
 харесвам / харесам [7] [12] like  
 хартия [8] paper  
 хващам / хвана [9] grasp, seize, catch  
 хем (хем ... хем) [12] and; both... and...; not only..., but...  
 хиляда (plural хиляди) [9] thousand  
 хладилник [7] refrigerator  
 хлапак [14] kid ; но се появи онзи хлапак [14] and then this kid appeared  
 хляб [5] bread ; иди за хляб! [5] go buy some bread!  
 ходя [6] go ; ходя на кино [6] go to the movies ; ходя на училище [6] go to school ; ходя за риба [9] go fishing ; ходя пеша [9] go on foot, walk (not ride) ; ходя бос [13] go barefoot  
 хора [4] people  
 хотел [9] hotel  
 храня [8] feed, nourish  
 христов [9] Christ's ; Рождество Христово [9] Christmas ; преди Р.Хр. [9] B.C.  
 хубав [2] fine, nice, beautiful, pretty ; всичко хубаво [2] all the best  
 хубавица [5] beauty  
 хумор [5] humor

цар, -ят (plural царé) [8] tsar, emperor  
 цвете (plural цветя) [6] flower  
 цветен [3] colored  
 целувам / целуна [5] kiss  
 цена [12] price ; на всяка цена [12] at any price, at all costs, absolutely  
 централен [12] central  
 център (plural центрове) [7] center  
 цигара [4] cigarette  
 цирк [6] circus  
 църква [3] church  
 цъфтя [9] bloom  
 цял, цели [7] whole, entire



Българо-английски речник

ч. = часът, часа [9]  
 чадър (*plural* чадъри) [12] umbrella  
 чаен, чаена (*or* чайна) [7] tea (*adj.*)  
 чай (*plural* чаеве) [7] tea  
 чайник [7] teapot  
 чакалня [15] waiting room  
 чакам [3] await, wait, wait for  
 чанта [2] bag, briefcase  
 час, -ът, 2 часа (*plural* часове) [6] [7]  
 hour; class ; ко̀лко е часът? [6]  
 what time is it? ; в ко̀лко часа? [6]  
 at what time? ; в 1 ч. [6] at 1:00  
 часовник [7] watch, clock  
 чаша [3] glass, cup  
 че [3] that (*subordinate conjunction*)  
 чейндж [10] currency exchange office  
 чейнчаджия, -ийка [10] unofficial money  
 changer  
 чело (*or* челó) [12] forehead  
 червén [3] red  
 червó [12] intestine  
 черен [11] black ; черен дрóб [12]  
 liver  
 черéша [12] cherry  
 черпя [4] treat ; у̀тре черпя аз [4]  
 it's my treat tomorrow  
 чéст [3] frequent  
 чéстен [12] honorable, honest ; чéстна  
 дýма [12] word of honor  
 чéстít [10] happy (*in greeting*) ;  
 чéстítо [11] congratulations! ;  
 чéстítа Нóва Годíна [10] happy  
 New Year ; чéстít прázник [11]  
 happy holiday ; чéстít рождén дéн  
 [11] happy birthday  
 чéстítка [10] greeting card  
 чéсто [3] often  
 чéсьн [6] garlic  
 четá [3] read  
 четвѣрт, -тá [11] quarter  
 четвѣрти [8] fourth  
 четвѣртѣк [9] Thursday  
 чéтен [11] even-numbered  
 чéтири [6] four  
 четíридесет *or* четирíйсет [6] forty  
 четирíнайсет [6] fourteen  
 четирíма [6] four (*masculine animate*)  
 чéтиристотин [9] four hundred  
 чíй, чíя, чíе, чíй [8] whose  
 (*interrogative*)  
 числó [14] number ; познáвам числó  
 [14] pick/guess a number  
 чíст [4] clean, pure  
 чíчко [6] uncle (*diminutive*)  
 чíчо (*plural* чíчoвци) [10] uncle (father's  
 brother)  
 чoвéк [4] man, person  
 чoвéче [13] dwarf

чýвам / чýя [10] hear, listen  
 чýвствувам се (*or* чýвствам се) [13] feel  
 чудéсен [2] marvelous, wonderful  
 чýдя се [5] wonder  
 чужбíна [12] abroad ; всíчки са по  
 чужбíна [12] they've all gone abroad  
 чýжд [8] foreign, alien  
 чужденéц [3] foreigner, stranger  
 чужденкá [3] foreigner, stranger (female)  
 чýквам / чýкна [11] knock, clink (once) ;  
 чýкам на дървó [11] knock on wood  
 чýкам се / чýкна се [11] clink glasses,  
 toast to ; хáйде да се чýкнем [11]  
 let's have a toast  
 чýшка [6] pepper (vegetable)

шампáнско [11] champagne  
 шáпка [5] hat  
 шейсét (*or* шéстдесét) [6] sixty  
 шéст [6] six  
 шéствие [12] procession, train  
 шéстдесét *or* шейсét [6] sixty  
 шéсти [8] sixth  
 шéстíма [6] six (*masculine animate*)  
 шéстíца [10] "6" (top mark in school)  
 шéстна́йсет [6] sixteen  
 шéстстотин [9] six hundred  
 шéтам [10] do housework; be active  
 ширóк [12] wide, broad ; ширóко  
 разбíране [12] liberal interpretation  
 шишé [2] bottle  
 шíя [12] neck  
 шкáф [6] cupboard  
 шнóркел [14] snorkel  
 шоколáд [5] chocolate  
 шóпски [4] of the "Shope" area near  
 Sofia ; шóпска салáта [4] "Shope  
 salad"  
 шýм [6] noise ; вдíгам шýм [6]  
 make noise  
 шýмен [10] noisy  
 шýнка [4] ham ; омлét с шýнка [4]  
 ham omelet

щá [7] want ; щé не щé [7] whether  
 one wants or not  
 щáт [1] state ; Щáтите [1] the States  
 щáстлíв [12] happy  
 щé [7] will (*future particle*)  
 щó [8] what  
 щóм [11] as soon as, since, as, if, once  
 щъркел [13] stork

Българо-английски речник

Ъгъл (*plural* Ъгли) [14] corner ; зад  
Ъгъла [14] around the corner

4

Юг [13] south  
Юли [2] July  
Юмрук [12] fist  
Юни [9] June

13

я [5] her (*object pronoun*)  
я [6] (*imperative particle*) ; я направете  
място [6] come on, make space  
ябълка [6] apple  
явен [11] open, obvious  
явно [11] clearly  
ягода [11] strawberry  
яд [12] anger ; яд ме е (на) [12] I'm  
angry (at)  
ядене [9] food, meal; dish  
яйце (*plural* яйцá) [11] egg  
яке [13] jacket  
ям (ядеш) [9] eat  
януáри [8] January  
ясен [11] clear ; ясно ми е [11]  
I get it, it's clear

## **CUMULATIVE GLOSSARY**

### **(PART 2)**

### **English - Bulgarian**

The following pages contain a brief English-Bulgarian glossary. All words contained in the lesson glossaries are to be found here, indexed to the lesson in which the word appears in a glossary listing. Very few idioms are included in this glossary, however.

Grammatical information in this listing is likewise limited: only the part of speech is denoted (noun, verb, adjective and the like). Information necessary for correct usage in Bulgarian (conjugation type, plural formation, gender, etc.) is found in the Bulgarian-English glossary and in the lessons themselves. The purpose of this glossary is to aid the student in locating the section of the textbook where the word in question is introduced.

Neither of the two glossaries in this book is meant to function as a dictionary, as they are limited only to words used in volume 1 of this textbook (in very exceptional cases, words introduced in volume 2 of this textbook have been included). Students should acquire a standard dictionary as soon as they are able, and learn to use it.



## English-Bulgarian Glossary

- A.D. от н.е. [9]; след Р.Хр. [9]  
 abdomen корем [12]  
 abroad чужбина [12]  
 about по [7]; наоколо [9]; за [10]  
 above над [15]; (from) above отгоре [11]  
 absolutely [at all costs] на всяка цена [12]; [by all means] непременно [13]  
 abyss пропаст [11]  
 accept приемам / приема [10]  
 accidental случаен [12]  
 accompany изпращам / изпратя [8]  
 according to по [5]  
 acquaint with запознавам / запозная [14]  
 acquaintance познат [8]; познайник, познайница [13]  
 across from срещу [12]  
 actor актьор [14]  
 addition допълнение [8]  
 address (n.) адрес [9]  
 adorn окичвам / окича [13]  
 adult възрастен [4]; adults големите [4]  
 advantage полза [12]  
 adventure приключение [14]  
 advice съвет [10]  
 advise съветвам [5]  
 aerobics аеробика [8]  
 after след [6]; след като [14]  
 afternoon следобед [4]  
 afternoon (adj.) следобеден [9]  
 afterwards после [2]  
 again отново [2]; пак [9]  
 against срещу [12]  
 ago преди [6]  
 agree разбирам се / разбера се [12]; in agreement съгласен [12]  
 aha аха [5]  
 ahead напред [14]  
 air въздух [4]  
 airplane самолет [11]  
 album албум [9]  
 alcohol алкохол [2]  
 alien чужд [8]  
 alive жив [11]  
 all, in all всичко [2] [6]; all the best всичко хубаво [2]; all sorts (of things) най-различни (неща) [10]  
 allow позволявам / позволя [6]; пускам / пуска [10]  
 almost почти [8]  
 alone сам, сама, само, сами [12]  
 along по [5]  
 already вече [3]  
 also и [1]; също [1]  
 although макар че [14]  
 always винаги [4]; все [10]  
 am съм [1]  
 amazing изумителен [13]  
 American [person] американец [3]; американка [3]  
 American (adj.) американски [8]  
 among между [12]  
 amusement развлечения [12]  
 amusing забавен [11]  
 and a [1]; и [1]; пък [11]; та [13]  
 anger яд [12]  
 animal животно [8]; small animal животинче [13]  
 animal rights правата на животните [12]  
 ankle глезен [12]  
 anniversary годишнина [10]  
 announce съобщавам / съобщя [5]  
 announcement съобщение [5]  
 annual годишен [9]  
 another друг [2]  
 answer (n.) отговор [7]  
 answer (v.) отговарям / отговоря [10]  
 anterior преден [10]  
 aorist [tense] минало свършено време [12]  
 apartment апартамент [8]; квартира [14]  
 apartment building блок [8]  
 apparatus апарат [5]  
 apparently като че ли [14]  
 appear изглеждам [4]; проявявам / проявя [8]; появявам се / появя се [14]  
 appearance вид [11]  
 appetite апетит [9]  
 apple ябълка [6]  
 appointment среща [9]  
 approach (v.) приближавам / приближа [14]  
 April април [9]  
 apropos апропо [13]  
 Arab (adj.) арабски [11]  
 archaeologist археолог [3]  
 architecture архитектура [7]  
 are си [1] (2sg); сме [1] (1pl); сте [1] (2pl); са [1] (3pl)  
 aromatic ароматен [10]  
 around из [11]  
 arrange нареждам / наредя [6]; уреждам / уредя [9]; устройвам / устрой [13]; put in order редя [12]  
 arrive пристигам / пристигна [6]; стигам / стигна [13]  
 arrive home прибирам се / прибера се [8]  
 arm ръка [12]  
 army армия [12]  
 as като [3] [6]; както [9]; щом [11]  
 as if като че ли [14]  
 as soon as щом [11]  
 ascend качвам се / кача се [7]

## English-Bulgarian Glossary

- ask *пита́м* [4]; *помо́лвам / помо́ля* [13]; *попи́твам / попи́там* [14]  
ask for *пои́сквам / пои́скам* [12]  
ask oneself *попи́твам се / попи́там се* [13]  
aspect *ви́д* [11]  
aspirin *аспири́н* [12]  
astounding *изуми́телен* [13]  
at *на* [2] [3]; *при* [7]  
at all *изо́бщо* [8]  
at home *вкѝци* [6]; *у дома́* [10]  
at least *поне́* [9]; *мака́р* [14]  
at present *засега́* [9]  
at that *и то* [11]  
at the beginning *отнача́ло* [14]  
at the home of *у* [10]  
atmosphere *атмосфе́ра* [3]  
attached *привѝрзан* [11]  
attend, pay attention *внима́вам* [6]  
attention *внима́ние* [14]  
attentive *внима́телен* [14]  
attract *привли́чам / привлека́* [9]  
August *а́вгуст* [5]  
aunt *ле́ля* [3]  
authentic *автенти́чен* [13]  
author *а́втор* [23]  
author's *а́вторски* [12]  
automobile *кола́* [4]  
autograph *автогра́ф* [13]  
autumn *е́сен* [9]  
await *оча́квам* [7]  
awaken *събу́ждам се / събу́дя се* [11]
- V.C. *преди́ н.е.* [9]; *преди́ Р.Хр.* [9]  
bachelor *ерге́н* [11]  
back (*n.*) *грѝб* [12]  
back (*adj.*) *за́ден* [14]  
bad *ло́ш* [3]; *зле́* [13]  
badly *зле́* [13]  
bag *ча́нта* [2]; *торба́* [11]  
baggage *бага́ж* [2]  
bake *пека́* [13]  
balcony *балко́н* [13]  
banitsa *ба́ница* [10]  
banquet *банкѝт* [14]  
barefoot *бо́с* [13]  
bark (*v.*) *ла́я* [11]  
Baroque *баро́к* [10]  
baroque (*adj.*) *баро́ков* [9]  
bath *ба́ня* [3]  
bathe *кѝпя* [3]; *изкѝпвам се / изкѝпя се* [14]; *окѝпвам се / окѝпя се* [14]  
bathing (*adj.*) *ба́нски* [13]  
bathroom *ба́ня* [3]  
be *съм* [1]; *ба́да* [7]
- be afraid *боѝ се* [8]; *be frightened* *пла́ша се* [11]; *be afraid of* *страху́вам се* [14]  
be concerned/occupied with *занима́вам се* [11]  
be embarrassed *смуца́вам се / смутя́ се* [13]  
be ill *боле́дувам* [10]  
be interested in *интересу́вам се от* [11]  
be necessary *тря́бвам* [12]  
be reflected *огле́ждам се / огле́дам се* [14]  
be silent *мълча́* [10]  
be worth *заслужа́вам / заслужа́* [11]  
beach *пла́ж* [14]  
beak *клю́н* [13]  
bean *ба́б* [10]  
bear (*n.*) *ме́чка* [29]  
bear (*v.*) *ра́ждам / родя́* [10]  
bear cub *мече́* [11]  
beard *брада́* [12]  
beautiful *хубав* [2]  
beauty *хубави́ца* [5]; *красота́* [18]  
because *защо́то* [3]  
because of *покра́й* [10]  
become *ста́вам / ста́на* [10]  
become aware *почу́вствавам* [14]  
bed *легло́* [4]  
beer *би́ра* [4]  
before *преди́* [6]; *по́-ра́но* [14]; *преди́ да* [14]  
beg *помо́лвам / помо́ля* [13]  
begin *запо́чвам / започна́* [6]; *почвам / почна́* [10]  
begin to hurt *заболе́ява / заболѝ* [12]  
beginning (*adj.*) *нача́лен* [3]  
behind (*n.*) *за́дник* [12]  
behind (*in back*) *отза́д* [3]  
behind *зад* [13]  
believe *вя́рвам* [7]; *повя́рвам* [8]  
bell *звъне́ц* [5]  
belly *корѝм* [12]  
below *под* [3]; *[from] below* *отдо́лу* [11]  
bench *пе́йка* [3]  
bend *зави́вам / зави́я* [6]; *сви́вам / сви́я* [13]  
besides, in addition *осве́н това́* [4]  
between *между* [12]  
beverage *напи́тка* [4]  
bicycle *велосипе́д* [14]; *колело́* [14]  
big *голя́м* [2]  
bird *пти́ца* [7]  
birth (*adj.*) *рожде́н* [5]  
birthday *рожде́н де́н* [5]  
birthplace *ро́дно мя́сто* [11]  
black *че́рен* [11]  
blade *но́жче* [13]

## English-Bulgarian Glossary

- blood кръв [12]  
 bloom (v.) цъфтя [9]  
 blow дъхам [1]  
 blow over разминáвам се / разми́на се [15]  
 blue син [8]  
 blunt (v.) притѣпвам / притѣпя [14]  
 boil варя [3]; сварявам / сваря [5]; вря [9]  
 boil over изкипявам / изкипя [14]  
 bone кóст [12]  
 book кнѝга [2]  
 booklet кнѝжка [10]  
 bore (v.) омръзвам / омръзна [12]  
 boring скучен [13]  
 bosom гърдá [12]  
 botanical ботанически [13]  
 both (...and) и ... и [8]; хем ... хем [12]  
 bother прѣча [8]  
 bottle шише [2]  
 bound (adj.) привързан [11]  
 box кутия [10]  
 boy момчѣ [1]  
 brain мóзък [12]  
 bravo браво [10]  
 brawler кавгаджия, -ийка [10]  
 bread хляб [5]  
 break (n.) óтпуска [2]  
 breakfast заку́ска [10]  
 breast гърди́ [12]  
 breath дѣх [8]  
 bride бу́лка [10]; младожѣнка [10]  
 bridegroom младожѣнец [10]  
 bridge мóст [6]  
 bridge (card game) бри́дж [14]  
 briefcase чáнта [2]  
 briefly накрáтко [10]  
 bright лѣскав [10]  
 bring донáсям / донесá [7]  
 bring out извáждам / извáдя [14]  
 broad ширóк [12]  
 broken счúпен [11]  
 brother брáт [8]  
 bucket кóфа [14]  
 build a nest свѝвам гнездó [13]  
 Bulgarian бѣлгарски [1]  
 Bulgarian [person] бѣлгарин [3]; бѣлгарка [3]  
 burden with questions затрúпвам с въпрóси [11]  
 burn горя [11]  
 burn up изгáрям / изгоря [14]  
 bury under затрúпвам / затрúпам [11]  
 bus автобúс [2]  
 business рáбота [14]  
 business trip командирóвка [10]  
 but но [2]; пѣк [11]; ама [12]  
 buy купúвам [5]
- by с [2]; при [7]  
 by chance случáйно [12]  
 Byzantine византийски [8]
- cabbage зѣле [4]  
 call (v.) позвънѝвам / позвънѝ [9]; обáждам се / обáдя се [10]; обáждам се по телефóна [11]; повѝквам / повѝкам [13]  
 call, name нари́чам / нарека́ [13]  
 call out извѝквам / извѝкам [13]; повѝквам / повѝкам [13]  
 camera фотоапарáт [5]  
 can (n.) буркáн [6]  
 can (v.) консервѝрам [6]  
 can, be able мóга [4] [5]  
 cancel откáзвам / откáжа [13]  
 candy бонбóн [10]  
 canned консервѝран [6]  
 capricious капри́зен [13]  
 car колá [4]  
 car (in a train) вагóн [6]  
 card кáрта [5]  
 cardigan жилѣтка [12]  
 care for милѣя [13]  
 carnival (adj.) карнава́лен [12]  
 carrot мóрков [4]  
 carry нóся [3]; занáсям / занесá [7]  
 carry up кáчвам / качá [7]  
 cause (n.) пóвод [13]  
 cat кóтка [10]  
 catch хвáщам / хвáна [9]; ловя́ [9]  
 catch one's breath поѣмам [си] дѣх [8]  
 cavern прóпаст [11]  
 celebrate празну́вам [10]  
 center цѣнтър [7]; срѣдище [9]  
 central центрáлен [12]  
 central heating пáрно отоплѣние [11]  
 century вѣк [12]  
 certain сѝгурен [6]  
 certainly сѝгурно [9]  
 chair стóл [4]  
 champagne шампáнско [11]  
 championship първенствó [10]  
 chance (adj.) случáен [12]  
 change (n.) промя́на [13]  
 change (v.) смѣням / сменя́ [3] [4]; промѣням / променя́ [11]  
 chat поприкáзвам [11]  
 cheap ѣфтин [9]  
 check (v.) проверя́вам / проверя́ [13]  
 cheek бúза [12]  
 cheer up зарáдвам се [12]  
 cheerful бóдър [13]  
 cheese [hard yellow] кашкавáл [4]; [soft white] сѝрене [7]

## English-Bulgarian Glossary

- cherry череша [12]  
 chest грѣд [12]; гърди [12]  
 chief главен [9]  
 child дете [1]; малко [4]  
 children деца [3]  
 children's детински [13]  
 chill (*n.*) стѹд [7]; мрѹз [10]  
 chimney комин [13]  
 chin брада [12]; брадичка [12]  
 chocolate шоколад [5]  
 choice избор [7]  
 choose избирам / избира [4]  
 chop [of meat] пържѳла [4]  
 Christ's Христѳв [9]  
 Christmas Кѳледа [10]; Рождество  
     Христѳва [9]  
 Christmas (*adj.*) кѳледен [10]  
 Christmas Eve Бѳдни вѳчер [10]  
 church църква [3]  
 cigarette цигара [4]  
 circle кръг [10]  
 circular кръгъл [10]  
 circus цирк [6]  
 city град [6] [7]  
 class [grade in school] клас [7]  
 class урок [5]; лекция [6]  
 classical класически [3]  
 clean (*adj.*) чист [4]  
 clean up, clean out изчиствам / изчиства  
     [14]  
 clear (*adj.*) явен [11]  
 clear up изяснявам / изясня [14]  
 clearly явно [11]  
 climate климат [11]  
 climb the stairs качвам се по стѳлбите  
     [11]  
 cliff скала [14]  
 clink чѳкам / чѳкна [11]; clink glasses  
     чѳкам се / чѳкна се [11]  
 clock часовник [7]  
 close (*v.*) затварям / затвѳря [3] [4]  
 close (*adj.*) близък [10]  
 closed затворен [2]  
 cloth кърпа [13]  
 clothing дрѳхи [10]  
 coat палтѳ [13]  
 coffee кафе [5]  
 coffee (*adj.*) кафеен [6]  
 coffee spoon кафеена лъжичка [6]  
 coin монета [10]; парѳ [11]  
 coincide съвпадам / съвпадна [10]  
 cold (*n.*) стѹд [7]  
 cold [illness] простѹда [2]  
 cold (*adj.*) студѳн [4]; get/grow cold  
     изстивам / изстина [8]  
 colleague колега [10]; колежка [10]  
 collect събирам / събера [3] [4];  
     прибирам / прибера [8]
- collection колѳкция [7]; сбѳрник [12]  
 color (*n.*) цвят [21]  
 color (*v.*) боядисвам [10]  
 colored цветен [3]  
 comb (*v.*) рѳша [13]  
 come дохѳждам / дѳйда [5]; йда [5];  
     йдвам [5]; дошѳл [11]  
 come, come on настѳпвам / настѳпя [13]  
 come to an agreement/understanding  
     разбирам се / разбира се [12]  
 come to [one's] senses опѳмняам се /  
     опѳмня се [12]  
 come to the phone обѳждам се / обѳдя се  
     [12]  
 comedy комѳдия [11]  
 comfortable удѳбен [11]  
 command (*v.*) заповѳждам / заповѳдам [5]  
 commodity стѳка [9]  
 common ѳбщ [7]  
 compact disk компѳкт дѳск [12]  
 compartment купѳ [2]  
 complain оплаквам се / оплача се [11]  
 complete (*v.*) свѳршвам / свѳрша [6]  
 complete (*adj.*) свѳршен [12]  
 completely съвсем [5]  
 complex (*n.*) комплѳкс [8]  
 complex (*adj.*) слѳжен [5]  
 comrade дръгар (ка) [1]  
 concur съвпадам / съвпадна [10]  
 conductor кондѳктор (ка) [5]  
 conference конферѳнция [12]  
 congratulations честѳто [11]  
 consider смятам [13]  
 consist of състоѳ се [14]  
 constant постоянен [10]  
 constantly все [10]; постоянно [10]  
 contend спѳря [13]  
 continue продължавам / продължѳ [5]  
 control (*adj.*) контролен [8]  
 convenient удѳбен [11]  
 convention обичай [13]  
 converse (*v.*) приказвам [9];  
     разговарям [10]  
 convince убедѳ [14]  
 cook (*v.*) варѳ [3]; гѳтвя [4];  
     сварѳвам / сварѳ [5]; сгѳтвям /  
     сгѳтвя [5]  
 cooking (*adj.*) гѳтварски [7]  
 cool (*adj.*) прохладен [15]  
 copy (*n.*) копия [13]  
 copy (*v.*) препиствам / препиша [13]  
 copyright ѳвторско право [12]  
 corner (*n.*) ѳгъл [14]; around the corner  
     зад ѳгъла [14]  
 cornfield нѳва [10]  
 corridor коридѳр [2]  
 cost (*v.*) струвам [4]

## English-Bulgarian Glossary

- count (v.) броя [3]; преброявам / преброя [6]; смятам / сметна [13]  
 count, count on разчитам [12]  
 country страна [7]  
 cousin братовчед (ка) [2]  
 cover up затрупувам / затрупам [11]  
 cramped тесен [2]  
 crooked крив [3]  
 crossword puzzle кръстословица [8]  
 cry плача [16]; burst into tears разплаквам се / разплача се [14]  
 cry, cry out извиквам / извикам [13]  
 Cuban кубински [8]  
 cucumber краставица  
 cuisine кухня [7]  
 culinary готварски [7]  
 cultural културен [12]  
 culture култура [9]  
 cup чаша [3]  
 cupboard шкаф [6]  
 currency exchange office чейндж [10]  
 current сегашен [9]  
 custom обичай [13]  
 customary обичаен [14]  
 cut секá [9]; режа [12]
- dad татко [10]  
 dangerous опасен [4]  
 darling (*form of address*) мило [4]  
 daughter дъщеря [10]  
 day ден [4] [6]  
 day after tomorrow други ден  
 day before yesterday онзи ден [9]  
 day off почивен ден [8]  
 dear (*adj.*) драг [2] [3]; мил [4]  
 December декември [9]  
 decide решавам / реша [11]  
 declaim декламирам [7]  
 decorate окичвам / окича [13]  
 deer елен [8]; сърна [8]  
 defense защита [12]  
 defy предизвиквам / предизвикам [10]  
 delay (*n.*) закъснение [14]  
 delicious вкусен [6]  
 delight възторг [10]  
 democracy демокрация [13]  
 democratic демократически [14]  
 dentist зъболекар [12]  
 depart отпътувам [7]; заминавам / замина [9]  
 depend завися [14]  
 descend слизам / слиза [7]  
 describe описвам / опиша [7]  
 deserve заслужавам / заслужа [11]  
 desire (*n.*) воля [12]; желание [14]  
 desire (*v.*) желая [7]
- dessert десерт [6]  
 detailed подробен [13]  
 diary дневник [10]  
 dictate диктувам [14]  
 dictionary речник [7]  
 die почива [8]; умирам / умра [11]  
 different различен [10]  
 difficult сложен [5]; труден [5]; мъчен [13]  
 dig (*v.*) копая [10]  
 dill копър [6]  
 direct (*adj.*) директен [8]  
 direction посока [6]  
 director режисьор [12]; директор [13]  
 dirty мръсен [9]  
 disappear изчезвам / изчезна [10]  
 discern разпознавам / разпозна [8]  
 dish (*n.*) гозба [5]  
 distinguish разпознавам / разпозна [8]  
 distinguished представителен [14]  
 dispute (*n.*) кавга [10]  
 dispute (*v.*) спора [13]  
 distribute раздавам / разда [8]  
 district край [8]; квартал [9]  
 do правя [3]; направям / направя [6]  
 do (housework) busily шетам [10]  
 do laundry изпирам / изпера [12]  
 doctor лекар [1]  
 doe сърна [8]  
 dog куче [4]  
 doll кукла [13]  
 domestic семеен [10]  
 door врата [2]  
 down долу [11]; надолу [11]  
 down, along по [5]  
 draft (*n.*) течение [1]; there's getting to be a draft става течение [1]  
 draw рисувам [3]; привличам / привлечá [9]  
 drawing рисунка [3]  
 dread (*n.*) страх [12]  
 dreadful страховотен [5]  
 dream (*n.*) сън [8]  
 dream (*v.*) сънувам  
 drench измъкрям / измъкря [12]  
 dress (*n.*) рокля [12]  
 dress (*v.*) обличам / облекá [13]; обличам се / облекá се [13]  
 dress up издокарвам се / издокарам се [14]  
 dressed облечен [14]  
 dried сушен [10]  
 drink (*n.*) напитка [4]  
 drink (*v.*) пия [3]  
 drink up изпирам / изпия [5]  
 drip (*v.*) капя [10]  
 drive карам [6]  
 drive in вкарвам / вкарам [12]



## English-Bulgarian Glossary

- driver's license книжка [10]  
 drop (v.) изпúскам / изпúсна [7];  
     пúскам / пúсна [10]  
 drunkard пияница [10]  
 dry (v.) избúрствам / избúрша [13]  
 dull (v.) притúпявам / притúпя [14]  
 during през [4]  
 duty дежúрство [10]  
 dwarf човéче [13]  
 dye боядúсвам [10]
- each (*distributive*) по [3]  
 ear ухó [12]  
 earlier по-ра́но [14]  
 early (*adj.*) ранен [13]  
 early (*adv.*) ра́но [9]  
 earn спечéлвам / спечéля [14]  
 easy лéсен [6]; лéк [9]  
 eat я́м [9]; изя́ждам / изя́м [9];  
     ха́пвам / ха́пна [15]  
 eat breakfast заку́свам / заку́ся [11]  
 eat dinner вече́рям [9]  
 eat lunch обя́двам [17]  
 eat one's fill ная́ждам се / ная́м се [9]  
 education образо́вание [3]  
 effective ефе́ктен [5]  
 effendi [sir] ефе́нди [1]  
 efficient работоспóсобен [9]  
 egg яйце́ [11]  
 eight óсем [6]  
 eight hundred óсемстотин [9]  
 eighteen осемна́йсет [6]  
 eighteenth осемна́йсети [8]  
 eighth óсми [8]  
 eighty осемдесéт [6]  
 either...or или ... или [8]  
 elbow ла́кът [8]  
 elegant елега́nten [5]  
 elementary нача́лен [3]  
 elevator асансòр [11]  
 eleven единáйсет [6]  
 embarrass притесня́вам / притесня́ [8]  
 emperor ца́р [8]  
 empty (*adj.*) пра́зен [6]; пúст [10]  
 end (*n.*) кра́й [7]  
 endure издúржам / издúржа [7];  
     пона́сям / понесá [14]  
 engineer инженéр [14]  
 English английски [2]  
 Englishman англича́нин [3]  
 Englishwoman англича́нка [3]  
 enough, that's enough стúга [3]  
 enough (*adj.*) достáтъчен [7]  
 enrapture предизвиквам възтòрг у [10]  
 enter вли́зам / вли́за [4]  
 entertain посрéщам / посрéщна [5]
- entire ця́л [7]  
 entrance вхóд [8]  
 entryway коридòр [2]  
 equinox равнодéнствие [13]  
 equipment апарáт [5]  
 era éра [9]  
 err грешá [7]  
 especially осóбено [8]  
 European европéец [8]  
 eve of навече́рие [10]  
 even (*adj.*) ра́вен [15]  
 even дорí [8]; дáже [11]  
 even numbered чéтен [11]  
 even though макар че [14]  
 evening ве́чер [9]  
 evening (*adj.*) вече́рен [9]  
 every всéки, вся́ка, вся́ко [6]  
 every other през [8]  
 everything всúчко [2]  
 exact тóчен [6]  
 exactly тúкмо [10]  
 examination [school] изпит [5];  
     контрòлна ра́бота [8]; контрòлно  
     [8]; matriculation ехам матúра [8]  
 examination [medical] преглéd [4]  
 examine разглéждам / разглéдам [4];  
     преглéждам / преглéдам [8];  
     оглéждам / оглéдам [14]  
 example прíмер [18]; for example  
     напрíмер [8]  
 excerpt, excerpt for освéн [4]  
 excessive прекалén [13]  
 excursion излет [3]; екскурзия [8]  
 excuse (*n.*) извинéние [13]  
 excuse (*v.*) извиня́вам / извиня́ [5]  
 exit изход [20]  
 exotic екзотичен [5]  
 exotica, exoticism екзòтика [7]  
 expect очáквам [7]  
 extract изва́ждам / изва́дя [14]  
 eye окó [12]  
 eyebrow ве́жда [12]  
 eyeglasses очилá [11]
- face лице́ [12]  
 faithful ве́рен [10]  
 fall (*n.*) éсен [9]; in the fall наéсен [9]  
 fall (*v.*) па́дам / па́дна [7]  
 fall asleep заспи́вам / заспя́ [14]; (of  
     body part) изтрúпвам / изтрúпна [14]  
 fall silent мълча́ [10]  
 family семе́йство [11]  
 family (*adj.*) семеен [10]  
 famous знаменít [14]  
 fan (*n.*) любítел [8]  
 far, far away далéче [4]

## English-Bulgarian Glossary

- fashion мода [21]  
 fashion show модно ревю [13]  
 fashionable моден [13]  
 fast (*n.*) пост [10]  
 fast (*adj.*) бърз [6]; постен [10]  
 fasten постягам / постегна [11]  
 father баща [8]  
 father-in-law свекър [10]; тъст [10]  
 favorite (*adj.*) любим [8]  
 fear (*n.*) страх [12]  
 fear, be afraid боя се [8]; плаша се [11]; страхувам се [14]  
 fearful страшен [9]  
 February февруари [9]  
 feed (*v.*) храня [8]; нахранвам / нахраня [11]  
 feel чувствувам се (*also* чувствам се) [13]  
 feel ashamed досрамява ме / досрамее ме [13]  
 feel like laughing досмешава ме / досмешее ме [13]  
 feel nauseated гнус ме е [12]  
 festival фестивал [5]  
 fiancé годеник [10]; годеница [10]  
 field (*n.*) нива [10]; поле [15]  
 fifteen петнайсет [6]  
 fifth пети [8]  
 fifty петдесет [6]  
 fill пълня [6]  
 film (*n.*) филм [8]  
 finally най-после [1]  
 find (*v.*) намирам / намеря [5]  
 fine (*adj.*) хубав [2]  
 fine (*adv.*) добре [2]  
 finger пръст [12]  
 finish свършвам / свърша [6]  
 fir елха [13]  
 fire огън [7]  
 fire dancer нестиняр [11]  
 fire dancing нестинярство [11]  
 firm твърд [11]  
 first първи [4]  
 fish (*n.*) риба [9]  
 fish (*v.*) ловя риба [9]  
 fist юмрук [12]  
 five пет [6]; петима [6]  
 five hundred петстотин [9]  
 fix up постягам / постегна [11]  
 flat (*adj.*) равен [15]  
 fleece (*v.*) дерá [12]  
 floor под [4]; [of multi-story building] етаж [8]  
 flow (*v.*) текá [9]  
 flower (*n.*) цвете [6]  
 flu грип [13]  
 fly, fly up to долитам / долетя [13]  
 fold (*v.*) свивам / свия [13]  
 folk народ [7]  
 folk (*adj.*) народен [5]  
 food ядене [9]  
 fool around мотам се (*or* мотая се) [14]  
 footwear обуща [13]  
 for за [1] [6]; от [6]; на [7]  
 for, for a short while закрáтко [11]  
 for now засега [9]  
 for the sake of заради [13]  
 forehead чело [12]  
 foreign чужд [8]  
 foreigner чужденец [3]; чужденка [3]  
 forest гора [3]  
 forget забравям / забравя [7]  
 fork (*n.*) вилица [10]  
 forthcoming предстоящ [9]  
 fortune късмет [10]  
 forty четиридесет, четирийсет [6]  
 forwards напред [14]  
 four четири [6]; четирима [6]  
 four hundred четиристотин [9]  
 fourteen четиринайсет [6]  
 fourth четвърти [8]  
 fowl кокóшка [11]  
 free свободен [2]  
 freedom свобода [7]  
 freeze [with terror] изтръпвам от страх [14]  
 French toast пържени филийки [14]  
 frequent чест [3]  
 fresh пресен [8]  
 Friday петък [9]  
 friend приятел (ка) [1]  
 frighten плаша [9]  
 from от [1]  
 from within отвътре [9]  
 front (*adj.*) преден [10]  
 frozen леден [8]  
 fruit плод [7]  
 fry пържа [6]  
 full пълен [5]  
 fun забавен [11]  
 funny смешен [13]  
 furor фурор [13]  
 future (*adj.*) бъдещ [9]  
 gain (*n.*) напредък [9]  
 gain (*v.*) спечелвам / спечеля [14]  
 game игра [14]; мач [12]  
 garbage боклук [14]  
 garbage can кофа за боклук [14]  
 garden (*n.*) градина [3]  
 garlic чесън [6]  
 garnish (*n.*) гарнитурa [4]  
 gather събирам / събера [3] [4]; прибирам / прибера [8]; берá [12]  
 gay, lively весел [9]

## English-Bulgarian Glossary

- general (*adj.*) общ [7]; in general  
     изобщо [8]  
 gentle кротък [13]  
 Gentlemen господá [3]  
 German (*adj.*) германски [14]  
 get полúчавам / полúча [8]  
 get acquainted запознавам се / запозная се  
     [10]  
 get angry разсърдвам се / разсърдя се  
     [14]  
 get burned изгáрям / изгоря [14]  
 get confused смущáвам се / смутя се [13]  
 get dressed обличам се / облекá се [13]  
 get in line редя се на опáшка [12]  
 get in touch with обáждам се / обáдя се  
     [10]  
 get married жéня се [11]; ожéнвам се /  
     ожéня се [11]  
 get off слízам / слязá [7]  
 get on качвам се / качá се [7]  
 get ready гóтвя се [9]  
 get sick заболявам / заболéя [12]  
 get tired уморявам се / уморя се [12]  
 get to be стáвам / стáна [10]  
 get to know опознавам / опозная [7]  
 get up стáвам / стáна [4]  
 get used to свйквам / свйкна [15]  
 gift подáрък [7]  
 girl момйче [1]  
 give дай [4]; давам / дам [9]; [a  
     present] подарявам / подаря [9]  
 give birth to раждам / родя [10]  
 give out раздавам / раздам [8]  
 give up отстъпвам / отстъпя [8]  
 glass чáша [3]  
 gloomy намръщен [13]  
 glory слáва [9]  
 glove ръкавица [9]  
 go вървя [3]; йда [5]; отйвам /  
     отйда [5]; хóдя [6]; двйжа се  
     [14]  
 go back връщам се / върна се [11]  
 go down слízам / слязá [7]  
 go in влизам / влязá [4]  
 go out излизам / излязá [4]  
 go to bed лягам си / легна си [8]  
 goal цéл [16]  
 goal [sports] гóл [12]  
 God, god бóг [9]  
 godfather кум [14]  
 godmother кумá [14]  
 golden златен [9]  
 good (*adj.*) добър [2]  
 good night лекá нóщ [9]  
 good old days добрóто стáро врéме [11]  
 goodbye довиждане [8]; дочúване [12]  
 goods стóка [9]  
 gorge (*v.*) наяждам се / наям се [9]
- grade [in school] клáс [7]  
 granddaughter внúчка [10]  
 grandfather дядо [10]  
 grandmother бáба [8]  
 grandson внúk [10]  
 Granny March Бáба Мáрта [11]  
 grape (*adj.*) грóздов [2]; лóзов [6]  
 grapes грóзде [9]  
 grasp (*v.*) хвáщам / хвáна [9]  
 Greeks гърци [6]  
 green зелéн [13]  
 greeting пóздрав [2]  
 greeting card честитка [10]  
 grow milder омéквам / омéкна [11]  
 grow up порáствам / порáсна [14]  
 grownups възрастни [4]  
 grumble оплаквам се / оплача се [11]  
 guard (*v.*) пáзя [8]  
 guess познавам / позная [7]  
 guest гóст [8]
- habit нáвик [11]  
 half половйн(а) [6]  
 hail (*n.*) град [12]  
 hail (*v.*) вали град [12]  
 hair косá [12]  
 haircut причéска [12]  
 hall зáла [12]  
 ham шúнка [4]  
 hamster хáмстер [9]  
 hand (*n.*) ръкá [12]  
 hand to подавам / подám [11]  
 handle пйпам [9]  
 hang заkáчам / закачá [13]  
 hang clothes out to dry простирам дрéхи  
     [12]  
 happen стáвам / стáна [4]  
 happy радостен [5]; вéсел [9]; [in  
     greeting] честит [10]  
 Happy New Year честитá Нóва Годйна  
     [10]  
 hard твърд [11]; мбчен [13]  
 hastily на крáк [12]  
 hat шáпка [5]  
 have ймам [2] [3]  
 have a bite хáпвам / хáпна [15]  
 he тóй [1]; тó [1]  
 head (*n.*) главá [12]  
 health здра́ве [2]  
 healthy здрав [2]  
 hear чúвам / чúя [10]  
 heart сърцé [10]; by heart наизúст  
     [4]; send heartfelt wishes пожелáвам  
     от сърцé [10]  
 hearty сърдéчен [2]  
 heat, heat up грéя [9]

## English-Bulgarian Glossary

- heating отопление [11]  
 heavy тежък [2]  
 hedgehog таралеж [9]  
 heel (*n.*) петá [12]  
 hello добър ден [6]; здравей [6]; алó [12]  
 help (*n.*) пóмощ [9]  
 help (*v.*) помагам / помóгна [7]; help yourself заповядай [5]  
 hen кокóшка [11]  
 hence, from here оттука [5]  
 her (*direct object*) я [5]; нéя [10]  
 her (*indirect object*) ѝ [7]; на нéя [10]  
 her, hers нéин [8]  
 here éто [2] (*pointing*); тук(а) [2] (*location*)  
 hey! éй [1]  
 hi здравей [6]  
 hide (*v.*) скривам / скрiя [13]  
 high висóк [5]  
 high school гимназия [3] (*academically oriented*); тéхникум [3] (*technical*)  
 high school dropout двóйкаджия, -ка [10]  
 him (*direct object*) го [5]; нéго [7]  
 him (*indir. object*) му [7]; на нéго [10]  
 hint (*v.*) подсказвам / подсказá [13]  
 his нéгов [8]  
 history истóрия [7]  
 hitch-hiker стóпаджия, -ийка [10]  
 hitch-hiking стóп [10]  
 hold (*v.*) държá [11]  
 hold dear милéя [13]  
 holiday почивен ден [8]; прáзник [10]  
 home (*n.*) дóм [7]  
 home, at home вкъщи [6]  
 home (*adj.*) домáшен [7]  
 homemade домáшен [2]  
 homework домáшно [8]  
 honest чéстен [12]  
 honeymoon свáтбено пътешéствие [11]  
 honorable чéстен [12]  
 hope (*n.*) надéжда [8]  
 hope (*v.*) надявам се [19]  
 horrible страхóтен [5]  
 horror úжас [14]  
 horse кóн [8]  
 hospital бóлница [6]  
 hot горéщ [11]  
 hotel хотéл [9]  
 hour чáс [6] [7]  
 hours of operation рабóтно врéме [6]  
 house къща [2]; дóм [7]; small house къщичка [7]  
 how кáк [1]  
 how many кóлко [4]  
 how much кóлко [4]  
 however обáче [7]  
 humor хумор [5]  
 humorous смéшен [13]  
 hundred стó [5]  
 hunger глáд [7]  
 hungry глáден [2]; get hungry огладнявам / огладнéя [4]  
 hurry бързам [4]; побързвам / побързам [7]  
 hurt (*v.*) боли [12]  
 husband съпруг [3]; мбж [8]  
 I áз [1]  
 ice (*adj.*), icy лéден [8]  
 ice cream сладолéд [6]  
 idea идéя [5]  
 ideal идеáлен [5]  
 idyll идiлия [7]  
 idyllic идилйчен [3]  
 if ако [4]; далí [11]; щом [11]  
 if only данó [10]  
 imagine престáвям си / предстáвя си [13]  
 immediate family тéсен семéен кръг [10]  
 immediately веднáга [4]  
 impatience нетърпéние [8]  
 impending предстóящ [9]  
 imperfect несвършен [12]  
 imperfect (*tense*) мiнало несвършено врéме [14]  
 imperfective aspect несвършен вид [12]  
 important вáжен [8]  
 in в [1]; на [2] [3]; след [6]; във [7]  
 in, inside втре [11]  
 in general вбóщé [11]  
 in-law свáт, свáтя [10]  
 in love влóбен [14]  
 in order редóвен [13]  
 in order to за да [11]  
 in short накрáтко [10]  
 include вклóчвам / вклóча [14]  
 incomparable несравнiм [11]  
 incomplete несвършен [12]  
 inconvenient неудбóен [13]  
 indispensable необхóдим [13]  
 inexpensive éфтин [9]  
 influenza грип [13]  
 inform събщáвам / събщá [5]  
 inquire попiтвам / попiтам [14]  
 inscription нáдпис [14]  
 inside втре [11]; (to the) inside навтре [11]  
 instance пéт [6]; слúчай [12]  
 insult (*n.*) обiда [14]  
 intelligent úмен [10]  
 intend кáня се [11]  
 intensively усiлено [3]  
 interest (*n.*) интерéс [7]

## English-Bulgarian Glossary

- interest (v.) интересувам [8]; занимавам [11]  
 interesting интересно [1]; интересен [2]  
 intersection пресечка [11]  
 intestine черво [12]  
 invent измислям / измисля [12]  
 invite каня [10]; поканвам / поканя [10]  
 is е [1] (3sg.); isn't it? нали [3]  
 it то [1]; тя [2]; той [2]  
 itch сърби [12]
- Jack Frost Дядо Мраз [10]  
 jacket сакó [13]; яке [13]  
 January януари [8]  
 jar буркан [6]  
 jeans джѝнси [13]  
 job работа [4] [11]  
 joke (n.) виц [12]  
 journalist журналист (ка) [5]  
 joy радост [10]  
 joyful радостен [5]  
 juice (n.) сок [7]  
 July юли [2]  
 jump (v.) скачам / скóча [9]  
 June юни [9]  
 just тѝкмо [10]; тóчно [12]  
 just now току-що [14]  
 just this moment тѝкмо сегá [10]
- kebab кебáбче [6]  
 keep (v.) държá [11]  
 key (n.) ключ [7]  
 kid (young person) хлапáк [14]  
 kilogram килограм [6]  
 kind (adj.) любезен [2]  
 king крál [8]  
 kiss (v.) целувам / целуна [5]  
 kitchen кúхня [5]  
 knee (n.) коляно [12]  
 knife (n.) нóж [7]  
 knit изплѝтам / изплетá [12]  
 knock чúкам / чúкна [11]  
 know познавам / позная [1] [3] [7]; знáя [3]; знáм [4]
- ladder стѝлба [11]  
 lady дáма [3]  
 lake езеро [3]  
 lament (v.) оплаквам / оплача [11]  
 landlady хазáйка [15]  
 landscape пейзаж [3]
- lapel ревер [13]  
 large голя́м [2]; е́дър [9]  
 last (adj.) последен [6]  
 last night миналата нóщ [9]; снóщи [9]  
 last night's снóщен [9]  
 late кѝсен [4]; be late закъснявам / закъснѝя [7]  
 lately в последно време [6]; напоследѝк [8]  
 later пóсле [2]  
 laugh (v.) смея се [13]; burst out laughing разсмѝвам се / разсмея се [14]  
 laughter смя́х [11]  
 lawyer адвокат (ка) [2]  
 lead (v.) водя [8]; завеждам / заведá [10]  
 lead away извеждам / изведá [9]  
 leaf (n.) лист [6]  
 leak (v.) капя [10]  
 learn уча [5]; научавам / науча [9]; научавам се / науча се [14]  
 leave (v.) излизам / изляза [4]; трѝгвам / трѝгна [4]; оставам / остава [8]; заминавам / замина [9]  
 leave behind отминавам / отмина [14]  
 lecture (n.) лекция [6]  
 left (adj.) ляв [11]; [to the] left наляво [11]; [from the] left отляво [11]  
 left over остана́ло [9]  
 leg кра́к [8]; ногá (dialectal, poetic) [12]  
 Lent пóст [10]  
 Lenten пóстен [10]  
 lesson уро́к [5]  
 let пу́скам / пу́сна [10]  
 let go изпу́скам / изпу́сна [7]  
 let pass пропу́скам / пропу́сна [10]  
 let's хáйде [3]  
 let's hope данó [10]  
 letter писмó [8]  
 letter [of alphabet] бúква [8]  
 letter carrier пощаджѝя, -йѝка [10]  
 lev (currency) лев [4]  
 level (n.) равни́ще [15]  
 library библиотéка [5]  
 lie, be lying down лежá [4]  
 lie down лягам / легна [4]  
 life живóт [9]  
 lift (v.) вдѝгам / вдѝгна [6]  
 light (adj.) лéк [9]; свéтъл [10]  
 like (v.) обѝчам [2] [3]; харесвам / харесам [7] [12]  
 like като [3] [6]  
 line опáшка [11]  
 lip у́стна [12]  
 listen слúшам [4]  
 little мáлко [1] [2]  
 live живéя [3]

## English-Bulgarian Glossary

- live (*adj.*) жив [11]  
 lively бодър [13]  
 liver черен дроб [12]  
 living жив [11]  
 loan (*n.*) заем [12]  
 loan (*v.*) давам на заем [12]  
 lock (*v.*) заключвам / заключа [8]  
 logical логичен [12]  
 long (*adj.*) дълъг [2]; a long time дълго [8]  
 long ago отдавна [6]  
 look (*v.*) изглеждам [4]; поглеждам / погледна [14]  
 look, look at гледам [4]  
 look after гледам [9]; погрижвам се / погрижа се [11]  
 look around оглеждам се / огледам се [14]  
 look at one's reflection оглеждам се / огледам се [14]  
 look for търся [7]  
 look like приличам [10]  
 lottery то̀то [14]  
 lose губя [14]  
 love (*v.*) обичам [3]; любя [13]  
 lover любител [8]  
 luck късмет [10]  
 lunch (*n.*) обед [8]; обяд [9]  
 lunch (*adj.*) обеден [9]  
 lunchtime обедно време [9]  
 lung (бял) дроб [12]
- Ma'am госпожа́ [1]; кира́ [1] (*archaic*)  
 magazine списание [8]  
 magician въшебник [11]  
 make правя [3]; сготвям / сготвя (prepare food) [5]; напращам / напраща [6]  
 make up [to someone, for something] реванширам се [5]  
 mail (*n.*) поща [3]  
 mail [a letter] пу́скам [писмо́] [10]  
 mailbox пощенска кутия́ [10]  
 main (*adj.*) главен [9]  
 mainly главно [9]  
 majority повечето [11]  
 male (*adj.*) мъжки [8]  
 man човек [4]; мъж [8]; young man момък [13]  
 manual учебник [2]  
 manner начин [6]  
 many много [1], [2]  
 many happy returns за много години [11]  
 map (*n.*) карта [5]  
 March ма́рт [1]  
 mark (*v.*) белѐжа [7]
- marriage бра́к [10]  
 married же́нен [10]  
 marry же́ня [11]; же́ня се [11]; ожѐнвам се / ожѐня се [11]; ожѐнвам / ожѐня [11]  
 marvelous чудѐсен [2]  
 masculine мъ́жки [8]  
 match [sports] ма́ч [12]  
 matriculation exam ма́тура [8]  
 matter (*n.*) ра́бота [11]  
 May ма́й [9]  
 maybe мо́же би́ [9]  
 me (*direct object*) ме [4] [5]; ме́не [10]  
 me (*indirect object*) ми [7]; на ме́не [10]  
 meal я́дене [9]  
 mean (*v.*) зна́ча [1]  
 meaning значѐние [9]; смѝсъл [11]  
 meat мя́со [6]  
 meat (ground) кайма́ [6]; (grilled/stewed) кеба́п [13]  
 medicine лека́рство [8]  
 medieval средновеко́вен [9]  
 meet (*v.*) посрѐщам / посрѐщна [5]; запозна́вам се / запозна́я се [10]; срѐщам / срѐщна [10]  
 meeting срѐща [9]  
 menu меню́ [4]  
 merchant тѐрговец [9]  
 meter (*n.*) ме́тър [15]  
 middle (*n.*) средá [2]  
 middle (*adj.*) срѐден [3]  
 Middle Ages средновеко́вие [8]  
 midnight полуно́щ [9]  
 mild ме́к [15]  
 milk (*n.*) мля́ко [6]  
 milkiness млѐчност [10]  
 mine мо́й [8]  
 ministry министѐрство [14]  
 minute (*n.*) мину́та [6]  
 mirror (*n.*) огледа́ло [11]  
 Miss госпóжица [1]  
 miss (*v.*) изпу́скам / изпу́сна [7]  
 mistake (*n.*) грѐшка [3]  
 modesty сра́м [12]  
 Mom ма́ма [2]  
 moment момѐнт [5]  
 monastery манасти́р [8]  
 Monday понеде́лник [9]  
 money пари́ [11]  
 moneychanger [unofficial] че́йнджаджия́, -ийка [10]  
 month ме́сец [9]  
 moon луна́ [9]  
 Moravian мора́вски [8]  
 more пове́че [7]; once more отнóво [2]  
 more (*comparative degree*) по́- [10]

## English-Bulgarian Glossary

more or less гóре-дóлу [11]  
 morning (*n.*) сýтрин [9]; ýтро [9]  
 morning (*adj.*) ýтринен [9]  
 mortal (*adj.*) смъртен [4]  
 most (*superlative degree*) нáй- [10]; the  
     most нáй-мнóго [10]  
 mother мáйка [2]  
 mother-in-law свекърва [9]; търца [10]  
 mountain планинá [3]  
 mourn оплаквам / оплача [11]  
 mouse мýшка [11]  
 mouth (*n.*) устá [12]  
 move (*v.*) вървя [3]; двýжа се [14]  
 movement движéние [12]  
 movie фýлм [8]  
 Mr. господýн [1]  
 Mrs. госпожá [1]  
 much мнóго [2]  
 muscle мýскул [12]  
 mushroom гърба [4]  
 music мýзика [5]  
 must трýбва [12]  
 mustache мустáци [14]  
 my мóй [8]

nail [finger or toe] нóкът [8]  
 name (*n.*) ýме [6]; my name is áз се  
     кáзвам [1]  
 name (*v.*) наричам / нарекá [13]  
 narrow тéсен [2]  
 national нарóден [5]  
 native (*adj.*) рóден [11]  
 nature прирóда [7]  
 near до [2]  
 nearby блýзо [4]  
 necessary неóбходýм [13]; it's not  
     necessary нýма нýжда [2]  
 neck шýя [12]; neck, back of the neck  
     врát [12]; гýша [12]  
 necklace гердán [14]  
 necktie вратоврýзка [13]  
 need (*n.*) нýжда [2]  
 need (*v.*) ýмам нýжда от [4]; трáбва  
     [12]  
 neighbor съсéд (ка) [5]  
 neither нýто [8]; neither...ног ни ... ни  
     [8]; ни [8]  
 nephew плéменник [10]  
 nest (*n.*) гнездó [13]  
 never нýкога [8]  
 new нóв [7]  
 New Year's нóва годýна [10]  
 New Year's (*adj.*) новогóдýшен [11]  
 New Year's greeting новогóдýшна  
     честýтка [11]

newlywed младижéнец [10];  
     младижéнка [10]  
 news [a piece of] новинá [5]  
 newspaper вéстник [6]  
 next (*adj.*) дрýг [7]; слéдващ [8]  
 next (*adv.*) пóсле [6]  
 next year догодýна [7]  
 nice хýбав [2]  
 niece плéменница [10]  
 night (*n.*) нóщ [9]  
 night (*adj.*) нóщен [9]  
 nightmare кошмáр [6]  
 nine дéвет [6]  
 nine hundred дéветстотин [9]  
 nineteen дeвeтнáйсет [6]  
 ninety дeвeтдeсeт [6]  
 ninth дeвeти [8]  
 no нé [3]  
 no one (*subject*) нýкой [8]  
 no one (*object*) нýкого [8]  
 noise шýм [6]; make noise вдýгам  
     шýм [6]  
 noisy шýмен [10]  
 none, no kind of нýкакъв [8]  
 noon (*n.*) обýд [9]  
 noon (*adj.*) óбеден [9]  
 nose нóс [11]  
 not не [1]; not yet óще не [3]; not  
     a one нýто едýн [8]  
 not at all нýкак [8]  
 not have нýмам [2]  
 not only...but хém ... хém [12]  
 note (*n.*) белéжка [7]  
 notebook тетрáдка [7]  
 nothing нýщо [8]; nothing of the sort  
     нýщо подóбно [8]  
 notice (*v.*) забелýзвам / забелéжа [5]  
 nourish хрánя [8]  
 novel (*n.*) ромán [3]  
 November ноéмври [9]  
 now сегá [1]  
 nowhere нýкýде [8]  
 number (*n.*) нóмер [2] [3] [8]; числó  
     [14]

obey слýшам [4]  
 obvious явен [11]  
 occasion (*n.*) пóвод [13]  
 occupy занимавам [11]; заéмам / заéма  
     [12]  
 occur настърпам / настърпя [13];  
     слýчвам се / слýча се [20]  
 October октóмври [6]  
 odd numbered нечéтен [11]  
 of на [1]; от [4]  
 of course разбýра се [3]

## English-Bulgarian Glossary

- offer (v.) поднасям / поднеса [6] ;  
 представям / представя [13]  
 office кабинет [4]  
 often често [3]  
 oil [cooking] олио [6]  
 OK може [4] ; наред [7] ; добре [3]  
 old стар [7] ; how old are you? на  
 колко сте години? [6]  
 older по-голям [10]  
 omelet омлет [4]  
 on на [2]  
 on duty дежурен [10]  
 on foot пеша [9]  
 on the left вляво [11]  
 on the right вдясно [11]  
 once (adv.) веднъж [7]  
 once (conjunction) щом [11]  
 one един [2] [3] ; едно [2] [3] ; една  
 [3]  
 oneself сам, сама, самó, самí [12]  
 oneself (direct object) се [5] ; себе си  
 [11]  
 oneself (indirect object) си [5] [7] ; себе  
 си [11]  
 onion лук [6]  
 only (adj.) единствен [11]  
 only (adv.) само [1]  
 open (v.) отварям / отворя [2] [3] [4]  
 open (adj.) отворен [2] ; явен [11]  
 openly открито [13]  
 opera опера [12]  
 opposite срещу [12]  
 or или [3]  
 orange (adj.) портокалов [10]  
 order (v.) поръчвам / поръчам [4] ;  
 заповядам / заповядам [5]  
 organize организирам [12] ; устройвам /  
 устрой [13]  
 Orthodox [religion] (adj.) православен [8]  
 other друг [2]  
 our, ours наш [8]  
 out вън [11]  
 out of извън [10]  
 outside извън [10], навън [11] ; to the  
 outside навън [11]  
 own (adj.) свой [10] ; собствен [12]
- page (n.) страница [3]  
 pail кофа [14]  
 pain (n.) болка [12]  
 paint (n.) боя [10]  
 paint (v.) боядисвам [10]  
 painter, paint merchant бояджия [10]  
 pair (n.) двойка [13]  
 palate небцe [12]  
 pale (adj.) блед [11]
- palm [of the hand] длан [12]  
 panic (n.) паника [3]  
 pants панталон(и) [14]  
 paper хартия [8]  
 parcel пакет [5]  
 pardon (n.) извинение [13]  
 pardon (v.) извинявам / извиня [5]  
 parent родител [9]  
 parrot папагал [9]  
 part страна [15]  
 particular особен [10]  
 party партия [14]  
 pass (v.) минавам / мина [5] ; подавам /  
 подам [11]  
 pass by отминавам / отмина [14]  
 pass one another разминавам се / размина  
 се [15]  
 past (adj.) минал [9]  
 path път [8] ; пътека [11]  
 patient (n.) пациент (ка) [4]  
 patient (adj.) търпелив [3]  
 pay (v.) плащам / платя [4]  
 pay attention внимавам [6]  
 pencil молив [2]  
 pendant пискюл [13]  
 people хора [4] ; души [6] ; народ [7]  
 pepper (vegetable) чушка [6]  
 perfective aspect свършен вид [12]  
 permission разрешение [13]  
 person човек [4]  
 personable представителен [14]  
 persuade убеждавам / убедя [11]  
 photograph (n.) снимка [6]  
 physician лекар [1]  
 pick (v.) обирам / обера [8] ; бера [12]  
 pick a number познавам число [14]  
 pickles, pickled vegetables туршия [10]  
 picture-book албум [9]  
 pile up затрупвам / затрупам [11]  
 pin (v.) забождам / забодя [13]  
 pitchfork вила [10]  
 pity (n.) съжаление [1] ; жалко [11]  
 place (n.) място [2]  
 plain (n.) поле [15] ; равнина [15]  
 plan (n.) план [7]  
 plan (v.) каня се [11]  
 plant (v.) посаждам / посадя [8]  
 platform перон [7]  
 play (n.) пиеса [12] ; игра [14]  
 play (v.) играя [5]  
 play around играя си [11]  
 play for a while поигравам / поиграя [10]  
 play tricks on правя номера на [8]  
 playing (n.) игра [14]  
 playmate, playfellow другарче [13]  
 pleasant приятен [9]  
 please моля [4]  
 pleased доволен [6]



## English-Bulgarian Glossary

- plunder обирам / оберá [8]  
 poem стихотворение [3]  
 pond езеро [3]  
 pool (lottery) тóто [14]  
 popcorn пуканки [9]  
 popular популярен [12]  
 portion порция [7]  
 position (job) служба [14]  
 (it is) possible може [4]  
 post office поща [3]  
 postal пощенски [10]  
 postcard картичка [3]  
 postman пощаджия, -ийка [10]  
 pot тенджерa [6]  
 pour поливам / полéя [13]  
 precise точен [6]  
 prefer предпочитам / предпочетá [4]  
 preparation подготовка [5]  
 prepare готвя [4]; готвя се [9];  
     приготвям / приготвя [10];  
     постягам / постéгна [11];  
     подготвям / подготвя [12]  
 prepared готов [6]  
 present (*n.*) подарък [7]  
 present (*v.*) поднасям / поднесá [6];  
     представям / представя [13]  
 present-day сегашен [9]  
 preserve консервирам [6]  
 preserved консервиран [6]  
 preserves [thick sweet] сладко [3]  
 pressure (*n.*) напрежение [14]  
 pretty хубав [2]  
 previous предишен [9]  
 price цена [12]  
 primarily предимно [9]  
 prince княз [8]  
 prize (*n.*) награда [13]  
 probably май [12]; навярно [14]  
 procession шествие [12]  
 produce (*v.*) изваждам / извэдя [14]  
 productive работоспособен [9]  
 professor професор [13]  
 program програма [8]  
 progress напредък [9]  
 promise (*v.*) обещавам / обеща́я [10]  
 prompt подсказвам / подсказá [13]  
 prop up подпирам / подпíра [14]  
 propose предлагам / предлóжа [8]  
 proposition предложение [9]  
 protect пазя [8]  
 provoke предизвиквам / предизвикам  
     [10]  
 public публица [10]  
 puppet кукла [13]  
 purchase (*v.*) купувам [5]  
 push бу́там [6]; ка́рам [6]  
 push in вка́рвам / вка́рам [12]  
 pushcart количка [7]
- put сла́гам / слóжа [4]; put to bed  
     сла́гам да лéгне [5]  
 put in order редя́ [12]  
 put on [clothing] обличам / облекá [13];  
     обличам се / облекá се [13] [footwear]  
     обувам се / обу́я се [13]; обувам /  
     обу́я [13]
- quarrel (*n.*) кавга́ [10]  
 quarrel (*v.*) ка́рам се [11]  
 quarrelsome person кавгаджия, -ийка [10]  
 quarter (*n.*) четвърт [11]  
 quarters кварти́ра [14]  
 question (*n.*) въпрóс [11]  
 queue опáшка [11]  
 quick бърз [6]  
 quiz (*n.*) контро́лна ра́бота [8];  
     контрòлно [8]
- radio ра́дио [14]  
 rag парца́л [14]  
 rain (*n.*) дъжд [12]  
 rain (*v.*) вали́ [12]; вали́ дъжд [12]  
 raise (*v.*) вдига́м / вдигна [6]  
 rakia ракия́ [2]  
 rapture (*n.*) възто́рг [10]  
 rare ря́дък [10]  
 rarely ря́дко [10]  
 raspberry мали́на [3]  
 rational разу́мен [13]  
 rattle (*v.*) тра́кам [13]  
 razorblade но́жче [13]  
 reach пода́вам / подáм [11]; стига́м /  
     сти́гна [13]  
 read четá [3]; прочи́там / прочетá [5]  
 read for a bit почи́там / почетá [11]  
 ready (*adj.*) готов [6]  
 real и́стински [8]  
 really найстина́ [2]  
 rear (*adj.*) за́ден [14]  
 rear end за́дник [12]  
 recall спомня́м си / спомня́ си [8];  
     се́щам се / се́тя се [11]  
 recently отско́ро (since recently) [11]  
 receive получа́вам / полúча [8]  
 recipe рецéпта [6]  
 recite декламира́м [7]  
 reckon смя́там / смéтна [13]  
 recognize опозна́вам / опозна́я [7]  
 record [phonograph] (*n.*) плóча [13]  
 recording за́пис [13]  
 red червén [3]  
 redo, repair ремонтира́м [2]  
 refrigerator хладилник [7]

## English-Bulgarian Glossary

- refuse (*v.*) откázвам / откáжа [13]  
 regarding по пóвод [13]  
 regret (*v.*) съжáлявам / съжáля [8]  
 regular редóвен [13]  
 rejoice рáдвам се [5]  
 relate разкázвам / разкáжа [8] ;  
     разпáрявам / разпáря [12]  
 relative (*n.*) роднiна [10]  
 rely on разчiтам [12]  
 remain остáвам / остáна [3] [4]  
 remaining остáнало [9]  
 remember пóмня [13] ; запóмням /  
     запóмня [9] ; сéщам се / сéтя се  
     [11]  
 remind подсéщам / подсéтя [4]  
 renowned знаменiт [14]  
 rent (*n.*) нáем [12]  
 rent out дáвам под нáем [12]  
 repeat, replay (*n.*) повтóрение [12]  
 repeat (*v.*) повтáрям / повтóря [12]  
 replace (*v.*) смéням / сменя [3] [4]  
 report (*n.*) доклáд [12]  
 republic репúблика [14]  
 resemble прилiчам [10]  
 residential жiлищен [8] ; residential  
     district жiлищен комплéкс [8]  
 resort (*n.*) курóрт [11]  
 respect уважáвам [20] ; тáча [13]  
 rest (*n.*) почiвка [3]  
 rest (*v.*) почiвам си / почiна си [8]  
 rest, go on holiday почiвам / почiна [4]  
 rest (*adj.*) почiвен [8]  
 restaurant ресторáнт [4]  
 restless неспокобен [4]  
 return връщам / върна [5] ; връщам  
     се / върна се [11]  
 return a favor реванширам се [5]  
 revue ревió [13]  
 reward (*n.*) нагрáда [13]  
 rewrite препiсвам / препиша [13]  
 rice ориз [6]  
 rich богáт [7]  
 right (*n.*) прáво [12]  
 right (*adj.*) дéсен [11] ; right, to the right  
     надясно [11] ; right, from the right  
     отдясно [11]  
 Rila (*adj.*) рiлски [8]  
 ring (*v.*) звъня [5]  
 ring out иззвънявам / иззвъня [14]  
 ripen зрeя [9]  
 river рекá [9]  
 road (*n.*) път [6]  
 road (*adj.*) пътен [12]  
 rock (*n.*) кáмък [21] ; скалá [14]  
 roll (*v.*) свiвам / свiя [13]  
 room стáя [9]  
 rotate въртá се [14]  
 rotten развалeн [11]
- round (*adj.*) кръгъл [10]  
 round about наóколо [9]  
 rub (*v.*) бърша [13]  
 rubbish боклúк [14]  
 rule (*n.*) прáвило [12]  
 run (*v.*) тiчам [8]
- sack (*n.*) торбá [11]  
 salad салáта [4]  
 salesperson продавáч (ка) [7]  
 salt (*n.*) сол [9]  
 salt (*v.*) посолявам / посоля [9]  
 salt shaker солница [9]  
 same същ [3] ; the same thing същото  
     [4] ; one and the same едiн и същ  
     [10]  
 sandwich сáндвич [9]  
 Santa Claus Дядо Кóледа [10]  
 satire сáтира [5]  
 satisfied доволен [6]  
 Saturday сьбота [8]  
 sauerkraut кiсело зéле [6]  
 sausage салáм [11]  
 say кáзвам / кáжа [1] [4] ; рекá [7]  
 scare (*v.*) стряскáм / стрéсна [11] ;  
     стряскáм се / стрéсна се [11]  
 scent (*n.*) миризмá [11]  
 school (*n.*) учiлище [5] [6]  
 school (*adj.*) учiлищен [10]  
 school bell учiлищен звънец [10]  
 scold кáрам се [11]  
 score a goal вкáрвам гóл [12]  
 scratch (*v.*) дерá [12]  
 sea (*n.*) морé  
 sea (*adj.*) мóрски [15]  
 sea level мóрското равнище [15]  
 seasons [of the year] годишните времена  
     [9]  
 seat (*n.*) място [2]  
 seat (*v.*) посáждам / посáдя [8]  
 second (*adj.*) втóри [8]  
 secretary секретáр (ка) [1]  
 see виждам / видя [3] [4]  
 see off, send off изпáщам / изпáтя [8]  
 seek търся [7] ; потърсявам / потърся  
     [7]  
 seem изглéждам [4] [6]  
 seize хвáщам / хвáна [9]  
 select (*v.*) избiрам / избeрá [4]  
 selection избор [7]  
 sell продавам / продáм [6]  
 send прáщам / прáтя [2] [3] [4]  
 sense (*n.*) смiсьл [11]  
 sensible разумен [13]  
 sensitive to the cold зимóрничав [11]  
 separate (*adj.*) отдeлен [3]

## English-Bulgarian Glossary

- separately отдѣлно [2]  
 September септѣмври [5]  
 serve сервирам [4]; поднасям /  
 поднеса [6]  
 service служба [14]  
 serving порция [7]  
 set (v.) [of the sun] залязвам / заляза [9]  
 set in настѣпвам / настѣпя [13]  
 set out трѣгвам / трѣгна [4]  
 set up нареждам / наредя [6]  
 settle уреждам / уредя [9]  
 seven седем [2]  
 seven hundred седемстотин [9]  
 seventeen седемнайсет [6]  
 seventh седми [8]  
 seventy седемдесѣт [6]  
 several нѣколко [6]  
 severe суров [11]  
 shake треса [12]  
 shame (n.) срам [12]  
 she тя [1]; то [1]  
 sheet [of paper] лист [4]  
 shell [of a snail] бхлюв [14]  
 shift (v.) прехвърлям се / прехвърля се  
 [12]  
 shining лѣскав [10]  
 shirt рѣза [13]  
 shoe обувка [3]  
 shoes обуца [13]  
 shoelace връзка [13]  
 Shope (*adj.*, of the region) шопски [4]  
 short кратък [9]; къс [12]  
 should трябва [12]  
 shoulder (n.) рамо [12]  
 shout (v.) викам [12]  
 shove (v.) бутам [6]  
 show (n.) ревю [13]  
 show (v.) показвам / покажа [7];  
 проявявам / проявя [8]  
 sick болен [2]  
 side (n.) страна [6] [15]  
 sidewalk тротоар [14]  
 sign (n.) знак [9]  
 similar подобен [8]  
 sin (v.) греша [7]  
 since от [6]; откакто [10]; щом [11]  
 sing пѣя [11]; изпявам / изпѣя [11];  
 sing a little попявам / попѣя [11]  
 singer певѣц  
 single единствен [11]  
 Sir господѣн [1]; кѣр [1] (*archaic*)  
 sister сестра [10]  
 sit седя [4]  
 sit down сядам / седна [4]  
 six шѣст [6]; шестѣма [6]  
 six hundred шѣстстотин [9]  
 sixteen шестнайсет [6]  
 sixth шѣсти [8]
- sixty шестдесѣт, шейсет [6]  
 size нѳмер [8]  
 ski resort зимен курорт [11]  
 skin (n.) кожа [12]  
 skin (v.) дѣра [12]  
 skip (v.) пропускам / пропуска [10]  
 slab плѳча [7]  
 sleep (n.) сѣн [8]  
 sleep (v.) спя [4]  
 slice (n.) филия [14]; small slice  
 филийка [14]  
 slice (v.) рѣжа [12]  
 slip out, slip through изплѣзвам се /  
 изплѣзна се [14]  
 slow бавен [3]  
 small малък [2]  
 smart (*adj.*) умѣн [10]  
 smell (n.) миризма [11]  
 smoke (n.) дѣм [4]  
 smoke (v.) пуша [4]  
 smoking пушене [4]  
 sneeze (v.) кѣхам (*or* кѣхвам) / кѣхна [14]  
 snorkel (n.) шнѳрхел [14]  
 snow (n.) сняг [3] [7]  
 snow (v.) вали сняг [12]  
 snow (*adj.*) снѣжен [11]  
 snowflake снѣжинка [10]  
 snowman снѣжен чѳвѣк [11]  
 so many тѳлкова [4]  
 so much тѳлкова [4]  
 so that та [13]  
 soak измѳкрям / измѳкря [12]  
 soccer фѳтбол [10]  
 socialist социалистѣчески [14]  
 society общество [12]  
 Sofia resident софианец, софианка [14]  
 Sofia (*adj.*) софѣйски [8]  
 soft мѣк [15]  
 soften омѣквам / омѣкна [11]  
 soldier войнѣк [7]  
 sole [of the foot] стѣпало [12]  
 solve решавам / реша [8]  
 some sort нѣкакъв [8]  
 somehow нѣкак [8]  
 someone нѣкой [8]  
 something нѣщо [5]  
 sometime нѣкога [8]  
 sometimes понякога [8]  
 somewhere нѣкъде [8]  
 son сѣн [9]  
 song пѣсен [9]  
 soon скоро [1]  
 sound (v.) звуча [12]  
 sour кисел [6]  
 south юг [13]  
 speak говѳря [3]  
 special специален [9]; осѳбен [10]  
 spend [time] прекарвам / прекарам [7]

## English-Bulgarian Glossary

- spice (*n.*) подправка [6]  
 spoiled развален [11]  
 spoon (*n.*) лъжица [6]  
 spoonful лъжица [6]  
 sports (*adj.*) спортен [9]  
 spot петно [14]  
 spouse съпруг [3] [10]; съпруга [10]  
 spring (*n.*) пролет [9]; in the spring  
 напролет [9]  
 spring (*adj.*) пролетен [13]  
 stadium стадион [12]  
 stag елен [8]  
 stand стоя [4]  
 stand, endure издържам / издържа [7]  
 stand up ставам / стана [4]  
 standard (*n.*) равнище [15]  
 start почвам / почна [10]  
 start flowing потичам / потека [12]  
 start to rain (or other precipitation)  
 завалява / заваля [12]  
 startle стряскам / стресна [11];  
 стряскам се / стресна се [11]  
 state [political] щат [1]  
 station (bus, train) гара [5]  
 stay оставам / остана [3] [4]  
 stay in one place стоя [11]  
 steadfast твърд [11]  
 steak гържоба [4]  
 steam (*adj.*) парен [11]  
 step (*n.*) стълба [11]  
 step back отстъпвам / отстъпя [8]  
 stepfather втори баща [10]  
 stepmother втора майка [10]; мащеха  
 [10]  
 stick (*v.*) забोधдам / забодя [13]  
 still още [2]  
 stomach стомач [12]  
 stop sign стоп [10]  
 stop [bus or tram] (*n.*) спирка [7]  
 stop (*v.*) спирам / спра [11]  
 store (*n.*) магазин [5]  
 stork щъркел [13]  
 story приказка [12]; разказ [14]  
 straight (*adj.*) прав [4]  
 stranger чужденец [3]; чужденка [3]  
 strawberry ягода [11]  
 street улица [3]  
 strength сила [7]  
 stretch out простирам / простра [12]  
 string (*n.*) връзка [13]  
 string together нижа [14]; нанížвам /  
 нанížжа [14]  
 stroll (*n.*) разходка [9]  
 strong силен [2]  
 student [university level] студент (ка) [1]  
 student [elementary or secondary] ученик,  
 ученичка [7]
- study, examine разглеждам / разгледам  
 [4]  
 study, make a study of изучавам / изуча  
 [4]  
 stuffy задúшен [4]  
 subscribe абонирам [11]  
 succeed успявам / успея [8]  
 success успех [5]  
 such такъв, такава, толкова, такива [11]  
 suddenly изведнъж [5]  
 sugar захар [12]  
 suggestion предложение [9]  
 suit (*n.*) костюм [14]  
 suitcase кúфар [2]  
 sullen намръщен [13]  
 summer лято [9]  
 summit връх [11]  
 sun слънце [9]  
 sunbathe пека се (на слънце) [13]  
 Sunday неделя [6]  
 sunny слънчев [10]  
 supplement (*n.*) допълнение [8]  
 support (*v.*) подпíрам / подпíра [14]  
 sure сигурен [6]  
 surely сигурно [9]  
 surprise (*n.*) изненада [12]  
 survey (*v.*) оглеждам / огледам [14]  
 suspect (*v.*) подозирам / подозра [14]  
 suspend закачам / закача [13]  
 sustain понáсям / понесá [14]  
 swallow (*n.*) глътка [3]  
 swallow (*v.*) глътвам / глътна [7];  
 гълтам [8]  
 sweater жилетка [12]; пулóвер [12]  
 sweet (*adj.*) слáдък [3]  
 sweet shop сладкарница [14]  
 swim плúвам  
 swim suit бáнски [13]
- T-shirt фанелка (or фланелка) [14]  
 table маса [7]; small table масичка  
 [13]  
 tail (*n.*) опáшка [11]  
 take взíмам (or взéмам) / взéма [4];  
 вода [8]; поéмам / поéма [8]; take  
 somewhere завéждам / заведá [10]  
 take a bath изкúпвам се / изкúпя се [14]  
 take an interest in проявúвам интерес към  
 [8]  
 take a look поглéждам / поглéдна [14]  
 take a walk разхóждам се / разхóдя се [8]  
 take care of погрíжвам се / погрíжа се  
 [11]  
 take for a brief stroll поразхóждам [11]  
 take for a walk разхóждам / разхóдя [10]

## English-Bulgarian Glossary

- take off [clothing] съблѣчам / съблѣка [13];  
[13]; съблѣчам се / съблѣка се [13];  
[footwear] събѹвам / събѹя [13];  
събѹвам се / събѹя се [13]
- take out извѣждам / извѣда [9];  
извѣждам / извѣдя [14]
- take place състоѹ се [14]
- take to занѹсам / занесѹ [7]
- take up кѹчвам / качѹ [7]; поѹмам /  
поѹма [8]; заѹмам / заѹма [12]
- tale прѣказка [12]
- talk (v.) говорѹя [3]; прикѹзвам [9]
- talk for a bit поговорѹвам / поговорѹя [12]
- tall висок [5]
- tape recorder [cassette] касетофон [5]
- tardiness [state of being late] закѹснѣние  
[14]
- tassel пискѹл [13]
- taste (n.) вкѹс [7]
- tasty вкѹсен [6]
- taxi таксѹ [14]
- tea (n.) чай [7]
- tea (adj.) чаѣн [7]
- teach ѹча [5]; научѹвам / научѹ [6]
- teacher [university level] преподаватѣл (ка)  
[1]; [elementary or secondary]  
ѹчитѣл (ка) [1]
- team отбор [12]
- teapot чайник [7]
- tear [in eye] сълза [12]
- tear (v.) дерѹ [12]
- teaspoon лѹжѹчка [6]
- teaspoonful лѹжѹчка [6]
- technology тѣхника [12]
- telephone (n.) телефон [5]
- telephone (v.) звѣня по телефона [10]
- telephone (adj.) телефонен [13]
- television телевѹзия [6]
- tell разкѹзвам / разкѹжа [8];  
разпрѹвам / разпрѹва [12]
- ten десет [6]
- tennis тѣнис [13]
- tense [verbal] врѣме [9]
- tension напрежѣние [14]
- terrible страшен [9]; ужасен [12]
- terrifying страхотен [5]
- test (n.) ѹзпит [5]
- test (v.) проверѹвам / проверѹ [13]
- textbook ѹчебник [2]
- than от [8]; откѹлото [10]
- thank благодарѹ [10]
- thank God слава Бѹгу [9]
- thank you благодарѹ [2]
- thanks, thankfulness благодарност [9]
- Thanksgiving Day Дѣн на благодарността  
[9]
- that товѹ [2]; онази [8]; онзи [8]  
оновѹ [8]; онаѹя [11]; онѹй [11];  
ѹня [11]
- that (conjunction) че [3]; та [13]
- that way такѹ [4]
- that's that товѹ е [13]
- theater теѹтър [6]
- their, theirs тѣхен [8]
- them (direct object) ги [5]; тѹх [10]
- them (indirect object) им [7]; на тѹх  
[10]
- then, in that case тогѹва [4]; то [11]
- then, next пѹсле [6]
- thence, from there оттѹм [3]
- there там [4]
- there is/are ѹма [2]; there isn't/aren't  
нѹма [2]
- therefore затѹвѹ [5]
- these тѣзи [3]; тѹя [11]
- they тѣ [1]
- thigh бедрѹ [12]
- thin слаб [14]
- think мѹсля [5]
- think about помѹслям / помѹсля [12]
- think of сѣщам се / сѣтя се [11]
- think up измѹслям / измѹсля [12]
- third трѣти [8]
- thirsty жѹден [2]
- thirteen тринаѹсет [6]
- thirty трѹйсет [6]
- this товѹ [2]; тѹзи [3]; тѹзи [3];  
тѹй [11]; тѹя [11]; тѹя [11]
- this evening довѣчера [9]
- those онѣзи [8]; онѹя [11]
- thousand хиляда [9]
- thread together нѹжа [14]
- three трѹ [2]; трѹма [6]
- three hundred трѹста [9]
- throat гѣрло [12]; гѹша [12]
- through през [6]
- throughout из [11]
- thumb пѹлец [12]
- Thursday четвѣртѹк [9]
- thus затѹвѹ [5]; thus, that way такѹ  
[4]; тѹй [11]
- ticket билѣт [11]
- tie (n.) врѹзка [13]
- tie (v.) заврѹзвам / заврѹжа [13]
- tied приврѹзан [11]
- tight тѣсен [2]
- tighten постѹгам / постѹгна [11]
- tile плѹчка [3]; плѹча [7]
- time врѣме [2]; on time наврѣме [5]
- time [instance] пѣт [4] [6]
- time off ѹпуска [2]
- tip (n.) врѣх [11]
- tire (v.) омрѹзвам / омрѹзна [12]
- tired уморѣн [8]

## English-Bulgarian Glossary

- title заглавие [13]  
 to (*preposition*) за [1]; до [5]; на [7]  
 to (*subordinating conjunction*) да [5]  
 toast (*v.*) чукам се / чу́кна се [11]  
 today днес [1]  
 today's днешен [9]  
 toe пръст [12]; big toe палец [12]  
 together заедно [5]  
 tomato домат [6]  
 tomorrow утре [4]  
 tomorrow's утрешен [9]  
 tonight тази нощ [9]  
 tonsil сливица [12]  
 too bad жалко [11]  
 too much прекалено [13]  
 tooth зъб [6] [8]  
 torn скъсан [14]  
 touch (*v.*) пипам [9]  
 tour of a city разходка из града [11]  
 tourist турист [8]  
 toward към [8]  
 towel кърпа [13]  
 town град [6]  
 traffic движение [12]  
 traffic laws правила на пътното движение [12]  
 train (*n.*) влак [2]  
 tram трамвай [2]  
 tram (*adj.*) трамваен [7]  
 transfer прехвърлям се / прехвърля се [12]  
 translation превод [14]  
 travel (*v.*) пътувам [1] [3]  
 traveler пътник [7]  
 traveling (*adj.*) пътен [12]  
 travels пътуване [7]  
 treasure (*n.*) съкровище [13]  
 treat (*v.*) черпя [4]; почерпвам / почерпя [6]; третирам [8]  
 tree дърво [7]  
 trip (*n.*) пътуване [7]; пътешествие [11]  
 trout пъстърва [9]  
 true истински [8]; верен [10]  
 truly найстина [2]  
 truth истина [1]  
 try to convince убеждавам [14]  
 tsar цар [8]  
 Tuesday вторник [9]  
 Turks турци [6]  
 turn (*v.*) завивам / завия [6]; обръщам се / обръна се [14]  
 turn around въртя се [14]  
 turtle костенурка [9]  
 twelve дванайсет [6]  
 twenty два́сет [6]  
 twist (*v.*) изплітам / изплетá [12]  
 two две [2] [6]; два [6]; двама [6]  
 two-colored двуцветен [13]  
 two hundred двеста [9]  
 type (*n.*) тип [7]  
 typical типичен [3]  
 umbrella чадър [12]  
 uncle чичко [6]; вуйчо [10]; чичо [10]  
 unconscionable прекален [13]  
 under под [3]  
 understand разбира́м [1] [3] [4]  
 understanding разбира́не [12]  
 undress (*v.*) съблїчам / съблекá [13]; съблїчам се / съблекá се [13]  
 uneasy неспокоен [4]  
 unfortunately за съжаление [1]  
 union (*n.*) съюз [14]  
 United States of America Съединените америка́нски щати [1]  
 university (*n.*) университет [7]  
 university (*adj.*) университетски [12]  
 unknown непознат [5]  
 until до [6]; докато [9]; докато не [13]  
 until now досегá [6]  
 up горе [11]; нагоре [11]  
 up to до [5]  
 upright прав [4]  
 USA САЩ [1]  
 us (*direct object*) ни [5]; нас [10]  
 us (*indirect object*) ни [7]; на нас [10]  
 use (*n.*) полза [12]  
 useful полезен [8]  
 usual обикновен [8]  
 usually обикновено [2]  
 utter рекá [7]  
 vacation отпус́ка [2]; почи́вка [3]; вака́нция [6]  
 various разли́чен [10]  
 vegetable зеленчу́к [7]  
 vegetarian (*n.*) [person] вегетериáнец [3]; вегетериáнка [3]  
 vegetarian (*adj.*) [of food] безме́сен [7]  
 verbatim наизу́ст [4]  
 verify проверя́вам / проверя́ [13]  
 very мно́го [1]  
 [the] very са́м, самá, само́, самі́ [12]  
 videocamera видеока́мера [5]  
 videocassette видеокасе́та [12]  
 view (*n.*) ви́д [11]  
 vigil навече́рие [10]  
 village се́ло [2]  
 vine (*n.*) лозá [6]

## English-Bulgarian Glossary

- vine (*adj.*) лóзов [6]  
 vineyard лóзе [10]  
 visit (*v.*) идвам на гóсти [5];  
     посещáвам / посетя́ [11]  
 voice (*n.*) глáс [12]
- wagon вагóн [6]  
 waistcoat жилéтка [12]  
 wait (*v.*) почáквам / почáкам [7]  
 wait, wait for чáкам [3]  
 wait in line редя́ се на опáшка [12]  
 waiter сервитьóр (ка) [4]  
 waiting room чакáлня [15]  
 wake събúждам / събúдя [11]  
 wake up събúждам се / събúдя се [11]  
 walk (*n.*) разхóдка [9]  
 walk (*v.*) вървя́ [3]; разхóждам се /  
     разхóдя се [8]  
 walk the dog извéждам кúчето на  
     разхóдка [9]  
 walnut óрех [6]  
 want (*v.*) íскам [5]; щá [7];  
     поисквам / пойскам [12]  
 war (*n.*) войнá [7]  
 warm (*v.*) грéя [9]  
 warm (*adj.*) тóпъл [2]  
 was бéше [6] (2-3sg); бях [6] (*Isg*)  
 wash (*v.*) мия́ [8]; перá [12];  
     изпи́рам / изперá [12]; изми́вам /  
     измия́ [13]  
 wassailer сурвакáр [10]  
 watch (*n.*) часóвник [7]  
 water (*n.*) водá [4]  
 water (*v.*) поли́вам / полéя [13]  
 wave (*v.*) мáхам [14]  
 way нáчин [6]  
 way, road пъ́т [6] [8]  
 we ние́ [1]  
 weak слáб [14]  
 wear (*v.*) нóся [3]  
 weather (*n.*) врéме [2]  
 wedding (*n.*) свáтба [10]  
 wedding (*adj.*) свáтбен [11]  
 Wednesday сря́да [9]  
 week сéдмица [6]  
 welcome добré дошли́ [2] [11]; добré  
     дошла́ [11]; добré дошъл [11]  
 well добré [2]  
 well (*hesitation sound*) амí [7]  
 were бяха [6] (*3pl*); бяхме [6] (*Ipl*);  
     бяхте [6] (*2pl*)  
 what каквó [1] [4]; кактв́ [3]; what is  
     your name? как се кáзвате? [1];  
     what kind of кактв́ [3]; щó [8];  
     what's it about? за каквó стáва дýма?  
     [11]
- whatever каквó ли не [12]; каквóто  
     [12]  
 wheel колелó [14]  
 when кога́ [6]; when, at what time в  
     кóлко часá [6]; като [6]  
 whence, from where откъ́де [1]  
 where къ́де [1]  
 whether дали́ [11]  
 which кóй, коя́, коé, кой [5]  
 while докато [9]; пъ́к [11]  
 white бял [2]  
 who кóй [3]; коя́, коé, кой [5]  
 whole (*adj.*) ця́л [7]  
 wholesale на éдро [9]  
 whom когó [8]  
 whose чий, чия́, чие́, чий [8]  
 why защó [3]; каквó [4]  
 wide ширóк [12]  
 wife женá [2]  
 will (*n.*) во́ля [12]  
 will (*v., future tense*) ще [7]  
 win (*v.*) спечéлвам / спечéля [14]  
 wind вятър [2] [7]  
 window прозóрец [3]; small window  
     прозóрче [13]  
 wine ви́но [2]  
 Winnie the Pooh Мéчо Пúх [11]  
 winter зима́ [9]  
 winter (*adj.*) зимен [11]  
 wipe бърша́ [13]; избърсвам / избърша́  
     [13]  
 wish (*n.*) желáние [14]  
 wish (*v.*) желáя [7]; пожелáвам /  
     пожелáя [8]; поисквам / пойскам  
     [12]  
 with с [2]; със [7]  
 within, in [time] за [6]  
 without без [6]; без да [14]  
 wizard вълше́бник [11]  
 wolf вълк [8]  
 woman женá [2]  
 wonder (*v.*) чудя́ се [5]; попитвам се /  
     попита́м се [13]  
 wonderful чудéсен [2]  
 won't нýма да [7]  
 wood (*n.*) дървó [11]  
 wood, wooden дървен [13]  
 woods горá [3]  
 wool (*n.*) вълна́ [21]  
 wool, woollen вълнен [13]  
 word дýма [7]; word of honor чéстна  
     дýма [12]  
 work (*n.*) рáбота [2] [4] [14]  
 work (*v.*) рабóтя [4] [11]  
 work (*adj.*) рабóтен [6]  
 world (*n.*) свя́т [18]  
 world (*adj.*) светóвен [10]

## English-Bulgarian Glossary

worry (v.) притеснявам / притесня [8]  
 worry, be worried притеснявам се /  
 притесня се [7]  
 wrap (v.) завивам / завия [6]  
 wrist кйтка [12]  
 write пиша [3]; напишвам / напиша [5]  
 writer писател (ка) [10]

yard двор [11]  
 year година [3]  
 yearly годишен [9]  
 yell викам [12]  
 yes да [1]  
 yesterday вчера [9]  
 yesterday evening снощи [9]

yesterday's вчерашен [9]  
 yet още [2]; пък [11]  
 yield (v.) отстъпвам / отстъпя [8]  
 yogurt кисело мляко [6]  
 you (subject) вие [1] (*pl.; sg. polite*); ти  
 [1] (*sg., familiar*)  
 you (direct object) ви [5] (*pl.; sg. polite*);  
 вас [10] (*pl.; sg. polite*); те [5]; тебе  
 [10] (*sg., familiar*)  
 you (indirect object) ви [7] (*pl.; sg. polite*);  
 на вас [10] (*pl.; sg. polite*); ти [7]  
 (*sg., familiar*); на тебе [10] (*sg.,  
 familiar*)  
 young млад [7]  
 younger по-малък [10]  
 your, yours ваш [8] (*pl.; sg. polite*); твой  
 [8] (*sg., familiar*)



Courtyard of house in eastern Bulgarian seaside town



## INDEX

*Note: alphabetic ordering in Cyrillic lists is as in Cyrillic.*

### Accent, *see also* Intonation

- to distinguish meanings
  - numeral vs. indefinite article: 55
  - time on the clock vs. as duration: 107
  - перед in meaning "ago" vs. "before": 107, 108
  - само in meaning "only" vs. "alone": 250
- general: 13
- distinguishing present from aorist: 180
- in numbers: 111
- in present tense: 49
- of clitics after negation: 35, 91
- of prepositions: 26, 278
- of words before ли: 25
- on contrastive не: 93
- on ще: 131
- stress shifts
  - between present and aorist, summarized: 255
  - to article in feminine nouns in a consonant: 172
  - to masculine singular article: 111, 132
  - to masculine plural in -ове: 125, 132
  - to masculine plurals in -е, -а: 159
  - to theme vowel in certain aorist forms: 180
  - neuter plural: 103, 110
  - quantified vs. masculine definite object: 104-105, 111
- unstressed vowels: 14

### Adjectives

- general review: 315
- agreement with nouns: 33-34
- comparison of: 198-199
- conjoined, modifying nouns of different gender: 161
- consonant shifts in derivation: 208
- contrasted with adverbs: 50
- definiteness in: 145, 153-154
- derived from nouns: 134, 207
- expressing time past and future: 177
- fleeting vowels: 34, 40
- functioning as nouns: 153-154
- masculine form in -и: 56, 144, 153
- ordinal numbers: 144, 177
- past active participles as: 172-173, 177
- possessive pronominal adjectives
  - compared with long-form pronouns: 203
  - derivation of possessive adjectives: 207
  - мой, etc.: 146
    - definiteness in: 154-155
  - свой, etc.: 196-197
  - чий, etc.: 146
- "soft" adjective (син): 154
- stem: 40
  - subject vs. object usage: 177



**Adverbs**

- general form: 50
- directional (навън, отгоре, etc.): 223-224
- indefinite (някога, някъде, etc.): 147
- interrogative (кога, къде, etc.): 147
- of location (вътре, вън, etc.): 223-224
- negative (никога, никъде, etc.): 147
- of time: 174
- usage: 55

**Agreement**

- adjectives and nouns: 33-34
- adjectives with neuter plural nouns: 104
- definite articles and nouns: 33
- in conjoined adjectives: 161
- pronouns referring to nouns: 32
- "rhyming" principle: 34, 57, 199
- of past active participles: 172-173
- of verbs in да-phrases: 81
- вие with singular meaning: 41

**Aorist tense**

- general: 102
- and aspect: 245-246, 256
- meaning: 103
- of a-verbs (type питам, отварям): 102
- of e-verbs
  - (type стана, пиша, пия, взема): 194-195
  - (type къпя, копая): 202, 227
  - (type живея, умра): 219-220
  - (type лая, позная): 227
  - (type пера, разбира): 245
- of и-verbs
  - (type ходя, броя): 170
  - (type вървя, видя): 219
  - спя: 227
  - боли: 248
- in -ох
  - (type чета, дам, дойда, отида): 171
  - (type сека): 180
- of съм: 102
- contrast of aorist and imperfect tenses: 293-294, 301
- relationship between aorist and present tense forms: 253-255
- usage of aorist: 245-246

**Article, see Definiteness**

**Aspect**

- general review: 316
- general: 64, 132-133, 302-303
- in да-phrases: 82-83
- and the aorist: 245-246, 256
- and conjunctions: 274
- and the future tense: 122-123
- and the imperative: 65, 70, 273
- and the imperfect tense: 302-303
- derivation of imperfectives: 132
- meaning of imperfective aspect: 69

- meaning of perfective aspect: 69
- and motion verbs: 85-86, 93, 112
- pairs
  - simplex vs. paired: 70
  - prefixation and pairs: 70, 125-127
  - meaning of paired verbs: 132-133
- perfective of habitual action: 69
- prefixation: 70, 125-126, 132
- simplex imperfectives: 69-70, 126-127
- verbs of body position: 66, 71
- verbs with imperfective only: 69

**Body, reference to**

- body language for yes/no: 46
- verbs of body position: 66, 71
- body-ache construction: 247-248
- names of body parts: 251, 259

**Clitics, see Word order rules**

- defined: 13-14

**Conjugation, see also Verbs; names of individual tenses**

- present tense conjugations: 48-49
- theme vowels in aorist tense: 102, 170-171, 180, 184, 219
- theme vowels in present tense: 54
- theme vowels in aorist and present compared: 253-255
- theme vowel of the imperfect tense: 270, 290-291, 299

\* **Conjunctions**

- and aspect: 274
- conjoined phrases: 160
- contrast of **и**, **а**, and **но**: 41
- subordinate clauses: 296-297, 303
- а**: 21, 26, 41
- ако**: 296
- без да**: 297
- докато**: 274, 296
- и**: 21, 26, 41, 160
- или**: 160
- както**: 177-178, 296
- като**: 177-178, 296
- когато**: 297
- ни**: 155, 160
- ниито**: 155
- но**: 41
- преди да**: 297, 303
- след като**: 297, 303
- че**: 234, 297
- щом**: 297

**Cyrillic alphabet**

- names of letters: 6
- order of letters: 6-7
- transliteration: 6-7
- cursive form of letters: 9-12

**Да-phrases**

- as infinitive replacement: 81-82, 89-90, 127
- as subject or object of sentence: 127-128
- after **хайте**: 82
- with modal meaning: 128, 224-225, 273

**Definiteness**

- general review: 313
- definite article: 33, 39
- definite article as possessive: 39
- definite article on adjectives: 145, 153-154
  - contrasted with on nouns: 146
- definite article on nouns: 33
  - masculine nouns, subject case: 39
  - masculine nouns, object case: 65-66, 70-71, 146
  - plural nouns in **-а**: 57, 103
- generic usage: 72
- indefinite article: 49-50, 54-55
- in body-ache constructions: 257
- in cardinal numbers: 232-233
- in ordinal numbers: 145
- in possessive pronominals (**мой**, etc.): 154-155
- in possessives with short form indirect objects: 196
- in referring to duration of time: 184
- in referring to seasons of the year: 176
- in referring to times of the day: 174
- "rhyming" definite article: 34, 57
- usage of definite article: 39, 154

**Derivation**

- general: 133
- of adjectives from names of times of the day: 183
- of days of the week from numbers or descriptive nouns: 183
- of imperfectives by suffixation: 132
- of ordinal from cardinal numbers: 144
- of perfectives by prefixation: 126
- of surnames: 207, 215
- the suffixes **-джия**, **-джийка** in nouns: 206-207
- the suffix **-ен** in adjectives: 134, 183
- the suffix **-ец** in nouns: 51, 55-56
- the suffix **-ин** in nouns: 55-56
- the suffix **-ица** in nouns: 206
- the suffix **-ка** in nouns: 23, 56, 135
- the suffix **-ник** in nouns: 136
- the suffixes **-ов**, **-ев** in adjectives: 207
- the suffix **-ски** in adjectives: 56, 153
- the suffix **-ч-** in diminutives: 279-280

**Diacritics, see Spelling**

**Dictionary forms**

- alphabet order: 6-7
- of adjectives: 40
- of verbs: 49
  - aspect pairs: 64, 69-70, 93, 127
  - paired and unpaired: 126-127

- English**, contrast with  
 body parts: 259  
 capitalization of days of week or months of year: 175  
 clitics (small unaccented words): 13-14  
 conjoined adjectives: 161  
 conjoined phrases (e.g. "John and I"): 160  
 definite article  
     placement in phrase: 145  
     usage: 39  
 direct objects: 84  
 indefinite article: 49-50, 54-55  
 indirect objects: 124  
 infinitive usage: 81, 89-90  
 intonational cues: 277  
 letter-sound correspondences: 3-5  
 "double" negation: 148  
 object-raising: 89-90  
 order of alphabet: 6  
 past tense ("was, were"): 103  
 possession ("one's own" vs. another's): 197  
 pronoun agreement: 39  
 pronunciation of consonants and vowels: 3-5  
 subject pronouns obligatory or not: 24  
 tense shifts in indirect discourse: 295-296  
 time periods of the day: 182  
 time scope (present vs. perfect): 112-113  
 usage of "for" in time expressions: 107-108  
 usage of "if" vs. "whether": 249  
 usage of "it": 67  
 usage of "they": 73  
 usage of "this" vs. "that": 151  
 word order of questions: 20, 25, 66  
 word order of subject and predicate: 185

**Fleeting vowels**, *see* **Spelling**

- French and German**, correspondence with  
 impersonal **има**: 40  
 generic definiteness: 72

**Future tense**

- general: 122  
 of **съм**: 122  
 "particle" **няма да**: 122  
 particle **ще**: 122, 131  
 placement of object pronouns: 148  
 placement of question marker: 148

**Gender**

- general review: 313  
 and agreement: 32-34, 161  
 in nouns: 32  
 marked as feminine vs. general: 23, 205  
 marked as masculine vs. general: 112  
 of nouns referring to persons: 18, 23  
 of nouns referring to professions: 23

**Glossary lists**

- Bulgarian-English glossary: 331-356
- English-Bulgarian glossary: 357-378
- distinguishing **и-** and **е-** conjugation verbs: 49
- form of aspect pairs: 64
- form of derivatives in **-ка**: 23
- predicting fleeting vowels: 51
- predicting form of masculine article: 39
- predicting form of neuter plural: 103
- predicting gender of noun: 32, 181
- predicting verb conjugation type: 49, 54, 194

**Imperative**

- form of endings: 64-65
- choice of aspect: 65, 273
- implied command with **да**: 273
- iterative imperatives: 273
- irregular forms
  - бъди (съм)**: 131
  - виж (видя)**: 65
  - влез (вляза)**: 65
  - дай (дам)**: 70, 170
  - ела (дойда)**: 92-93
  - излез (изляза)**: 65
  - яж (ям)**: 170
- use of **заповядай** in various formulas: 232

**Imperfect tense**

- general: 270
- and the imperfective aspect: 302-303
- formation: 290-292, 299-300
- usage
  - similarity with present: 292-293
  - contrast with aorist: 293-294, 301
  - expression of simultaneity or distancing: 300

**Impersonal (and related) constructions**

- "true" impersonals
  - general: 246, 256
  - има**: 35, 40, 246
  - може**: 246-247
  - няма**: 40, 246
  - трябва**: 246-247
- contrast between conjugated form and impersonal form: 246-247
- "experiencer" constructions (**добре ми е**): 221-222
- "emotional state" constructions (**страх ме е**): 258
- "third-person" verbs
  - body-ache constructions (**боли, болят**): 247-248
  - verbs of liking (**хареса**): 248-249
  - verbs of precipitation (**вали**): 257-258
  - verbs of "feeling like" (**досмешава**): 280
- past tense of impersonal verbs: 270-271

**Indefinite article, see Definiteness**

**Infinitive**

- lack of: 49
- object and subject pronouns in infinitive replacement: 89-90
- replacement by да-phrase: 81-82

**Intonation, see also Accent**

- statements vs. questions: 25
- negative questions: 272-273, 278

**Kinship terms**

- masculine nouns in a vowel (type баща, дядо): 199-200
- nicknames: 79, 200
- overview: 205
- usage: 205, 215
- with short form possessives: 196

**Negation**

- general: 35
- and conjunctions: 155
- "double" negation: 148
- causing stress on following clitic: 35, 91
- contrastive: 93
- negative pronouns (НИКОЙ, etc.): 147
- of има: 35
- word order in negated questions: 272-273

**Nouns**

- general review: 313-314
- adjectives functioning as: 153-154
- derived from adjectives: 206
- derived from numbers: 183, 206
- derived from other nouns: 135-136, 206-207, 279-280
- derived from verbs: 135-136
- feminine nouns
  - in -а
    - plural: 18-19
  - in a consonant
    - general: 171-172
    - definite form: 172, 181
- gender: 18, 32
- masculine nouns
  - and the definite article: 33, 111, 132
  - ending in a vowel: 199-200
    - plurals in -овци: 199-200
  - consonant shifts before plural in -и: 51
  - plural in -а: 57, 159
  - plural in -е: 159
  - plural in -и: 18-19, 159
  - plural in -ища: 159
  - plural in -ове: 125, 131-132
  - quantified form: 104-105, 111
  - quantified vs. plural: 111
  - accent shifts in the plural: 125, 132, 159
- review of non-plural forms: 105, 111
  - subject vs. object in definite forms: 65-66
- neuter nouns
  - expressing abbreviations: 304
  - expressing foreign words: 304

- plural: 57, 103
- accent shift in plural: 103
- irregular plural of око, ухо: 251
- vocative forms
  - masculine: 18, 24, 34
  - feminine: 18, 24, 35, 40

#### Numbers

- general review: 315-316
- and the definite article: 232-233
- as indefinite article: 50
- cardinal (up to 100): 104
- cardinal (beyond 100): 176
- compound numbers: 104
- historical source of -найсет, -йсет: 110-111
- in counting: 110
- masculine numbers (двама, etc.): 105, 112
- ordinal numbers: 144, 177, 233

#### Participles

- general overview: 317
- sample paradigms for participles/other forms: 327-328
- past active (L-participle)
  - formation: 172
  - adjectival use: 172-173, 177
  - use within past indefinite tense: 173
  - use in welcome expressions: 232

#### Particles

- бе: 114
- де: 234
- ето: 85, 128
- я: 114
- word order: 114

#### Passive

- third-person passives: 73

#### Past tense

- and aspectual meaning: 302-303
- and indirect discourse: 295-296
- contrast between aorist and imperfect: 270, 293-294, 301
- of impersonal verbs: 270-271
- past indefinite tense: 173
- simple past tense = aorist: 102

#### Prefixes

- and aspect: 70, 125-126
- and motion verbs: 92
- in adverbs of direction or location: 223-224, 230-231

#### Prepositions

- general: 20
- idiomatic use in time expressions: 108, 178
- multiple prepositions: 113
- без
  - in time expressions: 107-108
  - meaning "without": 113



- в**  
 as opposed to **на**: 86-87  
 meaning "in, into": 36, 66  
 expressing day of week: 175, 178  
 expressing time of day: 106-108  
 spelled **във**: 133
- до**  
 as opposed to **при**: 129  
 in time expressions: 106-108  
 meaning "by, to": 36
- за**  
 after verbs of communication: 200  
 in time expressions: 108  
 meaning "for": 21  
 used in toasts: 225
- из**  
 expressing non-directional movement in closed area: 225
- като**  
 meaning "as, like": 51
- към**  
 meaning "towards": 150
- на**  
 as opposed to **в**: 86-87  
 correspondence to Russian case endings: 26  
 expressing a date: 175, 178  
 expressing intervals of space or time: 151  
 in dates: 144  
 in expressions of age: 108  
 indirect object meaning: 113, 124  
 meaning "on, at, in": 37  
 possessive meaning: 36, 87, 113  
 review of meanings: 113
- освен**  
 meaning "except (for)": 72
- от**  
 expressing comparison: 199, 200  
 in time expressions: 106-108, 112, 184  
 meaning "from": 20, 150  
 meaning "of, than": 150  
 specifying ingredients of something: 71
- по**  
 distributive meaning: 52  
 expressing duration of time: 184  
 meaning "about" (time): 129, 178  
 meaning "along, by": 52, 87  
 meaning "of, as": 87  
 meaning "on, with, per": 274
- под**  
 meaning "under": 52
- преди**  
 in time expressions: 106-108, 184  
 distinct from **преди да**: 303
- през**  
 expressing duration of time: 184  
 expressing intervals of time or space: 151  
 expressing season of the year: 176, 178  
 expressing time in the 24-hour period: 178  
 expressing time in a month: 175, 178

expressing time in a year: 177, 178  
 meaning "through": 129

**при**

as opposed to до: 129  
 as opposed to у: 200  
 meaning "at": 129, 200

**с**

expressing comparison: 200  
 meaning "with": 37  
 spelled със: 133

**след**

in time expressions: 106-108  
 distinct from след като: 303

**у**

as opposed to при: 200  
 meaning "at": 200

**Present tense**

a-conjugation: 19, 48  
 e-conjugation: 48  
 и-conjugation: 48  
 and scope of time: 112-113  
 of мога: 82  
 of съм: 19  
 relationship between present and aorist tense forms: 253-255  
 similarity with imperfect tense: 292-293

**Pronouns, see also Adjectives, possessive pronominal**

general review: 314-315

**demonstrative**

онзи, etc.: 151  
 този, etc.: 49, 151  
 distinction between този and онзи: 151  
 "presentative" това: 41, 49  
 тоя, оня, etc.: 224  
 similarity to personal pronouns: 54

**inclusive**

всеки, всичко, etc.: 113-114

**indefinite**

някой, etc.: 147  
 use of object form някого: 147-148

**interrogative**

кой, etc.: 85  
 кой, какъв, etc.: 147  
 use of object form кого: 147-148

**negative**

никой, etc.: 147.  
 нищо: 147

**personal**

direct object: 83  
 after няма and ето: 85  
 to express states of emotion: 258  
 word order: 84, 173  
 indirect object: 123  
 word order: 123, 173  
 to express possession: 195-197  
 to express states ("experiencer"): 221-222

- long forms
  - contrasted with short forms: 195, 202
  - in comparison with possessive adjectives: 203
  - reflexive form: 203
  - usage: 195, 220
- potential confusion of object and subject: 89-90
- short form and long form together ("doubled pronouns")
  - general: 220
  - in "experiencer" constructions: 222
  - word order: 220-221
  - reflexive only doubled (себе си): 227
- short form reduplication after noun
  - general: 128
  - after **ето, няма**: 128
  - and inverted word order: 278-279
- similarity to demonstrative: 54
- subject: 19
  - gender and subject pronouns: 24
  - subject pronouns optional: 24, 81, 89
  - ти** vs. **вие**: 19, 24, 99
  - agreement with **вие**: 41
- the pronoun **сам**: 250

**Pronunciation, see also Accent**

- consonants
  - in contrast with English: 3, 5
  - lengthened consonants in definite form: 181
  - soft vs. hard consonants: 5
  - voicing assimilation: 15
  - word-final position: 15
- definite article: 70-71
- "grammatical pronunciation" (а as ъ): 15-16
  - of 1<sup>st</sup> singular and 3<sup>rd</sup> plural present: 49, 54
  - of **са** (3<sup>rd</sup> plural of **съм**): 19
  - of definite article object form or in **-ят**: 33, 70-71
- names of alphabet letters: 6
- prepositional phrases: 26
- prepositions with doubled consonant sounds: 133
- vowels
  - in contrast with English: 4-5
  - in unstressed position: 14

**Questions**

- general: 20
- "double" interrogatives: 86
- "embedded": 66, 249-250
- in the future tense: 148
- with question words: 20, 24-25
- with question marker **ли**: 20, 25, 36
- with question marker **нали**: 56
- word order: 20, 25, 36, 249
- word order in negated questions: 272-273
- yes-no questions: 20, 25

**"Reflexive"**

- the particle **се**
  - with verbs: 26, 148-150, 158
  - as direct object pronoun: 83-84, 276

- as reflexive pronoun: 149
- as part of "true reflexive" verb: 149, 271-272
- as "verbal additive": 149-150
- with intransitive meaning: 222
- with non-causative meaning: 229
- retaining seeming transitive meaning: 229-230
- with reciprocal meaning: 222-223
- the particle **си**
  - with verbs: 148-150, 158, 197-198
  - as indirect object pronoun: 123, 276
  - as reflexive pronoun: 149
  - as part of "true reflexive" verb: 149, 272
  - as "verbal additive" signifying connectedness or intimacy: 150, 198
  - expressing possession: 196-197
  - with motion verbs: 198
  - with reciprocal meaning: 223
  - себе **си**: 203, 227
- distinction between **се** and **си** as verbal additive: 150, 158
- the possessive pronominal **свой**: 196-197, 204
- the pronoun **сам**: 250
- reflexive verbs: 271-272

- Russian**, correspondences or contrast with
- alphabet: 3
  - aspect system: 132-133
  - borrowings from Russian: 136
  - cases vs. prepositions: 26
  - impersonal **има** and **няма**: 40-41
  - numbers and gender (**две** vs. **два**): 110

**Се**, *see* "Reflexive"

**Social formulas**

- greetings appropriate to time of day: 174
- toasts and good wishes: 225
- welcome formulas: 232

**Spelling**

- я / е** alternation
  - general rule: 40, 72
  - in adjectives: 34, 145
  - in the imperfect tense: 290-291, 299
  - in neuter nouns: 110
  - in possessive pronominals (**техен**): 147
  - in verb roots: 72
- capitalization: 174
- commas: 234
- consonant shifts
  - from **к, г** to **ц, з** in masculine plurals: 51, 136, 205
  - from **г** to **ж**
    - in the verb **мога**: 82
    - in derivation: 208
  - from **к** to **ч**
    - in the verb **река**: 136
    - in the verbs **сека, облека, съблека**: 180-181
    - in derivation: 208
  - from **ц** to **ч** in derivation: 208

- from **ш, ж** to **с, з**
  - between present and aorist: 194, 202, 255
  - between perfective and derived imperfective: 202, 255
- from **м** to nothing in verbs like **взема**: 194
- fleeting vowels
  - in adjectives: 34, 40
  - in definite adjectives: 145
  - in masculine plural nouns: 131-132
  - in nouns generally: 51
  - in nouns in **-ец**: 51
  - in ordinal numbers: 144
  - in quantified forms: 105
  - in possessive pronominals (**техен, неин**): 147
  - in the vocative of proper names: 34
- foreign names: 22
- hard and soft consonants: 5-6, 131, 154
  - in masculine definite articles: 33, 39, 65, 70, 159
  - before masculine plural ending: 131
  - before adjective endings: 154
- й** vs. **и**: 8, 123
- й** and vowels: 5-6, 33
- masculine definite article: 33, 39
- sound-letter correspondences: 3-6
- transliteration: 6-7
- verb-conjugation type indicator: 49

**Subjectless sentences, see also Impersonal constructions**

- general: 67
- third-person passives: 73

**"Third-person" verbs, see Impersonal constructions**

**Time expressions, see also individual prepositions**

- according to 24-hour clock: 107
- dates: 144-145
- days of the week: 175, 183
- months of the year: 175
- reference to time ahead or past: 177
- seasons of the year: 174
- time as duration: 107-108, 185
- time of day: 173-174, 182
- time of the clock: 106-107
- years: 177

**Usage of certain words**

- бе** (= **беше**): 103
- бе** (particle): 114
- боли**: 247-248, 257
- бъда**: 122, 273-274
- вали**: 257-258
- вечер**: 174
- вървя**: 86, 112
- големите**: 72
- горе-долу**: 231
- госпожа**: 30
- дали**: 249-250
- де**: 234
- довечера**: 174

## Показалец / Index

- догодина: 184  
добре дошли: 232  
другар: 30  
души: 105  
ето: 85, 128  
заповядайте: 232  
ида: 92  
идвам: 86, 92-93, 112  
има: 35, 40  
интересувам (се): 229-230  
какъв: 50-51, 147  
ли: 20, 25, 36, 86, 148, 157, 249  
лягам / легна vs. лежа: 66, 71  
лягам си: 158  
малките: 72  
минал: 177  
много: 104  
мога: 82, 301  
нали: 56  
нещо: 110, 147  
няма: 40, 85, 128  
обичам: 248  
обяд (and обед): 182  
оплаквам (се): 230  
отивам: 86, 92, 112  
подсещам: 230  
почина: 158  
преподавател (ка): 30  
път ("time"): 231  
сещам се: 230  
следващ: 177  
спомням си: 158  
срам: 258  
ставам / стана vs. стоя: 66, 71  
страх: 258  
студент (ка): 30, 142  
сутрин: 174  
сърби: 258  
сядам / седна vs. седа: 66, 71  
ученик, ученичка: 142  
учител (ка): 30  
хайде: 82  
харесвам: 249  
ходя: 106, 112  
хора: 105  
цял: 184  
часът, часа: 106-107  
честито: 232  
човек: 105  
ща: 131  
яд: 258

### Variation

- in form of demonstrative pronouns: 224  
optional final syllable of long form pronoun objects: 203  
two future tense forms of съм: 122  
in accent of certain neuter nouns: 110

in accent of certain aorist forms: 180  
 in the imperfect tense forms of certain verbs: 299-300  
 in ordinal numbers (първ vs. първи): 233  
 pronunciation of masculine definite forms: 70-71  
 transitive or intransitive use of хареса(м): 249  
 свой or си: 204  
 зная vs. знам: 73

**Verbs** (see also names of individual tenses)

general review: 316-317  
 alternate forms, зная and знам: 73  
 aorist tense: 102-103  
 imperfect tense: 270  
 names of tenses: 183, 256  
 of body position: 66, 71  
 of motion: 85-86, 92-93, 106, 112  
 present tense: 19, 48-49  
 sample paradigms, all tenses and moods: 320-327  
 verb types classified by aorist-present relationship: 254

**СЪМ**

and word order rules: 92  
 as copula (with predicate): 55, 92, 110, 203-204  
 imperative: 131  
 in questions: 20, 25  
 past tense: 102  
 perfective form (бъда): 131, 273-274  
 present tense: 19

**Vocative, see Nouns**

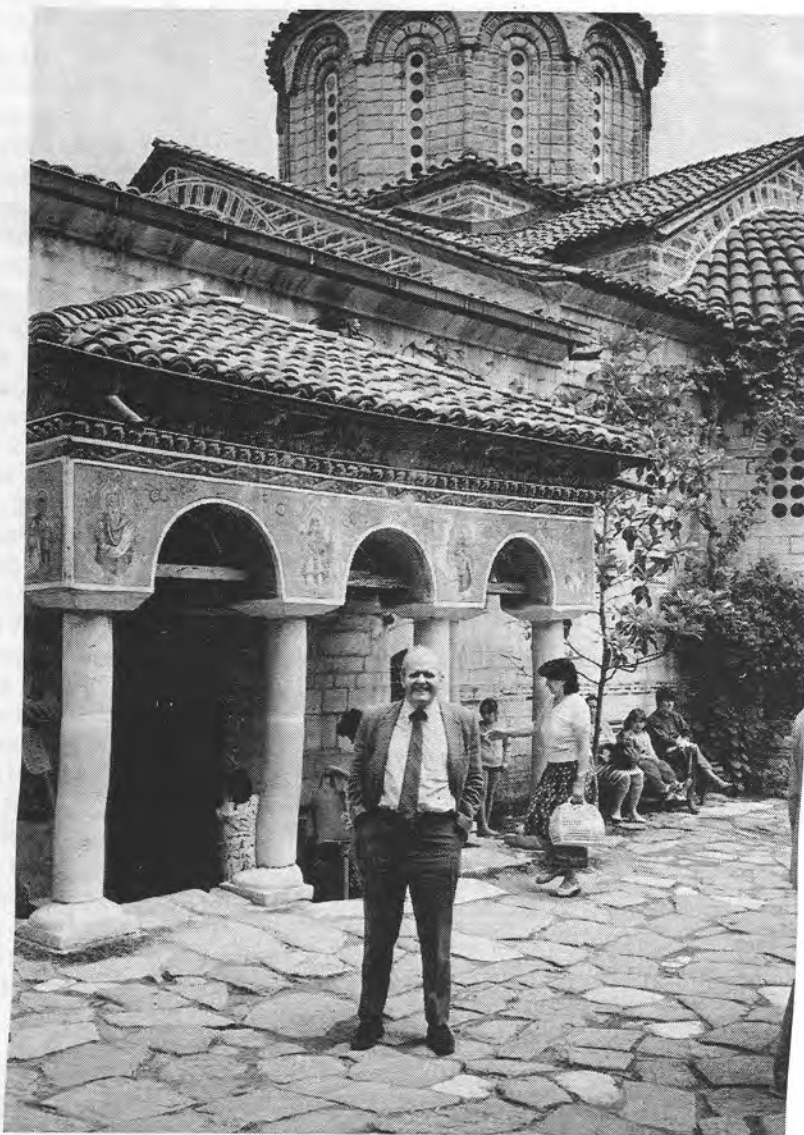
**Word order**

и vs. а in sentence initial position: 26  
 of two object pronouns: 131, 173  
 past tense of съм: 110  
 questions with question words: 20, 25  
 questions with ли  
     yes-no: 20  
     change of focus: 36  
 questions with съм: 20  
 subject inversion: 185  
 with clitics: 21

**Word order rules**

general review: 317-319  
 general: 90, 155, 181  
 definitions of notation  
     general conventions: 90, 155  
     Cnj. (conjunction): 90  
     COP (copula, съм): 92  
     DIR (direct object): 90  
     Fut. (future): 156  
     IND (indirect object): 131  
     INT (interrogative): 91  
     Neg. (negation): 91  
     neg.Cnj. (negative future): 156  
 body-ache constructions: 257  
 conjunctions (да) and negation (не): 91  
 direct object pronouns: 91

doubled pronouns: 227-228  
"experiencer" constructions: 228-229  
future tense: 156  
indirect object pronouns: 131  
negated future: 156-157  
negated questions in the present: 204, 276-278  
negated questions in the future: 157  
order "indirect - direct": 181-182  
predicates (after copula **съм**): 92  
question particle (**ли**): 91  
questions in the future: 157  
reflexive constructions: 276  
sequence of two object pronouns: 181-182  
short-form possessive constructions: 203  
similarity of future and negated present: 156  
third-singular copula placement: 204  
with particles: 114



Professor Eric Hamp in the courtyard of Bachkovo Monastery in the northern Rhodope Mountains